The University of Chicago
Libraries

INTRODUCTION.

WILLIAM Byrd, the firſt of that Name who holds a conſpicuous Place in the Annals of Virginia, was an active, intelligent and ſucceſsful Man of Buſineſs, and exerted a conſiderable Influence in the Affairs of the Colony during the latter Part of the Seventeenth Century. On the 24th of December, 1687, he was appointed Receiver General of the royal Revenues, the Duties of which Office he continued to diſcharge until his Death, which occurred on the 4th of December, 1704; and among the Documents printed in this Volume is a Report from the Preſident and ſeveral others of the Council concerning the final Settlement of his Accounts in that Capacity.[1]

[1] See Vol. ii, P. 203, of this Reprint. In Maxwell's *Virginia Hiſtorical Regiſter*, Vol. iii, Pp. 181-188, will be found further Information with

His Son, William Byrd, born on the 28th of March, 1674, filled yet more important Positions, and attained a far greater Distinction. He died in his seventy-first Year on the 26th August, 1744. In the Language of the Epitaph upon his Tomb at Westover, his Seat in Charles City County,

Reference to these Accounts; and in earlier Portions of the same Work, Vol. i, 60-66, 114-119, Vol. ii, Pp. 78-83, 203-209, some additional Facts, chiefly in the Form of a Selection from his own Letters, concerning this William Byrd, who was—*not*, as Mr. Maxwell states, "a Burgess from Henrico, attending the Grand Assembly at Jamestown in that Character for several Years," within the Period of his published Letters from 1683 to 1685 inclusive, *but*,—a Member of the Council which formed the Upper House of the Grand Assembly; and this as early as 1682. (This Statement is made, erroneously of course, concerning his Son *prima facie*, in an Article in the *New American Cyclopedia*, Vol. iv, P. 167; which Article confounds the two Persons, making Father and Son one and the same, "born about 1650," which was a little before the Time of the Father's Birth; died in 1743, which was nearly forty Years after the Time of *his* Death, and a little before that of his Son.) It appears even from his Letters, to which Mr. Maxwell alludes, that in 1682 he was a Member of the Council, and, as such, of the General Court. In Hening's *Statutes at Large*, Vol. iii, P. 557, he is mentioned in the latter Capacity, 25 April, 1683, by the Style and Title of "Col. William Bird." This express Mention in an authentic Document would seem to establish conclusively that Campbell was in error in calling his Son "the first Colonel William Byrd" (*Hist. Virg.*, 2d Edit., 174, compare with Pp. 435-436); and that Mr. Maxwell was right in designating the Latter as "Colonel William Byrd, the Second of the Name and Title" (*Va. Hist. Reg.*, Vol. iv, P. 75). Though for the most Part he speaks of the Father as "Captain William Byrd," as he is called in several of our public Papers; of course, *before* he was Colonel. See further, Campbell's *History of Virginia*, 2d Edition, Pp. 420, 421.

" being born to one of the ampleſt fortunes in this country,
he was ſent early to England for his education,
where, under the care and direction of Sir Robert Southwell,
and ever favoured with his particular inſtructions,
he made a happy proficiency in polite and various learning.
By the means of the ſame noble friend,
he was introduced to the acquaintance of many of the firſt perſons of the age
for knowledge, wit, virtue, birth, or high ſtation,
and particularly contracted a moſt intimate and boſom friendſhip
with the learned and illuſtrious Charles Boyle, Earl of Orrery.
He was called to the bar in the Middle Temple,
ſtudied for ſome time in the Low Countries,
viſited the Court of France,
and was choſen Fellow of the Royal Society.
Thus eminently fitted for the ſervice and ornament of his country,
he was made Receiver General of his majeſty's revenues here,
was thrice appointed public agent to the court and miniſtry of England,
and, being thirty ſeven years a member,
at laſt became Preſident, of the Council of this Colony.
To all this were added a great elegance of taſte and life,
the well-bred gentleman and polite companion,
the ſplendid economiſt and prudent father of a family,
with the conſtant enemy of all exorbitant power,
and hearty friend to the liberties of his country."[1]

This Inſcription is given with two verbal Variations of little Conſequence, in Campbell's *Hiſtory of Virginia*, 2d Edit., P. 436, and with only one, the leſs Material of the two, in the firſt Edition of that Work, Pp. 113, 114. He ſeems to have been the immediate Succeſſor to his Father as Receiver General (ſee Vol. ii, P. 202 of this Reprint); and therefore it would have been more accurate to ſay, " he was *made* Receiver General of *her* Majeſty's Revenues here," Queen Anne being at that Time on the Throne; but it is poſſible he *continued* ſuch Receiver under *his* Majeſty George the

[1] Weſtover Manuſcripts, Edition of 1841, P. iv.

Firſt, and likewiſe under *his* Majeſty George the Second. From Records of the Council, ſtill preſerved, it appears that he became a Member of it and Preſident.

This monumental Tribute is, indeed, a cordial Expreſſion of the Merits of the Man; but, ſo far from being open to the Charge of Flattery, it falls ſhort of the Panegyric employed by moſt of thoſe who have written of Virginia Affairs during his Time. Rev. William Stith, a Contemporary, in the Preface to his unfiniſhed hiſtorical Work, which abruptly breaks off at the Year 1624, thus ſpeaks of the ſecond William Byrd:

"I muſt confeſs myſelf moſt endebted, in this Part of my Hiſtory, to a very full and fair Manuſcript of the London [Virginia] Company's Records, which was communicated to me by the late worthy Preſident of our Council, the Honourable William Byrd, Eſq. Neither could I excuſe myſelf if I did not likewiſe acknowledge with what Humanity and Politeneſs that well-bred Gentleman and Scholar not only communicated thoſe Manuſcripts to me, but alſo threw open his Library (the beſt and moſt copious Collection of Books in our Part of America), and was himſelf ever ſtudious and ſolicitous to ſearch out and give me whatever might be uſeful to my Undertaking."[1]

[1] Stith's *Hiſtory of Virginia*, Page v of Preface, dated "Varina, Dec. 10, 1746."

Of the Weſtover Library, founded by this Colonel Byrd, and augmented probably by *his* Son, the Third of the ſame "Name and Title,"

But the beſt Expoſition of his Character, and the moſt enduring Monument to his Memory, will be found in his own Writings, which, ſo far as is now known, with the ſingle Exception of a curious Paper concerning a Negro Boy, dappled with white Spots, contributed to the *Philoſophical Tranſactions* in 1697,[1]

ſome Account may be ſeen in Maxwell's *Virg. Hiſt. Reg.*, Vol. iv, Pp. 87-90.

Reſpecting the MSS. here mentioned by Stith, it has been commonly ſaid of late that they were purchaſed in London by the Col. Byrd here ſpoken of, Son of the Firſt, and Father of the Laſt that have now been noticed. It is ſtated in a Letter of Mr. Jefferſon (*Works*, Edit. 1856, Vol. vii, P. 312), that they were bought at the Sale of the Earl of Southampton's Library, "by Doctor Byrd, of Weſtover." But the moſt truſtworthy Account ſeems to be that given by Stith, in his Preface above quoted. "As theſe Records," ſays he, "are a very curious and valuable Piece of the Antiquities of our Country, I ſhall give the Reader an Account of them I received, many Years ago, in Converſation with Col. Byrd and Sir John Randolph. I had then no thoughts of writing the Hiſtory of Virginia, and therefore took leſs Notice than I otherwiſe ſhould have done. However, as I am perhaps the only Perſon now living anything acquainted with their Hiſtory, it will not be improper to give it to the Reader, as I judge it highly worthy of his Knowledge." He then gives a Relation of the Manner in which they were made, and authenticated and ſubſequently preſerved till the Death of an Earl (miſcalled by him Duke) of Southampton, "which happened in the Year 1667," when, he ſays, "the late Col. Byrd's Father, being then in England, purchaſed them of his (Lord Southampton's) Executors for ſixty Guineas." See further on this Subject an Article headed "Stith's Hiſtory of Virginia," *Southern Literary Meſſenger*, September, 1863, Pp. 554-565.

[1] *New American Cyclopedia*, Vol. iv, P. 167; Allibone's *Dictionary of Authors*, Edition of 1859, Vol. i, P. 318.

are all compriſed in the preſent Volume. Of theſe Writings, *The Hiſtory of the Dividing Line*, *A Journey to the Land of Eden*, and *A Progreſs to the Mines*, were publiſhed in the Year 1841, in a Volume entitled *The Weſtover Manuſcripts*, although they were not quite ſo fully preſented therein as might have been deſired. From the Preface to that Volume the following Paſſage is extracted:

"The Manuſcripts of Col. William Byrd, of Weſtover, the Father of the laſt Proprietor of the ſame Name, of different Dates from 1728 to 1736, are contained in a large folio Volume, bound in Parchment, which has been carefully preſerved in his Family, until recently placed in the Hands of the Editor. The Whole is in the Hand-writing of a Copyiſt, but written evidently under the immediate Direction of its Author, as there are numerous Corrections, Interlineations, and more conſiderable Additions, in his own Hand-writing. The Book was doubtleſs copied from the Author's earlieſt Draught on looſe Sheets, which were afterwards deſtroyed, as uſeleſs. At any Rate, this old Volume is the only Copy in Exiſtence.[1] The

[1] This Statement ſeems incorrect as to Part of the Contents of the Volume. Ten Years after the Date of the Publication from the Preface, to which the above Paſſage is taken, Mr. Lyman C. Draper, in a Letter to Mr. Charles Campbell, giving an Account of the Weſtover Library, the Catalogue whereof, "a three Quire quarto Volume, Gilt-edged, and gilt red Morocco Binding," was then, certainly, and probably is ſtill, extant, ſays: "In the Catalogue I ſee no Mention of the MS. Journal of Running the Dividing Line between Virginia and North Carolina in

Hiſtorical Society of Virginia obtained the Conſent of the Proprietor of the Manuſcripts to have them copied, with a View to Publication. But the Operations of that Society ceaſed before the Publication had been commenced, and when only one of the ſeveral Manuſcripts had been copied.[1] It was one of the lateſt Acts of the laſt Proprietor, George E. Harriſon, Eſq., of Brandon, to place at our Diſpoſal this highly

1728—Copies of which I have heretofore informed you, are in the Library of the American Philoſophical Society; one, judging from the Title, the ſame as that publiſhed among the 'Weſtover Manuſcripts' at Peterſburg, in 1841; the other, the 'Secret Hiſtory of the Dividing Line.' Neither of theſe have I yet found the right Time to call and examine, and the only Knowledge that I have of them is from the Catalogue of the Society which poſſeſſes them."—Maxwell's *Virg. Hiſt. Reg.*, Vol. iv, P. 88. Without further Information on the Subject, it is impoſſible even to form a reaſonable Conjecture whether theſe two Papers are "Copies" of one and the ſame Original, differing in nothing but the Title, or of ſubſtantially different Compoſitions; or whether indeed they are Copies at all, and not the very Originals, which, inſtead of being written on looſe Sheets and deſtroyed, as the Editor ſuppoſes, may have been given by the Widow of the laſt Colonel Byrd, who was a Philadelphia Lady, to the Society named, which had its Seat in that City. The Statement quoted in the Text had Reference, doubtleſs, only to Colonel Byrd's own Writings; elſe it would have been inaccurate as to yet another Part of the Contents of "this old Volume," as will preſently be ſeen.

[1] This relates to the firſt Aſſociation, known as the Virginia Hiſtorical Society. Several Years afterwards another, under the ſame Name, or the ſame under another Organization, ſprang into active Exiſtence, and continued to flouriſh until the breaking out of the late Civil War. *Its* "Operations" were then ſuſpended; but we may hope that the Society did not itſelf become extinct.

valued Work of this diſtinguiſhed and talented Anceſtor, with Permiſſion to publiſh any Portion, or the Whole of the Contents, provided the manuſcript Volume itſelf ſhould be preſerved uninjured, and afterwards reſtored to the Owner. The better to ſecure the latter Object, the Copy of the Part made for the Uſe of the Hiſtorical Society, has alſo been placed in our Hands by the Directors."

To this ſubſtantially correct Account of the Parchment-bound Folio, (the Contents of which, however, are not fully, nor as to their Dates quite accurately noticed in it) we ſubjoin a Statement made at our requeſt by the eſtimable and accompliſhed Widow of Mr. Harriſon. Theſe are her written Words:

"This Manuſcript was the Production of the ſecond Colonel Byrd, of Weſtover, who for his rare Wit, Learning and Wiſdom was ſtyled the 'Black Swan' of the Family. It deſcended to his Son, the laſt Colonel William Byrd, who married Miſs Mary Willing, of Philadelphia. She preſented this Book to George Evelyn Harriſon, the Son of her Daughter, Evelyn Byrd, who had married Mr. Benjamin Harriſon, of Brandon."

As already intimated, the Volume contains Articles not hitherto Printed, partly compoſed, partly collected only, by Col. Byrd; and all its Contents were tranſcribed by his Copyiſt without Regard to chronological Order, Connection of Subjects, or Method of any

Kind. Nevertheleſs, his accidental and chaotic Arrangement, or rather Want of all Arrangement, has been ſcrupulouſly followed in this Reprint; the Aim of which has been to give, as far as it was practicable with Types, *fac-ſimile* Copies of his Tranſcript; and with this View numerous Expreſſions are here "faithfully preſented," which, probably becauſe they were thought too free, were either altered or entirely ſuppreſſed in the partial Publication of 1841. It may be that the Editor of that Volume, following the Copy made for the Hiſtorical Society, was led unknowingly into theſe Alterations and Omiſſions, which poſſibly had been therein introduced, or they may have been the Reſult of his own Taſte and Judgment. Whatever the Fact, this Reprint has reverted to the original Manuſcript, and the Whole is here given with perfect Fidelity.

A few Words deſcriptive of the "Parchment-bound Folio" itſelf will conclude this Introduction.

The Cover, which is of white Vellum, meaſures fourteen and a half Inches in Length, ten and a quarter Inches in Breadth, and a quarter of an Inch in Thickneſs.

The Leaves are fourteen Inches Long, and nine and three quarter Inches wide.

The Volume is lettered on the Back, the Lettering beginning at one Inch from the Top, thus—

Hiſtory of the
Line and Other
Tracts.

On the Inſide of the Cover is a Copy of the Book-plate, which is to be found in all the Books which belonged to Col. Byrd; containing his Arms (including ſeveral Quarterings), his Name "*William Byrd of Weſtover in Virginia Eſq^r*," and the Motto,

"NULLA PALLESCERE CULPA."

Two blank fly Leaves, plain, with Water Mark "T. Gilpin & Co Brandywine," and one Leaf, with Water Mark like the Reſt of the Book, *i e*, Shield with fleur-de-lis and the Monogram WR. are between the Cover and the Commencement of the Manuſcript. On the Top of the firſt Page of this latter Leaf, one Inch from the Top, is written,

"To M^rs Evelyn Taylor Harriſon
from her affectionate
Mother Mary Byrd"

and below this,

"For
Maſter George Evelyn Harriſon
of Brandon
Weſtover May 12^th 1809."

On the oppoſite Side of this Leaf, which is diſcoloured and badly torn, all that can be read is,

Contents.

male Creed.

Hiſtory of the line

&c. &c. &c.

There are 366 written Pages, including Contents and preſentation Page, 8 blank Leaves between the Proceedings of the Commiſſioners appointed to lay out the Bounds of the Northern Neck and the Eſſay on Bu[illegible] Tobacco, 51 blank Leaves at the End of the MS., and then two fly Leaves exactly ſimilar to thoſe in the firſt Part. Every Page is ruled in red Lines, e cloſing the written Context, an Inch and a half from th outer and three quarters of an Inch from the inn. Edge. Of written Leaves, there are 181, blank L[illegible]ves 59, Contents 1, fly Leaves 4; Total 246. To the Courteſy of Mrs. Harriſon, of Upper Brandon, the Widow of the late George E. Harriſon, Eſq., mentioned in the Extract from the Preface to the Volume publiſhed in 1841, we are indebted for the Opportunity to ſpread the Pages of this intereſting and valuable Contribution to the colonial Hiſtory of our State before the Students of American Civilization.

T. H. W.

Richmond, Va., Nov., 1866.

HISTORY[1]

OF THE

DIVIDING LINE:

Run in the Year 1728.

BEFORE I enter upon the Journal of the Line between Virginia and North Carolina, it will be neceſſary to clear the way to it, by ſhewing how the other Britiſh Colonies on the Main have, one after another, been carved out of Virginia, by Grants from his Majeſty's Royal Predeceſſors. All that part of the Northern American Continent now under the Dominion of the King of Great Britain, and Stretching quite as far as the Cape of Florida, went *at firſt under the General Name of Virginia.*

The only Diſtinction, in thoſe early Days, was, that all the Coaſt to the Southward of Cheſapeake Bay was called South Virginia, and all to the Northward of it, North Virginia.

The firſt Settlement of this fine Country was owing to that great Ornament of the Britiſh Nation, Sir Walter Raleigh, who obtained a Grant thereof from Queen Elizabeth of ever-glorious Memory, by Letters Patent, dated March the 25th, 1584.

[1] Written as late as 1736. See *poſt*. Unleſs that paſſage was an interpolation after the work was written.

But whether that Gentleman ever made a Voyage thither himſelf is uncertain; becauſe thoſe who have favour'd the Public with an Account of His Life mention nothing of it. However, thus much may be depended on, that Sir Walter invited ſundry perſons of Diſtinction to Share in his Charter, and join their Purſes with his in the Laudable project of fitting out a Colony to Virginia.

Accordingly, 2 Ships were Sent away that very Year, under the Command of his good Friends Amidas and Barlow, to take poſſeſſion of the Country in the Name of his Roial Miſtreſs, the Queen of England.

Theſe worthy Commanders, for the advantage of the Trade Winds, ſhaped their Courſe firſt to the Charibbe Iſlands, thence ſtretching away by the Gulph of Florida, dropt Anchor not far from Roanoak Inlet. They ventured aſhoar near that place upon an Iſland now called Colleton iſland, where they ſet up the Arms of England, and Claimed the Adjacent Country in Right of their Sovereign Lady, the Queen; and this Ceremony being duly performed, they kindly invited the neighbouring Indians to traffick with them.

Theſe poor people at firſt approacht the Engliſh with great Caution, having heard much of the Treachery of the Spaniards, and not knowing but theſe Strangers might be as treacherous as they. But, at length, diſcovering a kind of good nature in their looks, they ventured to draw near, and barter their Skins and Furs, for the Bawbles and Trinkets of the Engliſh.

Theſe firſt Adventurers made a very profitable Voyage, raiſing at leaſt a Thouſand per cent. upon their Cargo. Amongſt other Indian Commodities, they brought over Some of that bewitching Vegetable, Tobacco. And this being the firſt that ever came to England, Sir Walter thought he could do no leſs than make a preſent of Some of the brighteſt of it to His Roial Miſtreſs, for her own Smoaking.

The Queen graciouſly accepted of it, but finding her Stomach ſicken after two or three Whiffs, it was preſently whiſpered by the earl of Leiceſter's Faction, that Sir Walter had certainly Poiſon'd Her. But Her Majeſty ſoon recovering her Diſorder, obliged the Counteſs of Nottingham and all her Maids to Smoak a whole Pipe out amongſt them.

As it happen'd ſome Ages before to be the faſhion to Santer to the Holy Land, and go upon other Quixot Adventures, ſo it was now grown the Humour to take a Trip to America. The Spaniards had lately diſcovered Rich Mines in their Part of the Weſt Indies, which made their Maritime Neighbours eager to do ſo too. This Modiſh Frenzy being ſtill more Inflam'd by the Charming Account given of Virginia, by the firſt Adventurers, made many fond of removeing to ſuch a Paradiſe.

Happy was he, and ſtill happier She, that cou'd get themſelves tranſported, fondly expecting their Coarſeſt Utenſils, in that happy place, would be of Maſſy Silver.

This made it eaſy for the Company to procure as many Volunteers as they wanted for their new Colony; but, like moſt other Undertakers who have no Aſſiſtance from the Public, they Starved the Deſign by too much Frugality; for, unwilling to Launch out at firſt into too much Expenſe, they Ship't off but few People at a Time, and Thoſe but Scantily provided. The Adventurers were, beſides, Idle and extravagant, and expected they might live without work in ſo plentiful a Country.

Theſe Wretches were ſet Aſhoar not far from Roanoak Inlet, but by ſome fatal diſagreement, or Lazineſs, were either Starved or cut to Pieces by the Indians.

Several repeated Miſadventures of this kind did, for ſome time, allay the Itch of Sailing to this New World; but the Diſtemper broke out again about the Year 1606. Then it happened that the Earl of Southampton and ſeveral other Perſons, eminent for their Quality and Eſtates, were invited into the Company, who

1729 April apply'd themſelves once more to People the then almoſt abandon'd Colony. For this purpoſe they embarkt about an Hundred men, moſt of them Riprobates of good Familys, and related to ſome of the company, who were men of Quality and Fortune.

The Ships that carried them made a Shift to find a more direct way to Virginia, and ventured thro the Capes into the Bay of Cheſapeak. The ſame Night they came to an Anchor at the Mouth of Powatan, the ſame as James River, where they built a Small Fort at a Place call'd Point Comfort.

This Settlement ſtood its ground from that time forward in ſpite of all the Blunders and Diſagreement of the firſt Adventurers, and the many Calamitys that befel the Colony afterwards.

The ſix gentlemen who were firſt named of the company by the crown, and who were empowered to chooſe an annual Preſident from among themſelves, were always engaged in Factions and Quarrels, while the reſt deteſted Work more than Famine. At this rate the Colony muſt have come to nothing, had it not been for the vigilance and Bravery of Capt. Smith, who ſtruck a Terrour into all the Indians round about. This Gentleman took ſome pains to perſwade the men to plant Indian corn, but they lookt upon all Labour as a Curſe. They choſe rather to depend upon the Muſty Proviſions that were ſent from England: and when they fail'd they were forct to take more pains to Seek for Wild Fruits in the Woods, than they woud have taken in tilling the Ground. Beſides, this Expoſd them to be knockt on the head by the Indians, and gave them Fluxes into the Bargain, which thind the Plantation very much. To Supply this mortality, they were reinforct the year following with a greater number of People, amongſt which were fewer Gentlemen and more Labourers, who, however, took care not to kill themſelves with Work.[2]

[2] This paragraph is in the form of a note in the manuſcript, but the reader will perceive that it is a portion of the text. Ed.

Theſe found the Firſt Adventurers in a very ſtarving condition, but relievd their wants with the freſh Supply they brought with them. From Kiquotan they extended themſelves as far as James-Town, where like true Engliſhmen, they built a Church that coſt no more than Fifty Pounds, and a Tavern that coſt Five hundred.

They had now made peace with the Indians, but there was one thing wanting to make that peace laſting. The Natives coud, by no means, perſwade themſelves that the Engliſh were heartily their Friends, ſo long as they diſdained to intermarry with them. And, in earneſt, had the Engliſh conſulted their own Security and the good of the Colony — Had they intended either to Civilize or Convert theſe Gentiles, they would have brought their Stomachs to embrace this prudent Alliance.

The Indians are generally tall and well-proportion'd, which may make full Amends for the Darkneſs of their Complexions. Add to this, that they are healthy & Strong, with Conſtitutions untainted by Lewdneſs, and not enfeebled by Luxury. Beſides, Morals and all conſidered, I cant think the Indians were much greater Heathens than the firſt Adventurers, who, had they been good Chriſtians, would have had the Charity to take this only method of converting the Natives to Chriſtianity. For, after all that can be ſaid, a ſprightly Lover is the moſt prevailing Miſſionary that can be ſent amongſt theſe, or any other Infidels.

Beſides, the poor Indians would have had leſs reaſon to Complain that the Engliſh took away their Land, if they had received it by way of Portion with their Daughters. Had ſuch Affinities been contracted in the Beginning, how much Bloodſhed had been prevented, and how populous would the Country have been, and, conſequently, how conſiderable? Nor wou'd the Shade of the Skin have been any reproach at this day; for if a Moor may be waſht white in 3 Generations, Surely an Indian might have been blancht in two.

The French, for their Parts, have not been ſo Squeamiſh in Canada, who upon Trial find abundance of Attraction in the Indians. Their late Grand Monarch thought it not below even the Dignity of a Frenchman to become one fleſh with this People, and therefore Ordered 100 Livres for any of his Subjects, Man or Woman, that woud intermarry with a Native.

By this piece of Policy we find the French Intereſt very much Strengthn'd amongſt the Savages, and their Religion, ſuch as it is, propagated juſt as far as their Love. And I heartily wiſh this well-concerted Scheme don't hereafter give the French an Advantage over his Majeſty's good Subjects on the Northern Continent of America.

About the ſame time New England was pared off from Virginia by Letters Patent, bearing date April the 10th, 1608. Several Gentlemen of the Town and Neighborhood of Plymouth obtain'd this Grant, with the Ld Chief Juſtice Popham at their Head.

Their Bounds were Specified to Extend from 38 to 45 Degrees of Northern Latitude, with a Breadth of one Hundred Miles from the Sea Shore. The firſt 14 Years, this Company encounter'd many Difficulties, and loſt many men, tho' far from being diſcouraged, they ſent over Numerous Recruits of Preſbyterians, every year, who for all that, had much ado to ſtand their Ground, with all their Fighting and Praying.

But about the year 1620, a Large Swarm of Diſſenters fled thither from the Severities of their Stepmother, The Church. Theſe Saints conceiving the ſame Averſion to the Copper Complexion of the Natives, with that of the firſt Adventurers to Virginia, would, on no Terms, contract Alliances with them, afraid perhaps, like the Jews of Old, leſt they might be drawn into Idolatry by thoſe Strange Women.

Whatever diſguſted them I cant ſay, but this falſe delicacy creating in the Indians a Jealouſy that the Engliſh were ill

affected towards them, was the Cauſe that many of them were cut off, and the reſt Expoſed to various Diſtreſſes.

This Reinforcement was landed not far from Cape Codd, where, for their greater Security they built a Fort, and near it a Small Town, which in Honour of the Proprietors, was call'd New Plymouth. But they Still had many diſcouragements to Struggle with, tho' by being well Supported from Home, they by Degrees Triumph't over them all.

Their Brethren, after this, flockt over ſo faſt, that in a few Years they extended the Settlement one hundred Miles along the Coaſt, including Rhode Iſland and Martha's Vineyard.

Thus the Colony throve apace, and was throng'd with large Detachments of Independents and Preſbyterians, who thought themſelves perſecuted at home.

Tho' theſe People may be ridiculd for ſome Phariſaical Particularitys in their Worſhip and Behaviour, yet they were very uſeful Subjects, as being Frugal and Induſtrious, giving no Scandal or bad Example, at leaſt by any Open and Public Vices. By which excellent Qualities they had much the Advantage of the Southern Colony, who thought their being Members of the Eſtabliſh't Church ſufficient to Sanctifie very looſe and Profligate Morals. For this Reaſon New England improved much faſter than Virginia, and in Seven or Eight Years New Plimouth, like Switzerland, ſeemd too Narrow a Territory for its Inhabitants.

For this Reaſon, ſeveral Gentlemen of Fortune purchaſ'd of the Company that Canton of New England now calld Maſſachuſet colony. And King James confirm'd the Purchaſe by his Royal Charter, dated March the 4th, 1628. In leſs than 2 years after, above 1000 of the Puritanical Sect removed thither with conſiderable Effects, and theſe were followed by ſuch Crowds, that a Proclamation was iſſued in England, forbidding any more of his Majeſty's Subjects to be Shipt off. But this had the uſual Effect of things forbidden, and ſerv'd only to make

the Wilful Independents flock over the faſter. And about this time it was that Meſſrs. Hampden and Pym, and (ſome ſay) Oliver Cromwell, to ſhew how little they valued the King's Authority, took a Trip to New England.

In the Year 1630, the famous City of Boſton was built, in a Commodious Situation for Trade and Navigation, the ſame being on a Peninſula at the Bottom of Maſſachuſet Bay.

This Town is now the moſt conſiderable of any on the Britiſh Continent, containing at leaſt 8,000 houſes and 40,000 Inhabitants. The Trade it drives, is very great to Europe, and to every Part of the Weſt Indies, having near 1,000 Ships and leſſer Veſſels belonging to it.

Altho the Extent of the Maſſachuſet Colony reach't near one Hundred and Ten Miles in Length, and half as much in Breadth, yet many of its Inhabitants, thinking they wanted Elbow-room, quitted their Old Seats in the Year 1636, and formed 2 New Colonies: that of Connecticut and New Haven. Theſe King Charles the 2d erected into one Government in 1664, and gave them many Valuable Priviledges, and among the reſt, that of chuſing their own Governors. The Extent of theſe united Colonies may be about Seventy Miles long and fifty broad.

Beſides theſe ſeveral Settlements, there Sprang up ſtill another, a little more Northerly, called New Hampſhire. But that conſiſting of no more than two Counties, and not being in condition to Support the Charge of a Diſtinct Government, was glad to be incorporated with that of Maſſachuſet, but upon Condition, however, of being Named in all Public Acts, for fear of being quite loſt and forgot in the Coalition.

In like manner New Plymouth joyn'd itſelf to Maſſachuſet, except only Rhode Iſland, which, tho' of ſmall Extent, got itſelf erected into a Separate government by a Charter from King Charles the 2d, ſoon after the Reſtoration, and continues ſo to this day.

Theſe Governments all continued in Poſſeſſion of their Reſpective Rights and Priviledges till the Year 1683, when that of Maſſachuſet was made Void in England by a Quo Warranto.

In Conſequence of which the King was pleaſed to name Sir Edmund Andros His firſt Governor of that Colony. This Gentleman, it ſeems, ruled them with a Rod of Iron till the Revolution, when they laid unhallowed Hands upon Him, and ſent him Priſoner to England.

This undutiful proceeding met with an eaſy forgiveneſs at that happy Juncture. King William and his Royal Conſort were not only pleaſd to overlook this Indignity offered to their Governor, but being made ſenſible how unfairly their Charter had been taken away, moſt graciouſly granted them a new one.

By this ſome new Franchiſes were given them, as an Equivalent for thoſe of Coining Money and Electing a governour, which were taken away. However, the other Colonies of Connecticut and Rhode Iſland had the luck to remain in Poſſeſſion of their Original Charters, which to this Day have never been calld in Queſtion.

The next Country diſmemberd from Virginia was New Scotland, claimd by the Crown of England in Virtue of the firſt Diſcovery by Sebaſtian Cabot. By Colour of this Title, King James the firſt granted it to Sir William Alexander by Patent, dated September the 10th, 1621.

But this Patentee never ſending any Colony thither, and the French believing it very Convenient for them, obtaind a Surrender of it from their good Friend and Ally, king Charles the 2d, by the Treaty of Breda. And, to ſhow their gratitude, they ſtirred up the Indians ſoon after to annoy their Neighbours of New England. Murders happend continually to his Majeſty's Subjects by their Means, till S^{r} William Phipps took their Town of Port Royal, in the year 1690. But as the Engliſh are better at taking than keeping Strong Places, the French retook it ſoon,

and remaind Maſters of it till 1710, when General Nicholſon wreſted it, once more, out of their Hands.

Afterwards the Queen of Great Britain's Right to it was recognizd and confirmed by the treaty of Utrecht.

Another Limb lopt off from Virginia was New York, which the Dutch ſeized very unfairly, on pretence of having Purchaſd it from Captain Hudſon, the firſt Diſcoverer. Nor was their way of taking Poſſeſſion of it a whit more juſtifiable than their pretended Title.

Their Weſt India Company tamperd with ſome worthy Engliſh Skippers (who had contracted with a Swarm of Engliſh Diſſenters to tranſport them to Hudſon river) by no means to land them there, but to carry 'em ſome leagues more northerly.

This Dutch Fineſſe took Exactly, and gave the Company time ſoon after to ſeize the Hudſon River for themſelves. But S^r^ Samuel Argall, then governor of Virginia, underſtanding how the King's Subjects had been abuſed by theſe Republicans, marcht thither with a good Force, and obligd them to renounce all pretenſions to that Country. The worſt of it was, the Knight depended on their Parole to Ship themſelves to Braſile, but took no meaſures to make this Slippery People as good as their Word.

No ſooner was the good Governor retired, but the honeſt Dutch began to build Forts and ſtrengthen themſelves in their ill-gotten Poſſeſſions; nor did any of the King's Liege People take the trouble to drive theſe Intruders thence. The Civil War in England, And the Confuſions it brought forth, allowed no Leiſure for ſuch diſtant Conſiderations. Tho tis ſtrange that the Protector, who neglected no Occaſion to mortify the Dutch, did not afterwards call them to Account for this breach of Faith. However, after the Reſtoration, the King ſent a Squadron of his Ships of War, under the Command of ſir Robert Carr, and reduced that Province to his Obedience.

Some time after, His Majeſty was Pleaſd to grant that Coun-

try to his Royal Highneſs, the Duke of York, by Letters Patent, dated March the 12th, 1664. But to ſhew the Modeſty of the Dutch to the Life, tho they had no Shaddow of Right to New York, yet they demanded Surinam, a more valuable Country, as an Equivalent for it, and our able Miniſters at that time had the Generoſity to give it them.

But what *wounded Virginia deepeſt was the cutting off* MARYLAND from it, by Charter from King Charles the 1ſt, to ſir George Calvert, afterwards Ld Baltimore, bearing Date the 20th of June, 1632. The Truth of it is, it begat much Speculation in thoſe days, how it came about that a good Proteſtant King ſhould beſtow ſo bountiful a Grant upon a Zealous Roman catholic. But 'tis probable it was one fatal Inſtance amongſt many other of his Majeſty's complaiſance to the Queen.

However that happened, 'tis certain this Province afterwards provd a Commodious Retreat for Perſons of that Communion. The Memory of the Gun-Powder-Treaſon-Plot was Still freſh in every body's mind, and made England too hot for Papiſts to live in, without danger of being burnt with the Pope, every 5th of November; for which reaſon Legions of them tranſplanted themſelves to Maryland in Order to be Safe, as well from the Inſolence of the Populace as the Rigour of the Government.

Not only the Gun-Powder-Treaſon, but every other Plot, both pretended and real, that has been trump't up in England ever Since, has helpt to People his Lordſhip's Propriety.

But what has provd moſt Serviceable to it was the Grand Rebellion againſt King Charles the 1ſt, when every thing that bore the leaſt tokens of Popery was ſure to be demoliſht, and every man that Profeſt it was in Jeopardy of Suffering the ſame kind of Martyrdom the Romiſh Prieſts do in Sweden.

Soon after the Reduction of New York, the Duke was pleaſd to grant out of it all that Tract of Land included between Hudſon and Delaware Rivers, to the Lord Berkley and Sir George

Carteret, by Deed dated June the 24th, 1664. And when theſe Grantees came to make Partition of this Territory, His Lordp's Moiety was calld Weſt Jerſey, and that to Sir George, Eaſt Jerſey.

But before the Date of this Grant, the Swedes began to gain Footing in part of that Country; tho, after they ſaw the Fate of New York, they were glad to Submit to the King of England, on the eaſy Terms of remaining in their Poſſeſſions, and rendering a Moderate Quit-rent. Their Poſterity continue there to this Day, and think their Lot caſt in a much fairer Land than Dalicarlia.

The Proprietors of New Jerſey, finding more Trouble than Profit in their new Dominions, made over their Right to ſeveral other Perſons, who obtaind a freſh Grant from his Royal Highneſs, dated March the 14th, 1682.

Several of the Grantees, being Quakers and Anabaptiſts, faild not to encourage many of their own Perſwaſion to remove to this Peaceful Region. Amongſt them were a Swarm of Scots Quakers, who were not tolerated to exerciſe the Gifts of the Spirit in their own Country.

Beſides the hopes of being Safe from Perſecution in this Retreat, the New Proprietors inveigled many over by this tempting Account of the Country: that it was a Place free from thoſe 3 great Scourges of Mankind, Prieſts, Lawyers, and Phyſicians. Nor did they tell a Word of a Lye, for the People were yet too poor to maintain theſe Learned Gentlemen, who, every where, love to be paid well for what they do; and, like the Jews, cant breathe in a Climate where nothing is to be got.

The Jerſeys continued under the Government of theſe Proprietors till the Year 1702, when they made a formal Surrender of the Dominion to the Queen, reſerving however the Property of the Soil to themſelves. So ſoon as the Bounds of New Jerſey came to be diſtinctly laid off, it appeared that there was ſtill

a Narrow Slipe of Land, lying betwixt that Colony and Maryland. Of this, William Penn, a Man of much Worldly Wiſdom, and ſome Eminence among the Quakers, got early Notice, and, by the Credit he had with the Duke of York, obtaind a Patent for it, Dated March the 4th, 1680.

It was a little Surpriſing to ſome People how a Quaker ſhoud be ſo much in the good Graces of a Popiſh Prince; tho, after all, it may be pretty well Accounted for. This Ingenious Perſon had not been bred a Quaker; but, in his Earlier days, had been a Man of Pleaſure about the Town. He had a beautiful form and very taking Addreſs, which made him Succeſsful with the Ladies, and particularly with a Miſtreſs of the Duke of Monmouth. By this Gentlewoman he had a Daughter, who had Beauty enough to raiſe her to be a Dutcheſs, and continued to be a Toaſt full 30 Years.

But this Amour had like to have brought our Fine Gentleman in Danger of a Duell, had he not diſcreetly ſhelterd himſelf under this peaceable Perſwaſion. Beſides, his Father having been a Flag-Officer in the Navy, while the Duke of York was Lord High Admiral, might recommend the Son to his Favour. This piece of Secret Hiſtory I thought proper to mention, to wipe off the Suſpicion of his having been Popiſhly inclind.

This Gentleman's firſt Grant confind Him within pretty Narrow Bounds, giving him only that Portion of Land which contains Buckingham, Philadelphia and Cheſter Counties. But to get theſe Bounds a little extended, He puſht His Intereſt ſtill further with His Royal Highneſs, and obtaind a freſh Grant of the three Lower Counties, called New-Caſtle, Kent and Suſſex, which ſtill remaind within the New York Patent, and had been luckily left out of the Grant of New Jerſey.

The Six Counties being thus incorporated, the Proprietor dignifyd the whole with the Name of Penſilvania.

The Quakers flockt over to this Country in Shoals, being

averſe to go to Heaven the ſame way with the Biſhops. Amongſt them were not a few of good Subſtance, who went Vigorouſly upon every kind of Improvement; and thus much I may truly ſay in their Praiſe, that by Diligence and Frugality, For which this Harmleſs Sect is remarkable, and by haveing no Vices but ſuch as are Private, they have in a few Years made Penſilvania a very fine Country.

The Truth is, they have obſerved exact Juſtice with all the Natives that border upon them; they have purchaſd all their Lands from the Indians; and tho they paid but a Triffle for them, it has procured them the Credit of being more righteous than their Neighbours. They have likewiſe had the Prudence to treat them kindly upon all Occaſions, which has ſavd them from many Wars and Maſſacres wherein the other Colonies have been indiſcreetly involved. The truth of it is, a People whoſe Principles forbid them to draw the Carnal Sword, were in the Right to give no Provocation.

Both the French and Spaniards had, in the Name of their Reſpective Monarchs, long ago taken Poſſeſſion of that Part of the Northern Continent that now goes by the Name of Carolina; but finding it Produced neither Gold nor Silver, as they greedily expected, and meeting ſuch returns from the Indians as their own Cruelty and Treachery deſerved, they totally abandond it. In this deſerted Condition that country lay for the Space of 90 Years, till King Charles the 2d, finding it a DERELICT, granted it away to the Earl of Clarendon and others, by His Royal Charter, dated March the 24th, 1663. The Boundary of that Grant towards Virginia was a due Weſt Line from Luck-Iſland, (the ſame as Colleton Iſland,) lying in 36 degrees N. Latitude, quite to the South Sea.

But afterwards Sir William Berkeley, who was one of the Grantees and at that time Governour of Virginia, finding a Territory of 31 Miles in Breadth between the Inhabited Part of Virginia

and the above-mentioned Boundary of Carolina, adviſd the Lord Clarendon of it. And His Lordp had Intereſt enough with the King to obtain a Second Patent to include it, dated June the 30th, 1665.

This laſt Grant deſcribes the Bounds between Virginia and Carolina in theſe Words: "To run from the North End of Corotuck-Inlet, due Weſt to Weyanoke Creek, lying within or about the Degree of Thirty-Six and Thirty Minutes of Northern Latitude, and from thence Weſt, in a direct Line, as far as the South-Sea." Without queſtion, this Boundary was well known at the time the Charter was Granted, but in a long Courſe of years Weynoke Creek loſt its name, ſo that it became a Controverſy where it lay. Some Ancient Perſons in Virginia affirmd it was the ſame with Wicocon, and others again in Carolina were as Poſitive it was Nottoway River.

In the mean time, the People on the Frontiers Enterd for Land, & took out Patents by Gueſs, either from the King or the Lords Proprietors. But the Crown was like to be the loſer by this Incertainty, becauſe the Terms both of taking up and ſeating Land were eaſier much in Carolina. The Yearly Taxes to the Public were likewiſe there leſs burthenſome, which laid Virginia under a Plain diſadvantage.

This Conſideration put that Government upon entering into Meaſures with North Carolina, to terminate the Diſpute, and ſettle a Certain Boundary between the two colonies. All the Difficulty was, to find out which was truly Weyanoke Creek. The Difference was too Conſiderable to be given up by either ſide, there being a Territory of 15 Miles betwixt the two Streams in controverſy.

However, till that Matter could be adjuſted, it was agreed on both ſides, that no Lands at all Should be granted within the diſputed Bounds. Virginia obſerved this Agreement punctually, but I am ſorry I cant ſay the Same of North-Carolina. The

great Officers of that Province were loath to loſe the Fees accrueing from the Grants of Land, and ſo private Intereſt got the better of Public Spirit; and I wiſh that were the only Place in the World where ſuch politicks are faſhionable.

All the Steps that were taken afterwards in that Affair, will beſt appear by the Report of the Virginia-Commiſſioners, recited in the Order of Council given at St. James's, March the 1ſt, 1710, ſet down in the Appendix.

It muſt be owned, the Report of thoſe Gentlemen was Severe upon the then commiſſioners of North-Carolina, and particularly upon Mr. Moſeley. I wont take upon me to ſay with how much Juſtice they ſaid ſo many hard things, tho it had been fairer Play to have given the Parties accuſd a Copy of ſuch Repreſentation, that they might have anſwerd what they could for themſelves.

But ſince that was not done, I muſt beg leave to ſay thus much in behalf of Mr. Moſeley, that he was not much in the Wrong to find fault with the Quadrant produced by the Surveyors of Virginia, becauſe that Inſtrument plact the Mouth of Notoway River in the Latitude of 37 Degrees; whereas, by an Accurate Obſervation made Since, it appears to lie in 36° 30′ ½′, ſo that there was an Error of near 30 minutes, either in the Inſtrument or in thoſe who made uſe of it.

Beſides, it is evident the Mouth of Notoway River agrees much better with the Latitude, wherein the Carolina Charter ſuppoſed Wyanoak Creek, (namely, in or about 36 Degrees and 30 minutes,) than it does with Wicocon Creek, which is about 15 Miles more Southerly.

This being manifeſt, the Intention of the King's Grant will be pretty exactly anſwerd, by a due Weſt Line drawn from Corotuck Inlet to the Mouth of Notaway River, for which reaſon tis probable that was formerly calld Wyanoak-Creek, and might change its Name when the Nottoway Indians came to

live upon it, which was ſince the Date of the laſt Carolina Charter.

The Lievt Governor of Virginia, at that time Colo Spotſwood, ſearching into the Bottom of this Affair, made very Equitable Propoſals to Mr. Eden, at that time Governour of North Carolina, in Order to put an End to this Controverſy. Theſe, being formd into Preliminaries, were Signd by both Governours, and tranſmitted to England, where they had the Honour to be ratifyed by his late Majeſty and Aſſented to by the Lords Proprietors of Carolina.

Accordingly an Order was ſent by the late King to Mr. Gooch, afterwards Lievt Governor of Virginia, to purſue thoſe Preliminarys exactly. In Obedience thereunto, he was pleaſed to appoint Three of the Council of that colony to be Commiſſioners on the Part of Virginia, who, in Conjunction with others to be named by the Governor of North Carolina, were to ſettle the Boundary between the 2 Governments, upon the Plan of the above-mentiond Articles.

Two Experienct Surveyors were at the ſame time directed to wait upon the Commiſſioners, Mr. Mayo, who made the Accurate Mapp of Barbadoes, and Mr. Irvin, the Mathematick Profeſſor of William and Mary Colledge. And becauſe a good Number of Men were to go upon this Expedition, a Chaplain was appointed to attend them, and the rather becauſe the People on the Frontiers of North-Carolina, who have no Miniſter near them, might have an Opportunity to get themſelves and their Children baptizd.

Of theſe proceedings on our Part, immediate Notice was ſent 1728
to Sir Richard Everard, Governor of North Carolina, who was February
deſired to Name Commiſſioners for that Province, to meet thoſe of Virginia at Crotuck-Inlet the Spring following. Accordingly he appointed Four Members of the Council of that Province to take Care of the Intereſts of the Lds Proprietors. Of theſe,

1728 February Mr. Moſeley was to ſerve in a Double Capacity, both as Commiſſioner and Surveyor. For that reaſon there was but one other Surveyor from thence, Mr. Swan. All the Perſons being thus agreed upon, they ſettled the time of Meeting to be at Corotuck, March the 5th, 1728.

In the Mean time, the requiſite Preparations were made for ſo long and tireſome a Journey; and becauſe there was much work to be done and ſome Danger from the Indians, in the uninhabited Part of the Country, it was neceſſary to provide a Competent Number of Men. Accordingly, Seventeen able Hands were liſted on the Part of Virginia, who were moſt of them Indian Traders and expert Woodſmen.

27 Theſe good men were ordered to come armed with a Muſquet and a Tomahack, or large Hatchet, and provided with a Sufficient Quantity of Ammunition.

They likewiſe brought Proviſions of their own for ten days, after which time they were to be furniſht by the Government. Their March was appointed to be on the 27th of February, on which day one of the Commiſſioners met them at their Rendezvous, and proceeded with them as far as Colo Allen's. This Gentleman is a great œconomiſt, and Skilld in all the Arts of living well at an eaſy expenſe.

28 They proceeded in good Order through Surry County, as far as the Widdow Allen's who had copied Solomon's complete houſewife exactly. At this Gentlewoman's Houſe, the other two Commiſſioners had appointed to join them, but were detaind by ſome Accident at Williamſburg, longer than their appointment.

29 They purſued their march thro the Iſle of Wight and obſervd a moſt dreadful Havock made by a late Hurricane, which happend in Auguſt, 1726. The Violence of it had not reachd above a Quarter of a Mile in Breadth, but within that Compaſs had levelld all before it. Both Trees and Houſes were laid flat

on the Ground, and ſeveral things hurld to an incredible diſtance. 1728
Tis happy ſuch violent Guſts are confind to ſo narrow a Chan- February
nel, becauſe they carry deſolation wherever they go. In the Evening they reacht Mr. Godwin's, on the South Branch of Nanſemond River, where they were treated with abundance of Primitive Hoſpitality.

March 1. This Gentleman was ſo kind as to ſhorten their March
Journey, by ſetting thom over the river. They coaſted the N E Side of the Diſmal for ſeveral miles together, and found all the Grounds bordering upon it very full of Sloughs. The Trees that grew near it lookt very Reverend, with the long Moſs that hung dangling from their Branches. Both cattle and Horſes eat this Moſs greedily in Winter when other Provender is Scarce, tho it is apt to ſcowr them at firſt. In that moiſt Soil too grew abundance of that kind of Myrtle which bears the Candle-Berries. There was likewiſe, here and there, a Gall-buſh, which is a beautiful Evergreen, and may be cut into any Shape. It derives its name from its Berries turning Water black, like the Galls of an oak.

When this Shrub is tranſplanted into Gardens, it will not thrive without frequent watering.

The two other commiſſioners came up with them juſt at their Journey's end, and that evening they arrivd all together at Mr. Craford's, who lives on the South Branch of Elizabeth-River, over againſt Norfolk. Here the Commiſſioners left the Men with all the Horſes and heavy Baggage, and croſſt the River with their Servants only, for fear of making a Famine in the Town.

Norfolk has moſt the ayr of a Town of any in Virginia. There were then near 20 Brigantines and Sloops riding at the Wharves, and oftentimes they have more. It has all the advantages of Situation requiſite for Trade and Navigation. There is a Secure Harbour for a good Number of Ships of any Burthen. Their

1728 March River divides itſelf into 3 Several Branches, which are all Navigable. The Town is ſo near the ſea, that its Veſſels may Sail in and out in a few Hours. Their Trade is Chiefly to the Weſt-Indies, whither they export abundance of Beef, Pork, Flour and Lumber. The worſt of it is, they contribute much towards debauching the Country by importing abundance of Rum, which, like Ginn in Great Britain, breaks the Conſtitution, Vitiates the Morals, and ruins the Induſtry of moſt of the Poor people of this Country.

This Place is the Mart for moſt of the Commodities produced in the Adjacent Parts of North Carolina. They have a pretty deal of Lumber from the Borderers on the Diſmal, who make bold with the King's Land there abouts, without the leaſt Ceremony. They not only maintain their Stocks upon it, but get Boards, Shingles and other Lumber out of it in great Abundance.

The Town is built on a level Spot of Ground upon Elizabeth River, the Banks whereof are neither ſo high as to make the landing of Goods troubleſome, or ſo low as to be in Danger of overflowing. The Streets are Straight, and adornd with ſeveral Good Houſes, which Encreaſe every Day. It is not a Town of Ordinarys and Publick Houſes, like moſt others in this Country, but the Inhabitants conſiſt of Merchants, Ship-Carpenters and other uſeful Artiſans, with Sailors enough to manage their Navigation. With all theſe Conveniences, it lies under the two great diſadvantages that moſt of the Towns in Holland do, by having neither good Air nor good Water. The two Cardinal Vertues that make a Place thrive, Induſtry and Frugality, are ſeen here in Perfection; and ſo long as they can baniſh Luxury and Idleneſs, the Town will remain in a happy and flouriſhing Condition.

The Method of building Wharffs here is after the following Manner. They lay down long Pine Logs, that reach from the Shore to the Edge of the Channel. Theſe are bound faſt to-

gether by Croſſ-Pieces notcht into them, according to the Archi- 1728
tecture of the Log-Houſes in North Carolina. A wharff built March
thus will ſtand Several Years, in ſpight of the Worm, which bites here very much, but may be ſoon repaird in a Place where ſo many Pines grow in the Neighbourhood.

The Commiſſioners endeavourd, in this Town, to lift Three more men to ſerve as Guides in that dirty Part of the Country, but found that theſe People knew juſt enough of that frightful Place to avoid it.

They had been told that thoſe Netherlands were full of Bogs, of Marſhes and Swamps, not fit for Human Creatures to engage in, and this was Reaſon enough for them not to hazard their Perſons. So they told us, flat and plain, that we might een daggle thro the mire by Our-Selves for them.

The worſt of it was, we coud not learn from any body in this Town, what Rout to take to Coratuck Inlet; till at laſt we had the fortune to meet with a Borderer upon North Carolina, who made a rough Sketch of that Part of the Country. Thus, upon ſeeing how the Land lay, we determind to march directly to Preſcot Landing upon N W River, and proceed from thence by Water to the Place where our Line was to begin.

In Purſuance of this Reſolution we croſſt the River this Morn- 4th
ing to Powder-Point, where we all took Horſe; and the Grandees of the Town, with great Courteſy, conducted us Ten Miles on our way, as far as the long Bridge built over the S Branch of the River. The Parſon of the Pariſh, Mr. Marſton, a painful Apoſtle from the Society, made one in this Ceremonious Cavalcade.

At the Bridge, theſe Gentlemen, wiſhing us a good Deliverance, returnd, and then a Troop of Light Horſe eſcorted us as far as Preſcot-Landing, upon N W river. Care had been taken beforehand to provide 2 Periaugas to lie ready at that Place to tranſport us to Coratuck Inlet. Our Zeal was ſo great to get

1728 March thither at the time time appointed, that we hardly allowd ourſelves leiſure to eat, which in truth we had the leſs Stomach to, by reaſon the dinner was ſerved up by the Landlord, whoſe Noſe ſtood on ſuch tickliſh Terms, that it was in Danger of falling into the Diſh. We therefore made our Repaſt very ſhort, and then embarkt with only the Surveyors and Nine choſen Men, leaving the reſt at Mr. W——n's to take Care of the Horſes and Baggage. There we alſo left our Chaplain, with the Charitable Intent, that the Gentiles round about might have time and Opportunity, if they pleaſd, of getting themſelves and their children baptizd.

We rowd down N W River about 18 miles, as far as the Mouth of it, where it empties itſelf into Albermarle Sound. It was a really Delightful Sight, all the way, to ſee the Banks of the River adornd with Myrtle, Laurel and Bay Trees, which preſerve their Verdure the Year round, tho it muſt be ownd that theſe beautiful Plants, Sacred to Venus and Apollo, grow commonly in a very dirty Soil. The River is, in moſt Places, fifty or Sixty Yards wide, without ſpreading much wider at the Mouth. Tis remarkable it was never known to Ebb and flow till the year 1713, when a Violent Storm opend a new Inlet, about 5 Miles South of the old one; ſince which Convulſion, the Old Inlet is almoſt choakd up by the Shifting of the Sand, and grows both Narrower and Shoaller every day.

It was dark before we could reach the Mouth of the River, where our wayward Stars directed us to a Miſerable Cottage. The Landlord was lately removed, Bag and Baggage, from Maryland, thro a Strong Antipathy he had to work and paying his Debts. For want of our Tent, we were obligd to Shelter our Selves in this wretched Hovel, where we were almoſt devourd by Vermin of Various kinds. However, we were above complaining, being all Philoſophers enough to improve ſuch Slender Diſtreſſes into Mirth and good Humour.

5. The Day being now come, on which we had agreed to meet the Commiſſioners of North Carolina, we embarkd very early, which we coud the eaſier do, having no Temptation to ſtay where we were. We Shapt our Courſe along the South End of Knot's Iſland, there being no Paſſage open on the North. 1728 March

Farther Still to the Southward of us, we diſcoverd two Smaller Iſlands, that go by the names of Bell's and Churche's Iſles. We alſo ſaw a ſmall New England Sloop riding in the Sound, a little to the South of our Courſe. She had come in at the New-Inlet, as all other Veſſels have done ſince the opening of it. This Navigation is a little difficult, and fit only for Veſſels that draw no more than ten feet Water.

The Trade hither is engroſſt by the Saints of New England, who carry off a great deal of Tobacco, without troubling themſelves with paying that Impertinent Duty of a Penny a Pound.

It was juſt Noon before we arrivd at Coratuck Inlet, which is now ſo ſhallow that the Breakers fly over it with a horrible Sound, and at the ſame time afford a very wild Proſpect. On the North ſide of the Inlet, the High Land terminated in a Bluff Point, from which a Spit of Sand extended itſelf towards tht South-Eaſt, full half a Mile. The Inlet lies between that Spit and another on the South of it, leaving an Opening of not quite a Mile, which at this day is not practicable for any Veſſel whatſoever. And as ſhallow as it now is, it continues to fill up more and more, both the Wind and Waves rolling in the Sands from the Eaſtern Shoals.

About two a Clock in the Afternoon we were joind by two of the Carolina Commiſſioners, attended by Mr. S—n, their Surveyor. The other two were not quite ſo punctual, which was the more unlucky for us, becauſe there could be no ſport till they came. Theſe Gentlemen, it ſeems, had the Carolina-Commiſſion in their keeping, notwithſtanding which they coud

1728 March not forbear paying too much regard to a Proverb—faſhionable in ther Country,—not to make more haſt than good Speed.

However, that we who were punctual might not ſpend our precious time unprofitably, we took the Several bearings of the Coaſt. We alſo ſurveyd part of the Adjacent High Land, which had ſcarcely any Trees growing upon it, but Cedars. Among the Shrubs, we were ſhewed here and there a Buſh of Carolina-Tea calld Japon, which is one Species of the Phylarrea. This is an Evergreen, the Leavs whereof have ſome reſemblance to Tea, but differ very widely both in Taſt and Flavour.

We alſo found ſome few Plants of the Spired Leaf Silk graſs, which is likewiſe an Evergreen, bearing on a lofty Stemm a large Cluſter of Flowers of a Pale Yellow. Of the Leaves of this Plant the People thereabouts twiſt very ſtrong Cordage.

A vertuoſo might divert himſelf here very well, in picking up Shells of various Hue and Figure, and amongſt the reſt, that Species of Conque Shell which the Indian Peak is made of. The Extremities of theſe Shells are Blue and the reſt white, ſo that Peak of both theſe Colours are drilld out of one and the ſame Shell, Serving the Natives both for Ornament and Money, and are eſteemd by them far beyond Gold and Silver.

The Cedars were of Singular uſe to us in the Abſence of our Tent, which we had left with the reſt of the Baggage for fear of overloading the Periaugas. We made a Circular Hedge of the Branches of this Tree, Wrought ſo cloſe together as to fence us againſt the Cold Winds. We then kindled a rouſeing fire in the Center of it, and lay round it, like ſo many Knights Templars. But, as comfortable as this Lodging was, the Surveyors turnd out about 2 in the Morning to try the Variation by a Meridian taken from the North Star, and found it to be ſomewhat leſs than three degrees Weſt.

The Commiſſioners of the Neighbouring Colony came better provided for the Belly than the Buſineſs. They brought not

above two men along with them that would put their Hands to any thing but the Kettle and the Frying-Pan. Theſe ſpent ſo much of their Induſtry that way, that they had as little Spirit as Inclination for Work. 1728 March

At Noon, having a Perfect Obſervation, we found the Latitude of Coratuck Inlet to be 36 Degrees and 31 Minutes. 6

Whilſt we were buſied about theſe Neceſſary Matters, our Skipper row'd to an Oyſter Bank juſt by, and loaded his Periauga with Oyſters as Savoury and well-taſted as thoſe from Colcheſter or Walfleet, and had the advantage of them, too, by being much larger and fatter.

About 3 in the Afternoon the two lagg Commiſſioners arriv'd, and after a few decent excuſes for making us wait, told us they were ready to enter upon Buſineſs as ſoon as we pleaſ'd. The firſt Step was to produce our reſpective Powers, and the Commiſſion from each Governor was diſtinctly read, and Copies of them interchangeably deliver'd.

It was obſerv'd by our Carolina Friends, that the Latter Part of the Virginia Commiſſion had ſomething in it a little too lordly and Poſitive. In anſwer to which we told them twas neceſſary to make it thus peremptory, leſt the preſent Commiſſioners might go upon as fruitleſs an Errand as their Predeceſſors. The former Commiſſioners were ty'd down to Act in Exact Conjunction with thoſe of Carolina, and ſo could not advance one Step farther, or one Jot faſter, than they were pleaſ'd to permit them.

The Memory of that diſappointment, therefore, induc'd the Government of Virginia to give fuller Powers to the preſent Commiſſioners, by Authorizing them to go on with the Work by Themſelves, in Caſe thoſe of Corolina ſhould prove unreaſonable, and refuſe to join with them in carrying the buſineſs to Execution. And all this was done leſt His Majeſty's gracious Intention ſhoud be fruſtrated a Second time.

1728 March

After both Commiſſions were conſiderd, the firſt Queſtion was, where the Dividing Line was to begin. This begat a Warm debate; the Virginia Commiſſioners contending, with a great deal of Reaſon, to begin at the End of the Spitt of Sand, which was undoubtedly the North Shore of Coratuck Inlet. But thoſe of Carolina inſiſted Strenuouly, that the Point of High Land ought rather to be the Place of Beginning, becauſe that was fixt and certain, whereas the Spitt of Sand was ever Shifting, and did actually run out farther now than formerly. The Conteſt laſted ſome Hours, with great Vehemence, neither Party receding from their Opinion that Night. But next Morning, Mr. M....., to convince us he was not that Obſtinate Perſon he had been repreſented, yielded to our Reaſons, and found Means to bring over his Collegues.

Here we began already to reap the Benefit of thoſe Peremptory Words in our Commiſſion, which in truth added ſome Weight to our Reaſons. Nevertheleſs, becauſe poſitive proof was made by the Oaths of two Credible Witneſſes, that the Spitt of Sand had advancd 200 Yards towards the Inlet ſince the Controverſy firſt began, we were willing for Peace-ſake to make them that allowance. Accordingly we fixed our Beginning about that Diſtance North of the Inlet, and there Ordered a Cedar-Poſt to be driven deep into the Sand for our beginning. While we continued here, we were told that on the South Shore, not far from the Inlet, dwelt a Marooner, that Modeſtly call'd himſelf a Hermit, tho' he forfeited that Name by Suffering a wanton Female to cohabit with Him.

His Habitation was a Bower, cover'd with Bark after the Indian Faſhion, which in that mild Situation protected him pretty well from the Weather. Like the Ravens, he neither plow'd nor ſow'd, but Subſiſted chiefly upon Oyſters, which his Handmaid made a Shift to gather from the Adjacent Rocks. Sometimes, too, for Change of Dyet, he ſent her to drive up the Neighbour's

Cows, to moiſten their Mouths with a little Milk. But as for raiment, he depended moſtly upon his Length of Beard, and She upon her Length of Hair, part of which ſhe brought decently forward, and the reſt dangled behind quite down to her Rump, like one of Herodotus's Eaſt Indian Pigmies. 1728 March

Thus did theſe Wretches live in a dirty State of Nature, and were mere Adamites, Innocence only excepted.

This Morning the Surveyors began to run the Dividing line from the Cedar-Poſt we had driven into the Sand, allowing near 3 Degrees for the Variation. Without making this Juſt allowance, we ſhould not have obeyd his Majeſty's order in running a Due Weſt Line. It ſeems the former Commiſſioners had not been ſo exact, which gave our Friends of Carolina but too juſt an Exception to their Proceedings. 7

The Line cut Doſier's Iſland, conſiſting only of a Flat Sand, with here and there an humble Shrub growing upon it. From thence it croſt over a narrow Arm of the Sound into Knot's Iſland, and there Split a Plantation belonging to William Harding.

The Day being far ſpent, we encampt in this Man's Paſture, tho' it lay very low, and the Seaſon now inclin'd People to Aguiſh Diſtempers. He ſufferd us to cut Cedar-Branches for our Encloſure, and other Wood for Firing, to correct the moiſt Air and drive away the Damps. Our Landlady, in the Days of her Youth, it ſeems, had been a Laundreſs in the Temple, and talkt over her Adventures in that Station, with as much pleaſure as an Old Soldier talks over his Battles and Diſtempers, and I believe with as many Additions to the Truth.

The Soil is good in many Places of this Iſland, and the Extent of it pretty large. It lyes in the form of a Wedge: the South End of it is Several Miles over, but towards the North it Sharpens into a Point. It is a Plentiful Place for Stock, by reaſon of the wide Marſhes adjacent to it, and becauſe of its

1728 March warm Situation. But the Inhabitants pay a little dear for this Convenience, by loſing as much Blood in the Summer Seaſon by the infinite Number of Moſquetas, as all their Beef and Pork can recruit in the Winter.

The Sheep are as large as in Lincolnſhire, becauſe they are never pincht by cold or Hunger. The whole Iſland was hitherto reckon'd to lye in Virginia, but now our Line has given the greater Part of it to Carolina. The Principal Freeholder here is Mr. White, who keeps open Houſe for all Travellers, that either Debt or Shipwreck happens to caſt in his way.

8 By break of Day we ſent away our Largeſt Periauga, with the Baggage, round the South end of Knot's Iſland, with Orders to the Men to wait for us in the Mouth of North River. Soon after, we embarkt ourſelves on board the ſmaller Veſſel, with Intent, if poſſible, to find a Paſſage round the North End of the Iſland.

We found this Navigation very difficult, by reaſon of the Continued Shoals, and often ſtuck faſt aground; for tho' the Sound ſpreads many miles, yet it is in moſt places extremely Shallow, and requires a Skilful Pilot to Steer even a Canoe ſafe over it. It was almoſt as hard to keep our Temper as to keep the Channel, in this provoking Situation. But the moſt impatient amongſt us ſtrokt down their Choler and ſwallow'd their curſes, leſt, if they ſuffer'd them to break out, they might ſound like Complaining, which was expreſſly forbid, as the firſt Step to Sedition.

At a diſtance we deſcry'd Several Iſlands to the Northward of us, the largeſt of which goes by the Name of Cedar Iſland. Our periauga ſtuck ſo often that we had a fair chance to be benighted in this wide Water, which muſt certainly have been our Fate, had we not luckily ſpied a Canoe that was giving a Fortune-teller a caſt from Princeſs Anne County over to North Carolina. But, as conjurers are Sometimes miſtaken, the Man miſtruſted

we were Officers of Juſtice in purſuit of a Young Wench he had carry'd off along with him. We gave the Canoe Chaſe for more than an Hour and when we came up with her, threatend to make them all priſoners unleſs they would direct us into the right Channel. 1728 March

By the Pilotage of theſe People we row'd up an Arm of the Sound, call'd the Back-Bay, till we came to the Head of it. There we were ſtoppt by a miry Pocoſon full half a Mile in Breadth, thro' which we were oblig'd to daggle on foot, plunging now and then, tho' we pickt our Way, up to the Knees in Mud. At the End of this Charming walk we gain'd the Terra Firma of Princeſs Anne County. In that Dirty Condition we were afterwards oblig'd to foot it two Miles, as far as John Heath's Plantation, where we expected to meet the Surveyors & the men who waited upon them.

While we were performing this tedious Voyage, they had carried the Line thro' the firm Land of Knot's Iſland, where it was no more than half a Mile wide. After that they traverſ'd a large Marſh, that was exceeding Miry, and extended to an Arm of the Back Bay. They croſſt that water in a Canoe, which we had order'd round for that Purpoſe, and then waded over another Marſh, that reacht quite to the High Land of of Princeſs Anne. Both theſe Marſhes together make a breadth of five Miles, in which the Men frequently ſunk up to the Middle without muttering the leaſt complaint. On the contrary, they turn'd all theſe Diſaſters into Merriment.

It was diſcover'd, by this day's Work, that Knot's Iſland was improperly ſo call'd, being in Truth no more than a Peninſula. The N W Side of it is only divided from the Main by the great Marſh above-mentioned, which is ſeldom totally overflow'd. Inſtead of that, it might, by the Labour of a few Trenches, be drain'd into firm Meadow, capable of grazing as many cattle as Job, in his beſt Eſtate, was maſter of. In the Miry Condition

1728 March it now lies, it feeds great Numbers in the Winter, tho', when the Weather grows warm, they are driven from thence by the Mighty Armies of Moſquetas, which are the Plague of the lower Part of Carolina, as much as the Flies were formerly of Egypt, and ſome Rabbis think thoſe Flies were no other than Muſquetas.

All the People in the Neighbourhood flockt to John Heath's, to behold ſuch Rarities as they fancied us to be. The Men left their belov'd Chimney Corners, the good women their Spinning Wheels, and ſome, of more Curioſity than Ordinary, roſe out of their ſick Beds, to come and ſtare at us. They lookt upon us as a Troop of Knight Errants, who were running this great Riſque of our Lives, as they imagin'd, for the Publick Weal; and ſome of the graveſt of them queſtion'd much whether we were not all Criminals, condemned to this dirty work for Offences againſt the State.

What puzzled them moſt was, what cou'd make our men ſo very Light-hearted under ſuch intolerable Drudgery. "Ye have little reaſon to be merry, My Maſters," ſaid one of them, with a very ſolemn Face, "I fancy the Pocoſon you muſt Struggle with to-morrow will make you change your Note, and try what Metal you are made of. Ye are, to be ſure, the firſt of Human Race that ever had the Boldneſs to attempt it, and I dare ſay will be the laſt. If, therefore, you have any Worldly Goods to diſpoſe of, My Advice is that you make your Wills this very Night, for fear you die Inteſtate to-Morrow." But, alas! theſe frightfull Tales were ſo far from diſheartening the men, that they ſerv'd only to whet their Reſolution.

9 The Surveyors enter'd Early upon their Buſineſs this Morning, and ran the Line thro' Mr. Eyland's Plantation, as far as the Banks of North River. They paſſt over it in the Periauga, and landed in Gibbs' Marſh, which was a mile in Breadth, and tolerably firm. They trudg'd thro' this Marſh without much

difficulty as far as the High Land, which promiſ'd more Fertility than any they had ſeen in theſe lower Parts. But this firm Land laſted not long before they came upon the dreadful Pocoſon they had been threaten'd with. Nor did they find it one Jot better than it had been painted to them. The Beavers and Otters had render'd it quite impaſſable for any Creature but themſelves. 1728 March

Our poor Fellows had much ado to drag their Legs after them in this Quagmire, but diſdaining to be baulkt, they cou'd hardly be perſuaded from preſſing forward by the Surveyors, who found it abſolutely Neceſſary to make a Traverſe in the Deepeſt Place, to prevent their Sticking faſt in the Mire, and becoming a Certain Prey to the Turkey-Buzzards.

This Horrible Day's Work Ended two Miles to the Northward of Mr. Merchant's Plantation, divided from NW River by a Narrow Swamp, which is cauſeway'd over. We took up our Quarters in the open Field, not far from the Houſe, corcorrecting, by a Fire as large as a Roman Funeral-Pile, the Aguiſh Exhalations ariſing from the Sunken Grounds that Surrounded us.

The Neck of Land included betwixt N River and N-Weſt River, with the adjacent Marſh, belong'd formerly to Governor Gibbs, but ſince his Deceaſe to Colonel Bladen, in right of his firſt Lady, who was Mr. Gibbs' Daughter. It would be a Valuable Tract of Land in any Country but North Carolina, where, for want of Navigation and Commerce, the beſt Eſtate affords little more than a coarſe Subſiſtence.

The Sabbath happen'd very opportunely to give ſome eaſe to our jaded People, who reſted religiouſly from every work, but that of cooking the Kettle. We obſerved very few corn-fields in our Walks, and thoſe very ſmall, which ſeem'd the Stranger to us, becauſe we could ſee no other Tokens of Huſbandry or Improvement. But, upon further Inquiry, we were given to

1728 March underſtand People only made Corn for themſelves and not for their Stocks, which know very well how to get their own Living.

Both Cattle and Hogs ramble in the Neighbouring Marſhes and Swamps, where they maintain themſelves the whole Winter long, and are not fetch'd home till the Spring. Thus theſe Indolent Wretches, during one half of the Year, loſe the Advantage of the Milk of their cattle, as well as their Dung, and many of the poor Creatures periſh in the Mire, into the Bargain, by this ill Management.

Some, who pique themſelves more upon Induſtry than their Neighbours, will, now and then, in compliment to their Cattle, cut down a Tree whoſe Limbs are loaden with the Moſs aforemention'd. The trouble wou'd be too great to Climb the Tree in order to gather this Provender, but the Shorteſt way (which in this Country is always counted the beſt) is to fell it, juſt like the Lazy Indians, who do the ſame by ſuch Trees as bear fruit, and ſo make one Harveſt for all. By this bad Huſbandry Milk is ſo Scarce, in the Winter Seaſon, that were a Big-belly'd Woman to long for it, She would loſe her Longing. And, in truth, I believe this is often the Caſe, and at the ſame time a very good reaſon why ſo many People in this Province are markt with a Cuſtard Complexion.

The only Buſineſs here is raiſing of Hogs, which is manag'd with the leaſt Trouble, and affords the Diet they are moſt fond of. The Truth of it is, the Inhabitants of N Carolina devour ſo much Swine's fleſh, that it fills them full of groſs Humours. For want too of a conſtant Supply of Salt, they are commonly obliged to eat it Freſh, and that begets the higheſt taint of Scurvy. Thus, whenever a Severe Cold happens to Conſtitutions thus Vitiated, tis apt to improve into the Yaws, called there very juſtly the country-Diſtemper. This has all the Symptoms of the Pox, with this Aggravation, that no Prepara-

tion of Mercury will touch it. Firſt it ſeizes the Throat, next the Palate, and laſtly ſhews its ſpite to the poor Noſe, of which tis apt in a ſmall time treacherouſly to undermine the Foundation. 1728 March

This Calamity is ſo common and familiar here, that it ceaſes to be a Scandal, and in the diſputes that happen about Beauty, the Noſes have in ſome Companies much ado to carry it. Nay, tis ſaid that once, after three good Pork years, a Motion had like to have been made in the Houſe of Burgeſſes, that a Man with a Noſe ſhou'd be incapable of holding any Place of Profit in the Province; which Extraordinary Motion could never have been intended without Some Hopes of a Majority.

Thus, conſidering the foul and pernicious Effects of Eating Swine's Fleſh in a hot Country, it was wiſely forbidden and made an Abomination to the Jews, who liv'd much in the ſame Latitude with Carolina.

We ordered the Surveyors early to their Buſineſs, who were 11
bleſſt with pretty dry Grounds for three Miles together. But they paid dear for it in the next two, conſiſting of one continued frightfull Pocoſon, which no Creatures but thoſe of the amphibious kind ever had ventur'd into before.

This filthy Quagmire did in earneſt put the Men's Courage to a Tryal, and tho' I can't ſay it made them loſe their Patience, yet they loſt their Humour for Joking. They kept their Gravity like ſo many Spaniards, ſo that a Man might then have taken his Opportunity to plunge up to the Chin, without Danger of being laught at. However, this unuſual compoſure of countenance could not fairly be call'd complaining.

Their Day's-Work ended at the Mouth of Northern's Creek, which empties itſelf into N W River; tho' we choſe to Quarter a little higher up the River, near Moſſy Point. This we did for the Convenience of an Old houſe to Shelter our Perſons and Baggage from the rain, which threaten'd us hard. We judg'd

1728 March the thing right, for there fell an heavy ſhower in the Night, that drove the moſt hardy of us into the Houſe. Tho' indeed, our caſe was not much mended by retreating thither, becauſe that Tenement having not long before been uſ'd as a Pork-Store, the Moiſture of the Air diſſolv'd the Salt that lay Scatter'd on the Floor, and made it as wet within Doors as without. However, the Swamps and Marſhes we were lately accuſtom'd to had made ſuch Beavers and Otters of us that Nobody caught the leaſt cold.

We had encampt ſo early, that we found time in the Evening to walk near half a Mile into the Woods. There we came upon a Family of Mulattoes, that call'd themſelves free, tho' by the Shyneſs of the Maſter of the Houſe, who took care to keep leaſt in Sight, their Freedom ſeem'd a little Doubtful. It is certain many Slaves Shelter themſelves in this Obſcure Part of the World, nor will any of their righteous Neighbours diſcover them. On the Contrary, they find their Account in Settling ſuch Fugitives on ſome out-of-the-way-corner of their Land, to raiſe Stocks for a mean and inconſiderable Share, well knowing their Condition makes it Neceſſary for them to Submit to any Terms.

Nor were theſe worthy Borderers content to Shelter Runaway Slaves, but Debtors and Criminals have often met with the like Indulgence. But if the Government of North Carolina has encourag'd this unneighbourly Policy in order to increaſe their People, it is no more than what Ancient Rome did before them, which was made a City of Refuge for all Debtors and Fugitives, and from that wretched Beginning grew up in time to be Miſtreſs of a great Part of the World. And, conſidering how Fortune delights in bringing great things out of Small, who knows but Carolina may, one time or other, come to be the Seat of ſome other great Empire?

12 Every thing had been ſo ſoakt with the Rain, that we were

oblig'd to lie by a good Part of the Morning and dry them. 1728 March
However, that time was not loſt, becauſe it gave the Surveyors an opportunity of Platting off their Work, and taking the Courſe of the River. It likewiſe helpt to recruit the Spirits of the Men, who had been a little haraſſ'd with Yeſterday's March. Notwithſtanding all this, we croſſt the River before Noon, and advanc'd our Line 3 Miles. It was not poſſible to make more of it, by reaſon good Part of the way was either Marſh or Pocoſon. The Line cut two or three Plantations, leaving Part of them in Virginia, and part of them in Carolina. This was a Caſe that happen'd frequently, to the great Inconvenience of the Owners, who were therefore oblig'd to take out two Patents and Pay for a new Survey in each Government.

In the Evening we took up our Quarters in Mr. Ballance's Paſture, a little above the Bridge built over N W River. There we diſcharg'd the two Periaugas, which in truth had been very Servicable in tranſporting us over the Many Waters in that Dirty and Difficult Part of our Buſineſs.

Our Landlord had a tolerable good Houſe and Clean Furniture, and yet we cou'd not be tempted to lodge in it. We choſe rather to lye in the open Field, for fear of growing too tender. A clear Sky, ſpangled with Stars, was our Canopy, which being the laſt thing we ſaw before we fell aſleep, gave us Magnificent Dreams. The Truth of it is, we took ſo much pleaſure in that natural kind of Lodging, that I think at the foot of the Account Mankind are great Loſers by the Luxury of Feather-Beds and warm apartments.

The curioſity of beholding ſo new and withal ſo Sweet a Method of Encamping, brought one of the Senators of N Carolina to make us a Midnight Viſit. But he was ſo very Clamorous in his Commendations of it, that the Centinel, not ſeeing his Quality, either thro' his habit or Behaviour, had like to have treated him roughly.

1728 March

After excuſing the Unſeaſonableneſs of his Viſit, and letting us know he was a Parliament Man, he ſwore he was ſo taken with our Lodging, that he would ſet Fire to his Houſe as ſoon as he got Home, and teach his Wife and Children to lie, like us, in the open field.

13 Early this Morning our Chaplain repair'd to us with the Men we had left at Mr. Wilſon's. We had ſent for them the Evening before to relieve thoſe who had the Labour-Oar from Corotuck-Inlet. But to our great ſurpriſe, they petition'd not to be reliev'd, hoping to gain immortal Reputation by being the firſt of Mankind that Ventur'd thro' the great Diſmal. But the reſt being equally Ambitious of the ſame Honour, it was but fair to decide their Pretenſions by Lot. After Fortune had declar'd herſelf, thoſe which ſhe had excluded offer'd Money to the Happy Perſons to go in their Stead. But Hercules would have as ſoon ſold the Glory of cleanſing the Augean Stables, which was pretty near the ſame Sort of Work.

No ſooner was the Controverſy at an end, but we ſent them unfortunate Fellows back to their Quarters, whom Chance had Condemn'd to remain upon Firm Land and Sleep in a whole Skin. In the mean while the Surveyors carry'd the Line 3 Miles, which was no Contemptible day's work, conſidering how cruelly they were entangled with Bryars and Gall Buſhes. The Leaf of this laſt Shrub beſpeaks it to be of the Alaternus Family.

Our Work ended within a Quarter of a Mile of the Diſmal above-mention'd, where the Ground began to be already full of Sunken Holes and Slaſhes, which had, here and there, ſome few Reeds growing in them.

Tis hardly credible how little the Bordering inhabitants were acquainted with this mighty Swamp, notwithſtanding they had liv'd their whole lives within Smell of it. Yet, as great Strangers as they were to it, they pretended to be very exact in their Account of its Demenſions, and were poſitive it could not be

above 7 or 8 Miles wide, but knew no more of the Matter than Star-gazers know of the Diſtance of the Fixt Stars. At the Same time, they were Simple enough to amuſe our Men with Idle Stories of the Lyons, Panthers and Alligators, they were like to encounter in that dreadful Place. 1728 March

In ſhort, we ſaw plainly there was no Intelligence of this Terra Incognita to be got, but from our own Experience. For that Reaſon it was reſolv'd to make the requiſite Diſpoſitions to enter it next Morning. We allotted every one of the Surveyors for this painful Enterpriſe, with 12 Men to attend them. Fewer than that cou'd not be employ'd in clearing the way, carrying the Chain, marking the Trees, and bearing the neceſſary Bedding and Proviſions. Nor wou'd the Commiſſioners themſelves have Spared their Perſons on this Occaſion, but for fear of adding to the poor men's Burthen, while they were certain they cou'd add nothing to their Reſolution.

We quarter'd with our Friend and Fellow Traveller, William Wilkins, who had been our faithful Pilot to Coratuck, and liv'd about a mile from the Place where the Line ended. Every thing lookt ſo very clean, and the Furniture ſo neat, that we were tempted to Lodge within Doors. But the Novelty of being ſhut up ſo cloſe quite ſpoil'd our reſt, nor did we breathe ſo free by abundance, as when we lay in the open Air.

Before nine of the Clock this Morning, the Proviſions, Bedding and other Neceſſaries, were made up into Packs for the Men to carry on their Shoulders into the Diſmal. They were victuall'd for 8 days at full Allowance, Nobody doubting but that wou'd be abundantly Sufficient to carry them thro' that Inhoſpitable Place; nor Indeed was it poſſible for the Poor Fellows to Stagger under more. As it was, their Loads weigh'd from 60 to 70 Pounds, in juſt Proportion to the Strength of thoſe who were to bear them. 14

Twou'd have been unconſcionable to have Saddled them with

1728 March Burthens heavier than that, when they were to lugg them thro' a filthy Bogg, which was hardly practicable with no Burthen at all.

Beſides this Luggage at their Backs, they were oblig'd to meaſure the diſtance, mark the Trees, and clear the way for the Surveyors every Step they went. It was really a Pleaſure to ſee with how much Cheerfulneſs they undertook, and with how much Spirit they went thro' all this Drudgery. For their Greater Safety, the Commiſſioners took care to furniſh them with Peruvian-Bark, Rhubarb and Hipocoacanah, in caſe they might happen, in that wet Journey, to be taken with fevers or Fluxes.

Altho' there was no need of Example to inflame Perſons already ſo cheerful, yet to enter the People with the better grace, the Author and two more of the Commiſſioners accompanied them half a Mile into the Diſmal. The Skirts of it were thinly Planted with Dwarf Reeds and Gall-Buſhes, but when we got into the Diſmal itſelf, we found the Reeds grew there much taller and cloſer, and, to mend the matter was ſo interlac'd with bamboe-briars, that there was no ſcuffling thro' them without the help of Pioneers. At the ſame time, we found the Ground moiſt and trembling under our feet like a Quagmire, inſomuch that it was an eaſy Matter to run a Ten-Foot-Pole up to the Head in it, without exerting any uncommon Strength to do it.

Two of the Men, whoſe Burthens were the leaſt cumberſome, had orders to march before, with their Tomahawks, and clear the way, in order to make an Opening for the Surveyors. By their Aſſiſtance we made a Shift to puſh the Line half a Mile in 3 Hours, and then reacht a ſmall piece of firm Land, about 100 Yards wide, Standing up above the reſt like an Iſland. Here the people were glad to lay down their Loads and take a little refreſhment, while the happy man, whoſe lot it was to carry the

Jugg of Rum, began already, like Æſop's Bread-Carriers, to find it grow a good deal lighter. 1728 March

After repoſing about an Hour, the Commiſſioners recommended Vigour and Conſtancy to their Fellow-Travellers, by whom they were anſwer'd with 3 Cheerful Huzzas, in Token of Obedience. This Ceremony was no ſooner over but they took up their Burthens and attended the Motion of the Surveyors, who, tho' they workt with all their might, could reach but one Mile farther, the ſame obſtacles ſtill attending them which they had met with in the Morning.

However ſmall this diſtance may ſeem to ſuch as are uſ'd to travel at their Eaſe, yet our Poor Men, who were oblig'd to work with an unwieldy Load at their Backs, had reaſon to think it a long way; Eſpecially in a Bogg where they had no firm Footing, but every Step made a deep Impreſſion, which was inſtantly fill'd with Water. At the ſame time they were labouring with their Hands to cut down the Reeds, which were Ten-feet high, their Legs were hampered with the Bryars. Beſides, the Weather happen'd to be warm, and the tallneſs of the Reeds kept off every Friendly Breeze from coming to refreſh them. And, indeed, it was a little provoking to hear the Wind whiſtling among the Branches of the White Cedars, which grew here and there amongſt the Reeds, and at the ſame time not have the Comfort to feel the leaſt Breath of it.

In the mean time the 3 Commiſſioners return'd out of the Diſmal the ſame way they went in, and, having join'd their Brethren, proceeded that Night as far as Mr. Wilſon's.

This worthy Perſon lives within ſight of the Diſmal, in the Skirts whereof his Stocks range and Maintain themſelves all the Winter, and yet he knew as little of it as he did of Terra Auſtralis Incognita. He told us a Canterbury Tale of a North Briton, whoſe Curioſity Spurr'd him a long way into this great Deſart, as he call'd it, near 20 Years ago, but he having no

1728 March Compaſs, nor ſeeing the Sun for ſeveral Days Together, wander'd about till he was almoſt famiſht; but at laſt he bethought himſelf of a Secret his Countrymen make uſe of to Pilot themſelves in a Dark day.

He took a fat Louſe out of his Collar, and expoſ'd it to the open day on a Piece of White Paper, which he brought along with him for his Journal. The poor Inſect having no Eye-lids, turn'd himſelf about till he found the Darkeſt Part of the Heavens, and ſo made the beſt of his way towards the North. By this Direction he Steer'd himſelf Safe out, and gave ſuch a frightful account of the Monſters he ſaw, and the Diſtreſſes he underwent, that no mortall Since has been hardy enough to go upon the like dangerous Diſcovery.

15 The Surveyors purſued their work with all Diligence, but Still found the Soil of the Diſmal ſo Spongy that the Water ouzed up into every footſtep they took. To their Sorrow, too, they found the Reeds and Bryars more firmly interwoven than than they did the day before. But the greateſt Grievance was from large Cypreſſes, which the Wind had blown down and heap'd upon one another. On the Limbs of moſt of them grew Sharp Snags, Pointing every way like ſo many Pikes, that requir'd much Pains and Caution to avoid.

Theſe Trees being Evergreens, and Shooting their Large Tops Very high, are eaſily overſet by every Guſt of Wind, becauſe there is no firm Earth to Steddy their Roots. Thus many of them were laid proſtrate to the great Encumbrance of the way. Such Variety of Difficulties made the Buſineſs go on heavily, inſomuch that, from Morning till Night, the Line could advance no farther than 1 mile and 31 Poles. Never was Rum, that cordial of Life, found more neceſſary than it was in this Dirty Place. It did not only recruit the People's Spirits, now almoſt Jaded with Fatigue, but ſerv'd to correct the Badneſs of the Water, and at the ſame time to reſiſt the Malignity of the

Air. Whenever the Men wanted to drink, which was very often, they had nothing more to do but to make a Hole, and the Water bubbled up in a Moment. But it was far from being either clear or well taſted, and had beſides a Phyſical Effect, from the Tincture it receiv'd from the Roots of the Shrubbs and Trees that grew in the Neighbourhood. 1728 March

While the Surveyors were thus painfully employ'd, the Commiſſioners diſcharged the long Score they had with Mr. Wilſon, for the Men and Horſes which had been quarter'd upon him during our Expedition to Coratuck. From thence we march'd in good Order along the Eaſt Side of the Diſmal, and paſſt the long Bridge that lies over the South Branch of Elizabeth River. At the End of 18 Miles we reacht Timothy Ivy's Plantation, where we pitcht our Tent for the firſt Time, and were furniſht with every thing the Place afforded.

We perceiv'd the happy Effects of Induſtry in this Family, in which every one lookt tidy and clean, and carri'd in their countenances the chearful Marks of Plenty. We ſaw no Drones there, which are but too Common, alas, in that Part of the World. Tho', in truth, the Diſtemper of Lazineſs ſeizes the Men oftener much than the Women. Theſe laſt Spin, weave and knit, all with their own Hands, while their Huſbands, depending on the Bounty of the Climate, are Sloathfull in every thing but getting of Children, and in that only Inſtance make themſelves uſeful Members of an Infant-Colony.

There is but little Wool in that Province, tho' Cotton grows very kindly, and, ſo far South, is Seldom nippt by the Froſt. The Good Women mix this with their Wool for their outer Garments; tho', for want of Fulling, that kind of Manufacture is Open and Sleazy. Flax likewiſe thrives there extreamly, being perhaps as fine as any in the World, and I queſtion not might, with a little care, and pains, be brought to rival that of

1728 March 16 Egypt; and yet the Men are here ſo intolerable Lazy, they ſeldom take the trouble to propagate it.

The Line was this day carry'd one Mile and half and 16 Poles. The Soil continued ſoft and Miry, but fuller of Trees, eſpecially White cedars. Many of theſe too were thrown down and piled in Heaps, high enough for a good Muſcovite Fortification. The worſt of it was, the Poor Fellows began now to be troubled with Fluxes, occaſion'd by bad Water and moiſt Lodging: but chewing of Rhubarb kept that Malady within Bounds.

In the mean time the Commiſſioners decampt early in the Morning, and made a March of 25 Miles, as far as Mr. Andrew Mead's, who lives upon Nanſimand River. They were no ſooner got under the Shelter of that Hoſpitable Roof, but it began to rain hard, and continued ſo to do great part of the Night. This gave them much Pain for their Friends in the Diſmal, whoſe ſufferings ſpoilt their Taſt for the good Chear, wherewith they were entertain'd themſelves.

However, late that Evening, theſe poor Men had the Fortune to come upon another Terra-firma, which was the Luckyer for them, becauſe the Lower ground, by the rain that fell, was made a fitter Lodging for Tadpoles than men.

In our Journey we remarkt that the North Side of this great Swamp lies higher than either the Eaſt or the Weſt, nor were the approaches to it ſo full of Sunken Grounds. We paſſt by no leſs than two Quaker Meeting Houſes, one of which had an Awkward Ornament on the Weſt End of it, that ſeem'd to Ape a Steeple. I muſt own I expected no ſuch Piece of Foppery from a Sect of ſo much outſide Simplicity.

That perſuaſion prevails much in the lower end of Nanſimond county, for want of Miniſters to Pilot the People a decenter way to Heaven.

The ill Reputation of Tobacco planted in thoſe lower Pariſhes makes the Clergy unwilling to accept of them, unleſs it be ſuch

whoſe abilities are as mean as their Pay. Thus, whether the Churches be quite void or but indifferently filled, the Quakers will have an Opportunity of gaining Proſelytes. Tis a wonder no Popiſh Miſſionaries are ſent from Maryland to labour in this Neglected Vineyard, who we know have Zeal enough to traverſe Sea and Land on the Meritorious Errand of making converts. 1728 March

Nor is it leſs Strange that ſome Wolf in Sheep's cloathing arrives not from New England to lead aſtray a Flock that has no ſhepherd. People uninſtructed in any Religion are ready to embrace the firſt that offers. 'Tis natural for helpleſs man to adore his Maker in Some Form or other, and were there any exception to this Rule, I ſhould ſuſpect it to be among the Hottentots of the Cape of Good-Hope and of North Carolina.

There fell a great deal of Rain in the Night, accompany'd with a Strong Wind. The fellow-feeling we had for the poor Diſmalites, on Account of this unkind Weather, render'd the Down we laid upon uneaſy. We fancy'd them half-drown'd in their Wet Lodging, with the Trees blowing down about their Ears. Theſe Were the Gloomy Images our Fears Suggeſted; tho' twas ſo much uneaſineſs clear gain. They happen'd to come of much better, by being luckily encampt on the dry piece of Ground afore-mention'd.

They were, however, forct to keep the Sabbath in Spite of 17
their Teeth, contrary to the Diſpenſation our good Chaplain had given them. Indeed, their Short allowance of Proviſion would have juſtify'd their making the beſt of their way, without Diſtinction of days. Twas certainly a Work both of Neceſſity and Self-preſervation, to ſave themſelves from Starving. Nevertheleſs, the hard Rain had made every thing ſo thoroughly wet, that it was quite impoſſible to do any Buſineſs. They therefore made a vertue of what they could not help, and contentedly reſted in their dry Situation.

1728 March Since the Surveyors had enter'd the Diſmal, they had laid Eyes on no living Creature: neither Bird nor Beaſt, Inſect nor Reptile came in View. Doubtleſs, the Eternal Shade that broods over this mighty Bog, and hinders the ſun-beams from bleſſing the Ground, makes it an uncomfortable Habitation for any thing that has life. Not ſo much as a Zealand Frog cou'd endure ſo Aguiſh a Situation.

It had one Beauty, however, that delighted the Eye, tho' at the Expenſe of all the other Senſes: the Moiſture of the Soil preſerves a continual Verdure, and makes every Plant an Evergreen, but at the ſame time the foul Damps aſcend without ceaſing, corrupt the Air, and render it unfit for Reſpiration. Not even a Turkey-Buzzard will venture to fly over it, no more than the Italian Vultures will over the filthy Lake Avernus, or the Birds in the Holy-Land over the Salt Sea, where Sodom and Gomorrah formerly ſtood.

In theſe ſad Circumſtances, the kindeſt thing we cou'd do for our Suffering Friends was to give them a place in the Litany. Our Chaplain, for his Part, did his Office, and rubb'd us up with a Seaſonable Sermon. This was quite a new thing to our Brethren of North Carolina, who live in a climate where no clergyman can Breathe, any more than Spiders in Ireland.

For want of men in Holy Orders, both the Members of the Council and Juſtices of the Peace are empower'd by the Laws of that Country to marry all thoſe who will not take One another's Word; but for the ceremony of Chriſtening their children, they truſt that to chance. If a Parſon come in their way, they will crave a Caſt of his office, as they call it, elſe they are content their Offspring ſhould remain as Arrant Pagans as themſelves. They account it among their greateſt advantages that they are not Prieſt-ridden, not remembering that the Clergy is rarely guilty of Beſtriding ſuch as have the misfortune to be poor.

One thing may be ſaid for the Inhabitants of that Province,

that they are not troubled with any Religious Fumes, and have the leaſt Superſtition of any People living. They do not know Sunday from any other day, any more than Robinſon Cruſo did, which would give them a great Advantage were they given to be induſtrious. But they keep ſo many Sabbaths every week, that their diſregard of the Seventh Day has no manner of cruelty in it, either to Servants or Cattle. 1728 March

It was with ſome difficulty we cou'd make our People quit the good chear they met with at this Houſe, ſo it was late before we took our Departure; but to make us amends, our Landlord was ſo good as to conduct us Ten Miles on our Way, as far as the Cypreſs Swamp, which drains itſelf into the Diſmal. Eight Miles beyond that we forded the Waters of Coropeak, which tend the ſame way as do many others on that ſide. In Six Miles more we reacht the Plantation of Mr. Thomas Spight, a Grandee of N Carolina. We found the good Man upon his Crutches, being crippled with the Gout in both his Knees. Here we flatter'd ourſelves we ſhould by this time meet with good Tydings of the Surveyors, but had reckon'd, alas! without our Hoſt: on the Contrary, we were told the Diſmal was at leaſt Thirty Miles wide in that Place. However, as nobody could ſay this on his own Knowledge, we Order'd Guns to be fired and a Drum to be beaten, but receiv'd no Anſwer, unleſs it was from that prating Nymph Echo, who, like a loquacious Wife, will always have the laſt Word, and Sometimes return three for one.

It was indeed no Wonder our Signal was not heard at that time, by the People in the Diſmal, becauſe, in Truth, they had not then penetrated one Third of their way. They had that Morning fallen to work with great Vigour; and, finding the Ground better than Ordinary, drove on the Line 2 Miles and 38 poles. This was reckon'd an Herculean day's Work, and yet they would not have Stopp'd there, had not an impenetrable 18

1728 March cedar Thicket checkt their Induſtry. Our Landlord had ſeated Himſelf on the Borders of this Diſmal, for the Advantage of the Green Food His Cattle find there all Winter, and for the Rooting that Supports His Hogs. This, I own, is ſome convenience to his Purſe, for which his whole Family pay dear in their Perſons, for they are devoured by muſketas all the Summer, and have Agues every Spring and Fall, which Corrupt all the Juices of their Bodies, give them a cadaverous complexion, and beſides a lazy, creeping Habit, which they never get rid of.

19 We Ordered Several Men to Patrole on the Edge of the Diſmal, both towards the North and towards the South, and to fire Guns at proper Diſtances. This they perform'd very punctually, but cou'd hear nothing in return, nor gain any Sort of Intelligence. In the mean time whole Flocks of Women and Children flew hither to Stare at us, with as much curioſity as if we had lately Landed from Bantam or Morocco.

Some Borderers, too, had a great Mind to know where the Line wou'd come out, being for the moſt part Apprehenſive leſt their Lands Should be taken into Virginia. In that caſe they muſt have ſubmitted to ſome Sort of Order and Government; whereas, in N Carolina, every One does what ſeems beſt in his own Eyes. There were ſome good Women that brought their children to be Baptiz'd, but brought no Capons along with them to make the ſolemnity cheerful. In the mean time it was Strange that none came to be marry'd in ſuch a Multitude, if it had only been for the Novelty of having their Hands Joyn'd by one in Holy Orders. Yet ſo it was, that tho' our chaplain Chriſten'd above an Hundred, he did not marry ſo much as one Couple dureing the whole Expedition. But marriage is reckon'd a Lay contract in Carolina, as I ſaid before, and a Country Juſtice can tie the fatal Knot there, as faſt as an Arch-Biſhop.

None of our Viſiters could, however, tell us any News of the

Surveyors, nor Indeed was it poſſible any of them ſhou'd at that time, They being ſtill laboring in the Midſt of the Diſmal. 1728 March

It ſeems they were able to carry the Line this Day no further than one mile and 61 Poles, and that whole diſtance was thro' a Miry cedar Bogg, where the ground trembled under their Feet moſt frightfully. In many places too their Paſſage was retarded by a great number of fallen Trees, that lay Horſing upon one Another.

Tho' many circumſtances concurr'd to make this an unwholeſome Situation, yet the Poor men had no time to be ſick, nor can one conceive a more Calamitous Caſe than it would have been to be laid up in that uncomfortable Quagmire. Never were Patients more tractable, or willing to take Phyſick, than theſe honeſt Fellows; but it was from a Dread of laying their Bones in a Bogg that wou'd ſoon ſpew them up again. That Conſideration alſo put them upon more caution about their Lodging.

They firſt cover'd the Ground with Square Pieces of Cypreſs bark, which now, in the Spring, they cou'd eaſily Slip off the Tree for that purpoſe. On this they Spread their Bedding; but unhappily the Weight and Warmth of their Bodies made the Water riſe up betwixt the Joints of the Bark, to their great Inconvenience. Thus they lay not only moiſt, but alſo exceedingly cold, becauſe their Fires were continually going out. For no ſooner was the Traſh upon the Surface burnt away, but immediately the Fire was extinguiſht by the Moiſture of the Soil, Inſomuch that it was great part of the Centinel's Buſineſs to rekindle it again in a Freſh Place, every Quarter of an Hour. Nor cou'd they indeed do their duty better, becauſe Cold was theonly Enemy they had to Guard againſt in a miſerable Moraſs, where nothing can inhabit.

We could get no Tidings yet of our Brave Adventurers, notwithſtanding we deſpatcht men to the likelieſt Stations to en-

1728 March quire after them. They were ſtill Scuffleing in the Mire, and could not Poſſibly forward the Line this whole day more than one Mile and 64 Chains. Every Step of this Day's Work was thro' a cedar Bog, where the Trees were ſomewhat Smaller and grew more into a Thicket. It was now a great Misfortune to the Men to find their Proviſions grow leſs as their Labour grew greater; They were all forct to come to ſhort Allowance, and conſequently to work hard without filling their Bellies. Tho' this was very ſevere upon Engliſh Stomachs, yet the People were ſo far from being diſcomfited at it, that they ſtill kept up their good Humour, and merrily told a young Fellow in the Company, who lookt very Plump and Wholeſome, that he muſt expect to go firſt to Pot, if matters ſhou'd come to Extremity.

This was only ſaid by way of Jeſt, yet it made Him thoughtful in earneſt. However, for the Preſent he return'd them a very civil anſwer, letting them know that, dead or alive, he ſhou'd be glad to be uſeful to ſuch worthy good Friends. But, after all, this Humorous Saying had one very good Effect, for that younker, who before was a little enclin'd by his Conſtitution to be lazy, grew on a Sudden Extreamly Induſtrious, that ſo there might be leſs Occaſion to carbonade him for the good of his Fellow-Travellers.

While our Friends were thus embarraſſt in the Diſmal, the Commiſſioners began to ly under great uneaſineſs for them. They knew very well their Proviſions muſt by this time begin to fall Short, nor cou'd they conceive any likely means of a Supply. At this time of the Year both the Cattle and Hoggs had forſaken the Skirts of the Diſmal, invited by the Springing Graſs on the firm Land. All our hopes were that Providence wou'd cauſe ſome Wild Game to fall in their way, or elſe direct them to a wholeſome Vegetable for Subſiſtence. In Short they were haunted with ſo many Frights on this Occaſion, that they

were in truth more uneaſy than the Perſons whoſe Caſe they lamented. 1728 March

We had ſeveral Viſiters from Edenton, in the Afternoon, that came with Mr. Gale, who had prudently left us at Corotuck, to Scuffle thro' that dirty Country by our Selves. Theſe Gentlemen, having good Noſes, had ſmelt out, at 30 Miles' Diſtance, the Precious Liquor, with which the Liberality of our good Friend Mr. Mead had juſt before Supply'd us. That generous Perſon had judg'd very right, that we were now got out of the Latitude of Drink proper for men in Affliction, and therefore was ſo good as to ſend his Cart loaden with all ſorts of refreſhments, for which the Commiſſioners return'd Him their Thanks, and the Chaplain His Bleſſing.

The Surveyors and their Attendants began now in good Earneſt to be alarm'd with Apprehenſions of Famine, nor could they forbear looking with Some Sort of Appetite upon a dog that had been the faithful Companion of their Travels. 21

Their Proviſions were now near exhauſted. They had this Morning made the laſt Diſtribution, that ſo each might Huſband his ſmall Pittance as he pleaſ'd. Now it was that the freſh Colour'd Young Man began to tremble every Joint of Him, having dreamed, the Night before, that the Indians were about to Barbacue him over live coals.

The Proſpect of Famine determin'd the People, at laſt, with one conſent, to abandon the Line for the Preſent, which advanced but ſlowly, and make the beſt of their way to firm Land. Accordingly they ſat off very early, and, by the help of the Compaſs which they carried along with them, Steer'd a direct Weſtwardly Courſe. They marcht from Morning till Night, and Computed their Journey to amount to about 4 Miles, which was a great way, conſidering the difficulties of the Ground. It was all along a Cedar-Swamp, ſo dirty and perplext, that if they

1728 March had not travell'd for their Lives, they cou'd not have reacht ſo far.

On their way they eſpied a Turkey-Buzzard, that flew prodigiouſly high to get above the Noiſome Exhalations that aſcend from that filthy place.[1] This they were willing to underſtand as a good Omen, according to the Superſtition of the Ancients, who had great Faith in the Flight of Vultures. However, after all this tedious Journey, they could yet diſcover no End of their toil, which made them very penſive, eſpecially after they had eat the laſt Morſel of their Proviſions. But to their unſpeakable comfort, when all was huſht in the Evening, they heard the Cattle low, and the Dogs bark, very diſtinctly, which, to Men in that diſtreſs, was more delightful Muſic than Fauſtina or Farinelli cou'd have made. In the mean time the Commiſſioners could get no News of them from any of their Viſiters, who Aſſembled from every Point of the Compaſs.

But the good Landlord had Viſiters of another kind while we were there, that is to ſay, ſome induſtrious Maſters of Ships, that lay in Nanſimond River. Theſe worthy Commanders came to beſpeak Tobacco from theſe Parts to make up their Loadings, in Contempt of the Virginia Law, which Poſitively forbad their taking in any made in North Carolina. Nor was this Reſtraint at all unreaſonable; becauſe they have no Law in Carolina, either to mend the Quality or leſſen the quantity of Tobacco, or ſo much as to prevent the turning out of Seconds, all which caſes have been provided againſt by the Laws of Virginia.[2] Wherefore, there can be no reaſon why the Inhabitants of that Province Shou'd have the ſame Advantage of Shipping their Tobacco in our Parts, when they will by no means ſubmit to the ſame Reſtrictions that we do.

22 Our Patrole happen'd not to go far enough to the Northward

[1] Buzzards cannot ſmell.

[2] See Jones's *Virginia*, 1724, and Hening's *Statutes*.

this Morning, if they had, the People in the Diſmal might have heard the Report of their Guns. For this Reaſon they return'd without any Tydings, which threw us into a great tho' unneceſſary Perplexity. This was now the Ninth day ſince they enter'd into that inhoſpitable Swamp, and conſequently we had reaſon to believe their Proviſions were quite Spent. 1728 March

We knew they workt hard, and therefore would eat heartily, ſo long as they had wherewithal to recruit their Spirits, not imagining the Swamp ſo wide as they found it. Had we been able to gueſs where the Line wou'd come out, we wou'd have ſent men to meet them with a freſh Supply; but as we cou'd know nothing of that, and as we had neither Compaſs nor Surveyor to guide a Meſſenger on ſuch an Errand, we were unwilling to expoſe him to no Purpoſe; Therefore, all we were able to do for them, in ſo great an Extremity, was to recommend them to a Merciful Providence.

However long we might think the time, yet we were cautious of Shewing our uneaſineſs, for fear of Mortifying our Landlord. He had Done his beſt for us, and therefore we were unwilling he ſhould think us diſſatisfy'd with our Entertainment. In the midſt of our concern, we were moſt agreeably ſurpriz'd, juſt after Dinner, with the News that the Diſmalites were all Safe. Theſe bleſſed Tidings were brought to us by Mr. Swan, the Carolina-Surveyor, who came to us in a very tatter'd condition.

After very Short Salutations, we got about Him as if He had been a Hottentot, and began to Inquire into his Adventures. He gave us a Detail of their uncomfortable Voyage thro' the Diſmal, and told us, particularly, they had purſued their Journey early that Morning, encouraged by the good Omen of ſeeing the Crows fly over their Heads; that, after an Hour's march over very Rotten Ground, they, on a Sudden, began to find themſelves among tall Pines, that grew in the Water, which in many Places was Knee-deep. This Pine Swamp, into which that of

1728 March Coropeak drain'd itſelf, extended near a Mile in Breadth; and tho' it was exceedingly wet, yet it was much harder at Bottom than the reſt of the Swamp; that about Ten in the Morning, they recovered firm Land, which they embraced with as much Pleaſure as Shipwreckt Wretches do the ſhoar.

After theſe honeſt adventurers had congratulated each other's Deliverance, their firſt Inquiry was for a good Houſe, where they might Satisfy the Importunity of their Stomachs. Their good Genius directed them to Mr. Brinkley's, who dwells a little to the Southward of the Line. This Man began immediately to be very inquiſitive, but they declar'd they had no Spirits to anſwer Queſtions till after Dinner.

"But pray, Gentlemen," ſaid he, "anſwer me One Queſtion at leaſt: what ſhall we get for your Dinner?" To which they replied, "No Matter what, provided it be but Enough." He kindly ſupply'd their Wants as ſoon as poſſible, and by the Strength of that Refreſhment they made a Shift to come to us in the Evening, to tell their own Story. They all lookt very thin, and as ragged as the Gibeonite Ambaſſadors did in the days of Yore. Our Surveyors told us they had meaſur'd Ten Miles in the Diſmal, and Computed the Diſtance they had Marcht ſince to amount to about five more, So they made the whole Breadth to be 15 Miles in all.

23 It was very reaſonable that the Surveyors, and the men who had been Sharers in their Fatigue, ſhould now have a little Reſt. They were all, except one, in good Health and good heart, bleſſed be God! notwithſtanding the dreadful Hardſhips they had gone through. It was really a Pleaſure to ſee the Chearfulneſs wherewith they receiv'd the Order to prepare to re-enter the Diſmal on the Monday following, in order to continue the Line from the place where they had left off meaſuring, that ſo we might have the Exact Breadth of that Dirty Place. There were no more than two of them that cou'd be perſwaded to be

reliev'd on this Occaſion, or Suffer the other men to Share the Credit of that bold Undertaking, Neither wou'd theſe have Suffer'd it had not one of them been very lame, and the Other much Indiſpoſ'd. 1728 March

By the Deſcription the Surveyors gave of the Diſmal, we were convinc'd that nothing but the Exceeding dry Seaſon we had been bleſſ'd with cou'd have made the paſſing of it practicable. It is the Source of no leſs than five Several Rivers which diſcharge themſelves Southward into Albermarle Sound, and of two that run northerly into Virginia. From thence tis eaſy to imagine that the Soil muſt be thoroughly Soakt with Water, or elſe there muſt be plentiful Stores of it under Ground; to ſupply ſo many Rivers; eſpecially ſince there is no Lake, or any conſiderable Body of that Element to be ſeen on the Surface.[1] The Rivers that Head in it from Virginia are the South Branch of Nanſimond, and the Weſt Branch of Elizabeth; and thoſe from Carolina are North-weſt River, North River, Paſquetank, Little River, and Pequimons.

There is one remarkable part of the Diſmal, lying to the ſouth of the Line, that has few or no Trees growing on it, but contains a large Tract of tall Reeds. Theſe being green all the Year round, and waveing with every Wind, have procur'd it the Name of the Green Sea.

We are not yet acquainted with the preciſe Extent of the Diſmal, the whole haveing never been Survey'd; but it may be Computed at a Medium to be about 30 Miles long and 10 Miles broad, tho' where the line croſt it, twas compleatly 15 Miles wide. But it ſeems to grow Narrower towards the North, or at leaſt does ſo in many Places. The Exhalations that continually riſe from this vaſt Body of mire and Naſtineſs infect the Air for many Miles round, and render it very unwholeſome for the

[1] Lake Drummond.

1728 March Bordering Inhabitants. It makes them liable to Agues, Pleuriſies, and many other Diſtempers, that kill abundance of People, and make the reſt look no better than Ghoſts. It wou'd require a great Sum of Money to drain it, but the Publick Treaſure cou'd not be better beſtow'd, than to preſerve the Lives of his Majeſty's Liege People, and at the ſame time render ſo great a Tract of ſwamp very Profitable, beſides the advantage of making a Channel to tranſport by water-carriage goods from Albermarle Sound into Nanſimond and Elizabeth Rivers, in Virginia.

24 This being Sunday, we had a Numerous congregation, which flockt to our Quarters from all the adjacent Country. The News that our Surveyors were come out of the Diſmal, increaſ'd the Number very much, becauſe it wou'd give them an Opportunity of gueſſing, at leaſt, whereabouts the Line wou'd cut, whereby they might form Some Judgment whether they belong'd to Virginia or Carolina. Thoſe who had taken up Land within the Diſputed Bounds were in great pain leſt it ſhould be found to ly in Virginia; becauſe this being done contrary to an Expreſs Order of that government, the Patentees had great reaſon to fear they ſhould in that caſe have loſt their land. But their Apprehenſions were now at an end, when they underſtood that all the Territory which had been controverted was like to be left in Carolina.

In the afternoon, thoſe who were to re-enter the Diſmal were furniſht with the Neceſſary Proviſions, and Order'd to repair the Over-Night to their Landlord, Peter Brinkley's, that they might be ready to begin their Buſineſs early on Monday Morning. Mr. Irvin was excuſ'd from the Fatigue, in complement to his Lungs; but Mr. Mayo and Mr. Swan were Robuſt enough to return upon that painful Service, and, to do them Juſtice, they went with great Alacrity. The Truth was, they now

knew the worſt of it; and cou'd gueſs pretty near at the time when they might hope to return to Land again. 1729[1] March 25

The Air was chill'd this Morning with a Smart North-weſt Wind, which favour'd the Diſmalites in their Dirty March. They return'd by the Path they had made in coming out, and with great Induſtry arriv'd in the Evening at the Spot where the Line had been diſcontinued.

After ſo long and laborious a Journey, they were glad to repoſe themſelves on their couches of Cypreſs-bark, where their ſleep was as ſweet as it wou'd have been on a Bed of Finland Down.

In the mean time, we who ſtay'd behind had nothing to do, but to make the beſt obſervations we cou'd upon that Part of the Country. The Soil of our Landlord's Plantation, tho' none of the beſt, ſeem'd more fertile than any thereabouts, where the Ground is near as Sandy as the Deſarts of Affrica, and conſequently barren. The Road leading from thence to Edenton, being in diſtance about 27 Miles, lies upon a Ridge call'd Sandy-Ridge, which is ſo wretchedly Poor that it will not bring Potatoes.

The Pines in this Part of the country are of a different Species from thoſe that grow in Virginia: their bearded Leaves are much longer and their Cones much larger.[2] Each Cell contains a Seed of the Size and Figure of a black-ey'd Pea, which, Shedding in November, is very good Maſt for Hogs, and fattens them in a Short time.

The Smalleſt of theſe Pines are full of Cones, which are 8 or 9 Inches long, and each affords commonly 60 or 70 Seeds. This Kind of Maſt has the Advantage of all other, by being more conſtant, and leſs liable to be nipp't by the Froſt, or Eaten

[1] 1729 in manuſcript.

[2] See Cones.

1729 March by the Caterpillars. The Trees alſo abound more with Turpentine, and conſequently yield more Tarr, than either the Yellow or the White Pine; And for the ſame reaſon make more durable Timber for building. The Inhabitants hereabouts pick up Knots of Lightwood in Abundance, which they burn into tar, and then carry it to Norfolk or Nanſimond for a Market. The Tar made in this method is the leſs Valuable, becauſe it is ſaid to burn the Cordage, tho' it is full as good for all other uſes, as that made in Sweden and Muſcovy.

Surely there is no place in the World where the Inhabitants live with leſs Labour than in N Carolina. It approaches nearer to the Deſcription of Lubberland than any other, by the great felicity of the Climate, the eaſineſs of raiſing Proviſions, and the Slothfulneſs of the People.

Indian Corn is of ſo great increaſe, that a little Pains will Subſiſt a very large Family with Bread, and then they may have meat without any pains at all, by the Help of the Low Grounds, and the great Variety of Maſt that grows on the High-land. The Men, for their Parts, juſt like the Indians, impoſe all the Work upon the poor Women. They make their Wives riſe out of their Beds early in the Morning, at the ſame time that they lye and Snore, till the Sun has run one third of his courſe, and diſperſt all the unwholeſome Damps. Then, after Stretching and Yawning for half an Hour, they light their Pipes, and, under the Protection of a cloud of Smoak, venture out into the open Air; tho', if it happens to be never ſo little cold, they quickly return Shivering into the Chimney corner. When the Weather is mild, they ſtand leaning with both their arms upon the corn-field fence, and gravely conſider whether they had beſt go and take a Small Heat at the Hough: but generally find reaſons to put it off till another time.

Thus they loiter away their Lives, like Solomon's Sluggard,

with their Arms acroſs, and at the Winding up of the Year Scarcely have Bread to Eat. 1729 March

To ſpeak the Truth, tis a thorough Averſion to Labor that makes People file off to N Carolina, where Plenty and a Warm Sun confirm them in their Diſpoſition to Lazineſs for their whole Lives.

Since we were like to be confin'd to this place, till the People return'd out of the Diſmal, twas agreed that our Chaplain might Safely take a turn to Edenton, to preach the Goſpel to the Infidels there, and Chriſten their Children. He was accompany'd thither by Mr. Little, One of the Carolina Commiſſioners, who, to ſhew his regard for the Church, offer'd to treat Him on the Road with a Fricaſſee of Rum. They fry'd half a Dozen Raſhers of very fat Bacon in a Pint of Rum, both which being diſht up together, ſerv'd the Company at once both for meat and Drink. 26

Moſt of the Rum they get in this Country comes from New England, and is ſo bad and unwholeſome, that it is not improperly call'd "Kill-Devil." It is diſtill'd there from forreign moloſſes,[1] which, if Skilfully manag'd, yields near Gallon for Gallon. Their moloſſes comes from the ſame country, and has the name of "Long Sugar" in Carolina, I ſuppoſe from the Ropineſs of it, and Serves all the purpoſes of Sugar, both in their Eating and Drinking.

When they entertain their Friends bountifully, they fail not to ſet before them a Capacious Bowl of Bombo, ſo call'd from the Admiral of that name. This is a Compound of Rum and Water in Equal Parts, made palatable with the ſaid long Sugar. As good Humour begins to flow, and the Bowl to Ebb, they take Care to repleniſh it with Shear Rum, of which there always is a Reſerve under the Table. But ſuch Generous doings

[1] The ſpelling of the time. *Jones.*

1729 March happen only when that Balſam of life is plenty; for they have often ſuch Melancholy times, that neither Land-graves nor Caſſicks can procure one drop for their Wives, when they ly in, or are troubled with the Colick or Vapours. Very few in this Country have the Induſtry to plant Orchards, which, in a Dearth of Rum, might ſupply them with much better Liquor.

The Truth is, there is one Inconvenience that eaſily diſcourages lazy People from making This improvement: very often, in Autumn, when the Apples begin to ripen, they are viſited with Numerous Flights of paraqueets, that bite all the Fruit to Pieces in a moment, for the ſake of the Kernels. The Havock they make is Sometimes ſo great, that whole Orchards are laid waſte in Spite of all the Noiſes that can be made, or Mawkins that can be dreſſt up, to fright 'em away. Theſe Ravenous Birds viſit North Carolina only during the warm Seaſon, and ſo ſoon as the Cold begins to come on, retire back towards the Sun. They rarely Venture ſo far North as Virginia, except in a very hot Summer, when they viſit the moſt Southern Parts of it. They are very Beautiful; but like ſome other pretty Creatures, are apt to be loud and miſchievous.

27 Betwixt this and Edenton there are many thuckleberry Slaſhes, which afford a convenient Harbour for Wolves and Foxes. The firſt of theſe wild Beaſts is not ſo large and fierce as they are in other countries more Northerly. He will not attack a Man in the keeneſt of his Hunger, but run away from him, as from an Animal more miſchievous than himſelf.

The Foxes are much bolder, and will Sometimes not only make a Stand, but likewiſe aſſault any one that would balk them of their Prey. The Inhabitants hereabouts take the trouble to dig abundance of Wolf-Pits, ſo deep and perpendicular, that when a Wolf is once tempted into them, he can no more Scramble out again, than a Huſband who has taken the Leap can Scramble out of Matrimony.

Moſt of the Houſes in this Part of the Country are Log-houſes, covered with Pine or Cypreſs Shingles, 3 feet long, and one broad. They are hung upon Laths with Peggs, and their doors too turn upon Wooden Hinges, and have wooden Locks to Secure them, ſo that the Building is finiſht without Nails or other Iron-Work. They alſo ſet up their Pales without any Nails at all, and indeed more Securely than thoſe that are nail'd. There are 3 Rails mortiſed into the Poſts, the loweſt of which ſerves as a Sill with a Groove in the Middle, big enough to receive the End of the Pales: the middle Part of the Pale reſts againſt the Inſide of the Next Rail, and the Top of it is brought forward to the outſide of the uppermoſt. Such Wreathing of the Pales in and out makes them ſtand firm, and much harder to unfix than when nail'd in the Ordinary way. 1729 March

Within 3 or 4 Miles of Edenton, the Soil appears to be a little more fertile, tho' it is much cut with Slaſhes, which ſeem all to have a tendency towards the Diſmal.

This Town is Situate on the North ſide of Albermarle Sound, which is there about 5 miles over. A Dirty Slaſh runs all along the Back of it, which in the Summer is a foul annoyance, and furniſhes abundance of that Carolina plague, muſquetas. There may be 40 or 50 Houſes, moſt of them Small, and built without Expenſe. A Citizen here is counted Extravagant, if he has Ambition enough to aſpire to a Brick-chimney. Juſtice herſelf is but indifferently Lodged, the Court-Houſe having much the Air of a Common Tobacco-Houſe. I believe this is the only Metropolis in the Chriſtian or Mahometan World, where there is neither Church, Chappel, Moſque, Synagogue, or any other Place of Publick Worſhip of any Sect or Religion whatſoever.

What little Devotion there may happen to be is much more private than their vices. The People ſeem eaſy without a Miniſter, as long as they are exempted from paying Him. Some-

1729 March times the Society for propagating the Goſpel has had the Charity to ſend over Miſſionaries to this Country; but unfortunately the Prieſt has been too Lewd for the people, or, which oftener happens, they too lewd for the Prieſt. For theſe Reaſons theſe Reverend Gentlemen have always left their Flocks as arrant Heathen as they found them. Thus much however may be ſaid for the Inhabitants of Edenton, that not a Soul has the leaſt taint of Hypocriſy, or Superſtition, acting very Frankly and above-board in all their Exceſſes.

Proviſions here are extremely cheap, and extremely good, ſo that People may live plentifully at a triffleing expenſe. Nothing is dear but Law, Phyſick, and Strong Drink, which are all bad in their Kind, and the laſt they get with ſo much Difficulty, that they are never guilty of the Sin of Suffering it to Sour upon their Hands. Their Vanity generally lies not ſo much in having a handſome Dining-Room, as a Handſome Houſe of Office: in this Kind of Structure they are really extravagant.

They are rarely guilty of Flattering or making any Court to their governors, but treat them with all the Exceſſes of Freedom and Familiarity. They are of Opinion their rulers wou'd be apt to grow inſolent, if they grew Rich, and for that reaſon take care to keep them poorer, and more dependent, if poſſible, than the Saints in New England uſed to do their Governors. They have very little coin, ſo they are forced to carry on their Home-Traffick with Paper-Money. This is the only Caſh that will tarry in the Country, and for that reaſon the Diſcount goes on increaſing between that and real Money, and will do ſo to the End of the Chapter.

28 Our Time paſſt heavily in our Quarters, whe we were quite cloy'd with the Carolina Felicity of having nothing to do. It was really more inſupportable than the greateſt Fatigue, and made us even envy the Drudgery of our Friends in the Diſmal. Beſides, tho' the Men we had with us were kept in Exact Diſ-

cipline, and behav'd without Reproach, yet our Landlord began to be tired of them, fearing they would breed a Famine in his Family. 1729 March

Indeed, ſo many keen Stomachs made great Havock amongſt the Beef and Bacon, which he had laid in for his Summer Proviſion, nor cou'd he eaſily purchaſe More at that time of the Year, with the Money we paid him, becauſe the People having no certain Market ſeldom provide any more of theſe Commodities than will barely ſupply their own Occaſions. Beſides the Weather was now grown too warm to lay in a freſh Stock ſo late in the Spring. Theſe Conſiderations abated ſomewhat of that chearfulneſs with which he bidd us Welcome in the Beginning, and made him think the time quite as long as we did till the Surveyors return'd.

While we were thus all Hands uneaſy, we were comforted with the News that this Afternoon the Line was finiſht through the Diſmal. The Meſſenger told us it had been the hard work of three days to meaſure the Length of only 5 Miles, and mark the Trees as they paſt along, and by the moſt exact Survey they found the Breadth of the Diſmal in this Place to be completely 15 Miles.

How wide it may be in other Parts, we can give no Account, but believe it grows narrower towards the North; poſſibly towards Albermarle Sound it may be ſomething broader, where ſo many Rivers iſſue out of it. All we know for certain is, that from the Place where the Line enter'd the Diſmal, to where it came out, we found the Road round that Portion of it which belongs to Virginia to be about 65 Miles. How great the Diſtance may be from Each of thoſe Points, round that Part that falls within the Bounds of Carolina, we had no certain Information: tho' tis conjectur'd it cannot be ſo little as 30 Miles. At which rate the whole Circuit muſt be about an Hundred. What a Maſs of Mud and Dirt is treaſur'd up within this filthy cir-

1728 March cumference, and what a Quantity of Water muſt perpetually drain into it from the riſeing ground that Surrounds it on every Side?

Without taking the Exact level of the Diſmal, we may be ſure that it declines towards the Places where the Several Rivers take their Riſe, in order to carrying off the conſtant Supplies of Water. Were it not for ſuch Diſcharges, the whole Swamp would long Since have been converted into a Lake. On the other Side this Declenſion muſt be very gentle, elſe it would be laid perfectly dry by ſo many continual drains; Whereas, on the contrary, the Ground ſeems every where to be thoroughly drencht even in the dryeſt Seaſon of the Year.

The Surveyors concluded this day's Work with running 25 chains up into the Firm Land, where they waited farther Orders from the Commiſſioners.

29 This day the Surveyors proceeded with the Line no more than 1 Mile and 15 Chains, being Interrupted by a Mill Swamp, thro' which they made no difficulty of wading, in order to make their work more exact.

Thus, like Norway-Mice, theſe worthy Gentlemen went right forward, without Suffering themſelves to be turned out of the way by any Obſtacle whatever.

We are told by ſome Travellers, that thoſe Mice march in mighty Armies, deſtroying all the fruits of the Earth as they go along. But Something Peculiar to thoſe obſtinate little Animals is, that nothing ſtops them in their career, and if a Houſe happen to ſtand in their way, diſdaining to go an Inch about, they crawl up one ſide of it, and down the other: or if they meet with any River, or other Body of Water, they are ſo determin'd, that they ſwim directly over it, without varying one Point from their courſe for the Sake of any Safety or Convenience.

The Surveyors were alſo hinder'd ſome Time by Setting up

Poſts in the great Road, to ſhew the Bounds between the two Colonies. 1729 March

Our Chaplain return'd to us in the Evening from Edenton, in Company with the Carolina Commiſſioners. He had preacht there in the Court-Houſe, for want of a conſecrated Place, and made no leſs than 19 of Father Hennepin's Chriſtians.

By the permiſſion of the Carolina Commiſſioners, Mr. Swan was allow'd to go home, as ſoon as the Survey of the Diſmal was finiſht; He met with this Indulgence for a Reaſon that might very well have excuſt his coming at all; Namely, that he was lately marry'd.

What remain'd of the Drudgery for this Seaſon was left to Mr. Moſely, who had hitherto acted only in the capacity of a Commiſſioner. They offer'd to employ Mr. Joſeph Mayo as their Surveyor in Mr. Swan's ſtead, but He thought it not proper to accept of it, becauſe he had hitherto Acted as a Volunteer in behalf of Virginia, and did not care to change Sides, tho' it might have been to his Advantage.

The line was advanc'd this day 6 Miles and 35 chains, the Woods being pretty clear, and interrupted with no Swamp, or other wet Ground. The Land hereabout had all the Marks of Poverty, being for the moſt Part Sandy and full of Pines. This kind of Ground, tho' unfit for Ordinary Tillage, will however bring Cotton and Potatoes in Plenty, and Conſequently Food and Raiment to ſuch as are eaſily contented, and, like the Wild Iriſh, find more Pleaſure in Lazineſs than Luxury.

It alſo makes a Shift to produce Indian-corn, rather by the Felicity of the climate than by the Fertility of the Soil. They who are more Induſtrious than their Neighbours may make what Quantity of tar they pleaſe, tho' indeed they are not always ſure of a Market for it.

The Method of burning Tar in Sweden and Muſcovy Succeeds not well in this Warmer Part of the World. It ſeems they kill

1729 March the Pine-Trees, by barking them quite round at a certain Height, which in thoſe cold countreys brings down the Turpentine into the Stump in a Year's time. But experience has taught us that in warm Climates the Turpentine will not ſo eaſily deſcend, but is either fixt in the upper parts of the Tree, or fryed out by the intenſe Heat of the Sun.

Care was taken to Erect a Poſt in Every Road that our Line ran thro', with Virginia carv'd on the North-Side of it, and Carolina on the South, that the Bounds might every where appear. In the Evening the Surveyors took up their Quarters at the Houſe of one Mr. Parker, who, by the Advantage of a better Spot of Land than Ordinary, and a more induſtrious Wife, lives comfortably, and has a very neat plantation.

31 It rain'd a little this Morning, but this, happening again upon a Sunday, did not interrupt our Buſineſs. However the Surveyors made no Scruple of protracting and platting off their work upon that good day, becauſe it was rather an Amuſement than a Drudgery.

Here the Men feaſted on the fat of the Land, and believing the dirtieſt part of their work was over, had a more than Ordinary Gaiety of Heart. We chriſten'd two of our Landlord's children, which might have remained Infidels all their lives, had not we carry'd Chriſtianity home to his own Door.

The Truth of it is, our Neighbours of North Carolina are not ſo zealous as to go much out of their way to procure this benefit for their children: Otherwiſe, being ſo near Virginia, they might, without exceeding much Trouble, make a Journey to the next Clergyman, upon ſo good an Errand.

And indeed ſhould the Neighbouring Miniſters, once in two or three years, vouchſafe to take a turn among theſe Gentiles, to baptize them and their children, 'twould look a little Apoſtolical, and they might hope to be requited for it hereafter, if that be not thought too long to tarry for their Reward.

The Surveyors getting now upon better Ground, quite diſ- 1729
engag'd from Underwoods, puſht on the Line almoſt 12 Miles. April 1
They left Sommerton Chappel near 2 Miles to the Northward, ſo that there was now no Place of Publick Worſhip left in the whole Province of North Carolina.

The high Land of North Carolina was barren, and cover'd with a deep Sand; and the Low Grounds were wet and boggy, inſomuch that ſeveral of our Horſes were mir'd, and gave us frequent Opportunitys to ſhew our Horſemanſhip.

The Line cut William Spight's Plantation in two, leaving little more than his dwelling Houſe and Orchard in Virginia. Sundry other Plantations were Split in the ſame unlucky Manner, which made the Owners accountable to both Governments. Wherever we paſſed we conſtantly found the Borderers laid it to Heart if their Land was taken into Virginia: They choſe much rather to belong to Carolina, where they pay no Tribute, either to God or to Cæſar.

Another reaſon was, that the Government there is ſo Looſe, and the Laws ſo feebly executed, that, like thoſe in the Neighbourhood of Sydon formerly, every one does juſt what ſeems good in his own Eyes. If the Governor's hands have been weak in that Province, under the Authority of the Lord Proprietors, much weaker then were the hands of the Magiſtrate, who, tho' he might have had Virtue enough to endeavour to puniſh Offendors, which very rarely happen'd, yet that vertue had been quite Impotent, for want of Ability to put it in execution.

Beſides, their might have been ſome Danger, perhaps, in venturing to be ſo rigorous, for fear of undergoing the Fate of an honeſt Juſtice in Corotuck Precinct. This bold Magiſtrate, it ſeems, taking upon him to order a fellow to the Stocks, for being diſorderly in his Drink, was, for his intemperate Zeal, carry'd

1729 April thither himſelf, and narrowly eſcap'd being whippt by the Rabble into the Bargain.

This eaſy day's work carried the Line to the Banks of Somerton-Creek, that runs out of Chowan River, a little below the Mouth of Nottoway.

2 In leſs than a Mile from Somerton creek the Line was carry'd to Black-water, which is the Name of the upper Part of Chowan, running ſome Miles above the Mouth of Nottoway. It muſt be obſerv'd that Chowan, after taking a compaſs round the moſt beautiful part of North Carolina, empties itſelf into Albermarle Sound, a few Miles above Edenton. The Tide flows 7 or 8 miles higher than where the River changes its Name, and is Navigable thus high for any ſmall veſſel. Our Line interſected it exactly half a Mile to the northward of the mouth of Nottoway. However, in Obedience to his Majeſty's Command, we directed the Surveyors to come down the River as far as the Mouth of Nottoway, in order to continue our true Weſt Line from thence.

Thus we found the Mouth of Nottoway to lye no more than half a Minute farther to the Northward than Mr. Lawſon[1] had formerly done. That Gentleman's Obſervation, it ſeems, placed it in 36° 30′, and our Working made it out to be 36° 30½′—a very inconſiderable Variance.

The Surveyors croſt the River over againſt the Middle of the Mouth of Nottaway, where it was about 80 yards wide. From thence they ran the Line about half a Mile through a dirty Pocoſon, as far as an Indian Field. Here we took up our Lodging in a moiſt Situation, having the Pocoſon above mention'd on one Side of us, and a Swamp on the other.

In this Camp 3 of the Meherin Indians made us a Viſit. They told us that the Small Remains of their Nation had deſerted

[1] Lawſon's *Hiſtory of North Carolina*, in the ſame.

their Ancient Town, ſituated near the Mouth of Meherin River, 1729 April
for fear of the Cataubas, who had kill'd 14 of their People the Year before; and the few that Survived that Calamity, had taken refuge amongſt the Engliſh, on the Eaſt ſide of Chowan. Tho', if the complaint of theſe Indians were true, they are hardly uſed by our Carolina Friends. But they are the leſs to be pitied, becauſe they have ever been reputed the moſt falſe and treacherous to the Engliſh of all the Indians in the Neighbourhood.

Nor far from the Place where we lay, I obſerv'd a large Oak which had been blown up by the Roots, the Body of which was Shiver'd into perfect Strings, and was, in truth, the moſt Violent Effects of Lightning I ever ſaw.

But the moſt curious Inſtance of that dreadful meteor happen'd at York, where a man was kill'd near a Pine Tree in which the Lightening made a Hole before it Struck the Man, and left an exact Figure of the Tree upon his Breaſt, with all its Branches, to the wonder of all that beheld it, in which I ſhall be more particular hereafter.

We made another tryal of the Variation in this place, and found it ſome Minutes leſs than we had done at Coratuck-Inlet; but ſo ſmall a Difference might eaſily happen thro' ſome defect in one or other of the Obſervations, and, therefore, we alter'd not our compaſs for the Matter.

By the advantage of clear woods, the Line was extended 12 3
miles and three Quarters, as far as the Banks of Meherin. Tho' the Mouth of this River lye 15 miles below the Mouth of Nottaway, yet it winds ſo much to the Northward, that we came upon it, after running this Small Diſtance. During the firſt 7 Miles, we obſerved the Soil to be poor and Sandy; but as we approacht Meherin it grew better, tho' there it was cut to pieces by Sundry Miry Branches, which diſcharge themſelves

1729 April into that River, Several of our Horſes plunged up to the Saddle-Skirts, and were not diſengaged without Difficulty.

The latter Part of our Day's work was pretty laborious, becauſe of the unevenneſs of the way, and becauſs the low Ground of the River was full of Cypreſs-Snags, as Sharp and Dangerous to our Horſes as ſo many chevaux-de-frize. We found the whole diſtance from the Mouth of Nottaway to Meherin River, where our Line interſected it, thirteen Miles and a Quarter.

It was hardly poſſible to find a level large enough on the Banks of the River whereupon to pitch our Tent. But tho' the Situation was, on that Account, not very convenient for us, yet it was for our poor Horſes, by reaſon of the Plenty of Small Reeds on which they fed voraciouſly.

Theſe Reeds are green here all the Year round, and will keep cattle in tolerable good Plight during the Winter. But whenever the Hogs come where they are, they deſtroy them in a Short time, by ploughing up their Roots, of which, unluckily, they are very fond.

The River was in this place about as wide as the River Jordan, that is, 40 Yards, and wou'd be Navigable very high for flat Bottom-Boats and Canoes, if it were not choakt up with large Trees, brought down by every Freſh. Tho' the Banks were full 20 feet high from the Surface of the Water, yet we ſaw certain Marks of their having been Overflow'd.

Theſe Narrow Rivers that run high up into the Country are Subject to frequent Inundations, when the Waters are roll'd down with ſuch Violence as to carry all before them. The Logs that are then floated, are very fatal to the bridges built over theſe rivers, Which can hardly be contriv'd Strong enough to ſtand againſt ſo much Weight and Violence join'd together.

The Iſle of Wight County begins about 3 Miles to the Eaſt

of Meherin River, being divided from that of Nanſimond only by a Line of Markt trees. 1729 April 4

The River was here hardly fordable, tho' the Seaſon had been very dry. The Banks too were ſo Steep that our Horſes were forced to climb like Mules to get up them. Nevertheleſs we had the Luck to recover the Oppoſite Shore without Damage.

We halted for half an hour at Charles Anderſon's, who lives on the Weſtern Banks of the River, in order to chriſten one of his children. In the mean time, the Surveyors extended the Line 2 Miles and 39 chains, in which ſmall Diſtance Meherin River was ſo ſerpentine, that they croſt it 3 times.

Then we went on to Mr. Kinchin's, a Man of Figure and Authority in N Carolina, who lives about a Mile to the Southward of the Place where the Surveyors left off. By the Benefit of a little pains, and good Management, this worthy Magiſtrate lives in much Affluence.

Amongſt other Inſtances of his Induſtry, he had planted a good Orchard, which is not common in that Indolent climate; nor is it at all Strange, that ſuch improvident People, who take no thought for the Morrow, ſhou'd ſave themſelves the Trouble to make Improvements that will not pay them for ſeveral Years to come. Tho' if they cou'd truſt futurity for any thing, they certainly wou'd for Cyder, which they are ſo fond of, that they generally drink it before it has done working, leſt the Fermentation might unluckily turn it Sowr.

It is an Obſervation, which rarely fails of being true, both in Virginia and Carolina, that thoſe who take care to plant good Orchards are, in their General characters, Induſtrious People. This held good in our LANDLORD, who had many Houſes built on this Plantation, and every One kept in decent Repair. His Wife, too, was tidy, his Furniture clean, his Pewter bright, and nothing ſeem'd to be wanting to make his Home comfortable.

Mr. Kinchin made us the Compliment of his Houſe, but be-

1729 April cauſe we were willing to be as little troubleſome as poſſible, we order'd the Tent to be pitch'd in his Orchard, where the Bloſſoms of the Apple Trees contributed not a little to the ſweetneſs of our Lodging.

Becauſe the Spring was now pretty forward, and the Rattle-Snakes began to crawl out of their Winter-Quarters, and might grow dangerous, both to the Men and their Horſes, it was determin'd to proceed no farther with the Line till the Fall. Beſides, the Uncommon Fatigue the People had undergone for near 6 Weeks together, and the Inclination they all had to viſit their Reſpective Familys, made a Receſs highly reaſonable.

The Surveyors were employ'd great part of the Day, in forming a Correct and Elegant Map of the Line, from Corotuck-Inlet to the Place where they left off. On caſting up the account in the moſt accurate manner, they found the whole diſtance we had run to amount to 73 Miles and 13 chains. Of the Map they made two fair copies, which agreeing exactly, were ſubſcrib'd by the Commiſſioners of both colonies, and one of them was delivered to thoſe on the Part of Virginia, and the other to thoſe on the Part of North Carolina.

6 Thus we finiſh'd our Spring Campaign, and having taken leave of our Carolina-Friends, and agreed to meet them again the Tenth of September following, at the ſame Mr. Kinchin's, in order to continue the Line, we croſſt Meherin River near a Quarter of a Mile from the Houſe. About ten Miles from that we halted at Mr. Kindred's Plantation, where we Chriſten'd two Children.

It happen'd that ſome of Iſle of Wight militia Were exerciſing in the Adjoining Paſture, and there were Females enough attending that Martial Appearance to form a more invincible corps.

Ten miles farther we paſſed Nottoway River at Bolton's Ferry, and took up our Lodgings about three Miles from thence, at the Houſe of Richard Parker, an honeſt Planter, whoſe Labours

were rewarded with Plenty, which, in this country is the Conſtant Portion of the Induſtrious. 1729 April 7

The Next day being Sunday, we order'd Notice to be ſent to all the Neighbourhood that there wou'd be a Sermon at this Place, and an Opportunity of Chriſtening their Children. But the Likelihood of Rain got the better of their Devotion, and what perhaps, Might Still be a Stronger motive of their Curioſity. In the Morning we deſpatcht a runner to the Nottoway Town, to let the Indians know we intended them a Viſit that Evening, and our honeſt Landlord was ſo kind as to be our Pilot thither, being about 4 Miles from his Houſe.

Accordingly in the Afternoon we marcht in good Order to the Town, where the Female Scouts, ſtation'd on an Eminence for that purpoſe, had no ſooner ſpy'd us, but they gave Notice of our Approach to their Fellow-Citizens by continual Whoops and Cries, which cou'd not poſſibly have been more diſmal at the Sight of their moſt implacable Enemys.

This Signal Aſſembled all their Great Men, who receiv'd us in a Body, and conducted us into the Fort. This Fort was a Square Piece of Ground, incloſ'd with Subſtantial Puncheons, or Strong Paliſades, about ten feet high, and leaning a little outwards, to make a Scalade more difficult.

Each ſide of the Square might be about 100 Yards long, with Loop-holes at proper Diſtances, through which they may fire upon the Enemy.

Within this Incloſure we found Bark Cabanes Sufficient to lodge all their people, in Caſe they ſhould be obliged to retire thither. Theſe Cabanes are no other but Cloſe Arbours made of Saplings, arched at the top, and cover'd ſo well with Bark as to be proof againſt all Weather. The fire is made in the Middle, according to the Hibernian Faſhion, the Smoak whereof finds no other Vent but at the Door, and ſo keeps the whole family Warm, at the Expenſe both of their Eyes and Complexion.

1729 April

The Indians have no ſtanding Furniture in their Cabanes but Hurdles to repoſe their Perſons upon, which they cover with Mats or Deer-ſkins. We were conducted to the beſt Appartments in the Fort, which juſt before had been made ready for our Reception, and adorn'd with new Mats, that were ſweet and clean.

The Young Men had Painted themſelves in a Hideous Manner, not ſo much for Ornament as Terror. In that frightful Equipage they entertain'd us with Sundry War-Dances, wherein they endeavour'd to look as formidable as poſſible. The Inſtrument they danct to was an Indian-drum, that is, a large Gourd with a Skin bract tort over the Mouth of it. The Dancers all Sang to this Muſick, keeping exact Time with their feet, while their Heads and Arms were ſcrew'd into a thouſand Menacing Poſtures.

Upon this occaſion the Ladies had array'd themſelves in all their finery. They were Wrapt in their Red and Blue Match-Coats, thrown ſo Negligently about them, that their Mehogony Skins appear'd in Several Parts, like the Lacedæmonian Damſels of Old. Their Hair was breeded with white and Blue Peak, and hung gracefully in a large Roll upon their Shoulders.

This peak Conſiſts of Small Cylinders cut out of a Conque-Shell, drill'd through and Strung like Beads. It ſerves them both for Money and Jewels, the Blue being of much greater Value than the White, for the ſame reaſon that Ethiopian Miſtreſſes in France are dearer than French, becauſe they are more Scarce. The Women wear Necklaces and Bracelets of theſe precious Materials, when they have a mind to appear lovely. Tho' their complexions be a little Sad-Colour'd, yet their Shapes are very Strait and well proportion'd. Their Faces are Seldom handſome, yet they have an Air of Innocence and Baſhfulneſs, that with a little leſs dirt wou'd not fail to make them deſirable. Such Charms might have had their full Effect upon Men who

had been ſo long deprived of female converſation, but that the whole Winter's Soil was ſo cruſted on the Skins of thoſe dark Angels, that it requir'd a very Strong Appetite to approach them. The Bear's oyl, with which they anoint their Perſons all over, makes their Skins Soft, and at the Same time protects them from every Species of Vermin that uſe to be troubleſome to other uncleanly People. 1729 April

'We were unluckily ſo many, that they cou'd not well make us the Complement of Bed-fellows, according to the Indian Rules of Hoſpitality, tho' a grave Matron whiſper'd one of the Commiſſioners very civilly in the Ear, that if her Daughter had been but one year Older, ſhe ſhould have been at his Devotion.

It is by no means a loſs of Reputation among the Indians, for Damſels that are Single to have Intrigues with the Men; on the contrary, they account it an Argument of Superior Merit to be liked by a great Number of Gallants. However, like the Ladys that Game they are a little Mercenary in their Amours, and ſeldom beſtow their Favours out of Stark Love and Kindneſs. But after theſe Women have once appropriated their Charms by Marriage, they are from thenceforth faithful to their Vows, and will hardly ever be tempted by an Agreeable Gallant, or be provokt by a Brutal or even by a fumbling Huſband to go aſtray.

The little Work that is done among the Indians is done by the poor Women, while the men are quite Idle, or at moſt employ'd only in the Gentlemanly Diverſions of Hunting and Fiſhing.

In this, as well as in their Wars, they now uſe nothing but Fire-Arms, which they purchaſe of the Engliſh for Skins. Bows and Arrows are grown into diſuſe, except only amongſt their Boys. Nor is it ill Policy, but on the contrary very prudent, thus to furniſh the Indians with Fire-Arms, becauſe it makes them depend entirely upon the Engliſh, not only for their Trade, but even for their ſubſiſtence. Beſides, they were really able to

1729 April do more miſchief, while they made uſe of Arrows, of which they wou'd let Silently fly Several in a Minute with Wonderful Dexterity, whereas now they hardly ever diſcharge their Fire-locks more than once, which they inſidiouſly do from behind a Tree, and then retire as nimbly as the Dutch Horſe Uſ'd to do now and then formerly in Flanders.

We put the Indians to no expenſe, but only of a little Corn for our Horſes, for which in Gratitude we cheer'd their hearts with what Rum we had left, which they love better than they do their Wives and Children.

Tho' theſe Indians dwell among the Engliſh, and ſee in what Plenty a little Induſtry enables them to live, yet they chuſe to continue in their Stupid Idleneſs, and to Suffer all the Inconveniences of Dirt, Cold, and Want, rather than to diſturb their heads With care, or defile their Hands with labour.

The whole Number of People belonging to the Notoway Town, if you include Women and Children, amount to about 200. Theſe are the only Indians of any conſequence now remaining within the Limits of Virginia. The reſt are either removed, or dwindled to a very inconſiderable Number, either by deſtroying one another, or elſe by the Small-Pox and other Diſeaſes. Tho' nothing has been ſo fatal to them as their ungovernable Paſſion for Rum, with which, I am ſorry to ſay it, they have been but too liberally ſupply'd by the Engliſh that live near them.

And here I muſt lament the bad Succeſs Mr. Boyle's Charity has hitherto had towards converting any of theſe poor Heathens to Chriſtianity. Many children of our Neighbouring Indians have been brought up in the College of William and Mary. They have been taught to read and write, and have been carefully Inſtructed in the Principles of the Chriſtian Religion, till they came to be men. Yet after they return'd home, inſtead

of civilizeing and converting the reſt, they have immediately Relapt into Infidelity and Barbariſm themſelves. 1729 April

And ſome of them too have made the worſt uſe of the Knowledge they acquir'd among the Engliſh, by employing it againſt their Benefactors. Beſides, as they unhappily forget all the good they learn, and remember the Ill, they are apt to be more vicious and diſorderly than the reſt of their Countrymen.

I ought not to quit this Subject without doing Juſtice to the great Prudence of Colo Spotſwood in this Affair. That Gentleman was lieut Governor of Virginia when Carolina was engaged in a Bloody War with the Indians. At that critical Time it was thought expedient to keep a Watchful Eye upon our Tributary Savages, who we knew had nothing to keep them to their Duty but their Fears.

Then it was that he demanded of each Nation a Competent Number of their great Men's Children to be ſent to the College, where they ſerv'd as ſo many Hoſtages for the good Behaviour of the Reſt, and at the ſame time were themſelves principled in the Chriſtian Religion. He alſo Plac'd a School-Maſter among the Saponi Indians, at the ſalary of Fifty Pounds P Annum, to inſtruct their Children. The Perſon that undertook that Charitable work was Mr. Charles Griffin, a Man of a good Family, who by the Innocence of his Life, and the Sweetneſs of his Temper, was perfectly well qualify'd for that pious undertaking. Beſides, he had ſo much the Secret of mixing Pleaſure with inſtruction, that he had not a Scholar, who did not love him affectionately.

Such Talents muſt needs have been bleſt with a Proportionable Succeſs, had he not been unluckily remov'd to the College, by which he left the good work he had begun unfiniſht. In ſhort, all the Pains he had taken among the Infidels had no other Effect but to make them ſomething cleanlier than other Indians are.

1729 April

The Care Colo Spotſwood took to tincture the Indian Children with Chriſtianity produc'd the following Epigram, which was not publiſht during his Adminiſtration, for fear it might then have lookt like flattery.

Long has the Furious Prieſt aſſay'd in Vain,
With Sword and Faggot, Infidels to gain,
But now the Milder Soldier wiſely tryes
By Gentler Methods to unveil their Eyes.
Wonders apart, he knew 'twere vain t'engage
The fix'd Preventions of Miſguided Age.
With fairer Hopes he forms the Indian Youth
To early Manners, Probity and Truth.
The Lyon's whelp thus on the Lybian Shore
Is tam'd and Gentled by the Artful Moor,
Not the Grim Sire, inured to Blood before.

I am ſorry I can't give a Better Account of the State of the Poor Indians with reſpect to Chriſtianity, altho' a great deal of Pains has been and ſtill continues to be taken with them. For my Part, I muſt be of Opinion, as I hinted before, that there is but one way of Converting theſe poor Infidels, and reclaiming them from Barbarity, and that is, Charitably to intermarry with them, according to the Modern Policy of the moſt Chriſtian King in Canada and Louiſiana.

Had the Engliſh done this at the firſt Settlement of the Colony, the Infidelity of the Indians had been worn out at this Day, with their Dark Complexions, and the Country had ſwarm'd with People more than it does with Inſects.

It was certainly an unreaſonable Nicety, that prevented their entering into ſo good-Natur'd an Alliance. All Nations of men have the ſame Natural Dignity, and we all know that very bright Talents may be lodg'd under a very dark Skin. The principal Difference between one People and another proceeds only from the Different Opportunities of Improvement.

The Indians by no means want underſtanding, and are in

their Figure tall and well-proportion'd. Even their Copper-colour'd Complexion wou'd admit of Blanching, if not in the firſt, at the fartheſt in the Second Generation. 1728 April

I may ſafely venture to ſay, the Indian Women would have made altogether as Honeſt Wives for the firſt Planters, as the Damſels they uſ'd to purchaſe from aboard the Ships. It is Strange, therefore, that any good Chriſtian Shou'd have refuſed a wholeſome, Straight Bed-fellow, when he might have had ſo fair a Portion with her, as the Merit of ſaving her Soul.

We reſted on our clean Mats very comfortably, tho' alone, and 8
the next Morning went to the Toilet of ſome of the Indian Ladys, where, what with the Charms of their Perſons and the Smoak of their Apartments, we were almoſt blinded. They offer'd to give us Silk-Graſs Baſkets of their own making, which we Modeſtly refuſed, knowing that an Indian preſent, like that of a Nun, is a Liberality put out to Intereſt, and a Bribe plac'd to the greateſt Advantage.

Our Chaplain obſerv'd with concern, that the Ruffles of Some of our Fellow Travellers were a little diſcolour'd with pochoon, wherewith the good Man had been told thoſe Ladies uſ'd to improve their inviſible charms.

About 10 a Clock we marched out of Town in good order, & the War Captains ſaluted us with a Volley of Small-Arms. From thence we proceeded over Black-water Bridge to colo' Henry Harriſons, where we congratulated each other upon our Return into Chriſtendom.

Thus ended our Progreſs for this Seaſon, which we may juſtly ſay was attended with all the Succeſs that could be expected. Beſides the Punctual Performance of what was Committed to us, we had the Pleaſure to bring back every one of our Company in perfect Health. And this we muſt acknowledge to be a Singular Bleſſing, conſidering the Difficulties and Dangers to which they had been expoſ'd.

1729 Sept. We had reaſon to fear the many Waters and Sunken Grounds, thro' which We were obliged to wade, might have thrown the men into Sundry Acute diſtempers; eſpecially the Diſmal, where the Soil was ſo full of Water, and the Air ſo full of Damps, that nothing but a Dutchman cou'd live in them.

Indeed the Foundation of all our Succeſs was the Exceeding dry Seaſon. It rain'd during the whole Journey but rarely, and then, as when Herod built his Temple, only in the Night or upon the Sabbath, when it was no hinderance at all to our progreſs.

The tenth of September being thought a little too ſoon for the Commiſſioners to meet, in order to proceed on the Line, on account of Snakes, t'was agreed to put it off to the twentieth of the ſame Month, of which due Notice was ſent to the Carolina-Commiſſioners.

19 We, on the part of Virginia, that we might be ſure to be punctual, arriv'd at Mr. Kinchin's, the place appointed, on the 19th, after a Journey of three days, in which nothing Remarkable happen'd.

We found three of the Carolina-Commiſſioners had taken Poſſeſſion of the Houſe, having come thither by water from Edenton. By the Great Quantity of Proviſions theſe Gentlemen brought, and the few men they had to eat them, we were afraid they intended to carry the Line to the South ſea.

They had 500lbs of bacon and dry'd Beef, and 500lbs of Biſket, and not above three or four men. The misfortune was, they forgot to provide Horſes to carry their good things, or elſe truſted to the Incertainty of hireing them here, which, conſidering the Place, was leaving too much to that Jilt, Hazard.

On our part we had taken better Care, being completely furniſht with every thing neceſſary for tranſporting our Baggage

and Proviſions. Indeed we brought no other Proviſions out with us but 1000lbs of Bread, and had Faith enough to depend on Providence for our Meat, being deſirous to huſband the publick Money as much as poſſible. 1729 Sept.

We had no leſs than 20 men, beſides the Chaplain, the Surveyors and all the Servants, to be Subſiſted upon this Bread. However, that it might hold out the better, our men had been Order'd to provide themſelves at Home with Proviſion for Ten days, in which time we judg'd we ſhould get beyond the Inhabitants, where Foreſt-Game of all ſorts was like to be plenty at that time of the Year.

This being the day appointed for our Rendezvous, great part of it was Spent in the careful fixing our Baggage and Aſſembling our Men, who were order'd to meet us here. We took care to examine their Arms, and made proof of the Powder provided for the Expedition. 20

Our Proviſion-Horſes had been hinder'd by the rain from coming up exactly at the Day; but this Delay was the leſs Diſappointment, by reaſon of the ten days' Subſiſtence the men had been directed to provide for themſelves.

Mr. Moſeley did not join us till the afternoon, nor Mr. Swan till Several Days after.

Mr. Kinchin had unadviſedly ſold the Men a little Brandy of his own making, which produced much diſorder, cauſing ſome to be too cholerick, and others too loving; Inſomuch that a Damſel, who aſſiſted in the Kitchen, had certainly Suffer'd what the Nuns call Martyrdom, had ſhe not capitulated a little too ſoon.

This outrage would have call'd for ſome ſevere Diſcipline, had ſhe not baſhfully withdrawn herſelf early in the Morning, & ſo carry'd off the Evidence.

We deſpatcht away the Surveyors without Loſs of Time, who, with all their diligence, could carry the Line no farther 21

1729 Sept. than 3 Miles and 176 Poles, by reaſon the Low-Ground was one entire Thicket. In that diſtance they croſt Meherin River the 4th time. In the mean while the Virginia-Commiſſioners thought proper to conduct their Baggage a farther way about, for the Convenience of a clearer Road.

The Carolina-Gentlemen did at length, more by Fortune than forecaſt, hire a clumſy Vehicle, ſomething like a cart, to tranſport their Effects as far as Roanoak. This wretched Machine, at firſt Setting out, met with a very rude choque, that broke a Caſe-Bottle of Cherry Brandy in ſo unlucky a Manner that not one precious Drop was ſaved. This Melancholy Beginning foreboded an unproſperous Journey, and too quick a Return, to the Perſons moſt immediately concern'd.

In our way we croſſt Fountains Creek, which runs into Meherin River, ſo call'd from the diſaſter of an unfortunate Indian Trader who had formerly been drowned in it, and, like Icarus, left his Name to that fatal ſtream. We took up our Quarters on the Plantation of John Hill, where we pitcht our Tent, with deſign to tarry till ſuch time as the Surveyors cou'd work their way to us.

22 This being Sunday, we had an Opportunity of reſting from our Labours. The expectation of ſuch a Novelty as a Sermon in theſe Parts brought together a Numerous Congregation. When the Sermon was over, our Chaplain did his part towards making Eleven of them Chriſtians.

Several of our men had Intermitting feavers, but were ſoon reſtor'd to their Health again by proper Remedies. Our chief Medicine was Dogwood Bark, which we uſed, inſtead of that of Peru, with good Succeſs. Indeed, it was given in larger Quantity, but then, to make the Patients amends, they ſwallowed much fewer Doſes.

In the afternoon our Proviſion-Horſes arrived Safe in the Camp. They had met with very heavy Rains, but, thank God, not a Single Biſket receiv'd the leaſt Damage thereby.

We were furniſht by the Neighbours with very lean Cheeſe and very fat Mutton, upon which occaſion twill not be improper to draw one concluſion, from the Evidence of North Carolina, that Sheep would thrive much better in the Woods than in Paſture Land, provided a careful Shepherd were employed to keep them from Straying, and, by the help of Dogs, to protect them alſo from the wolves. 1729 Sept.

The Surveyors came to us at Night, tho' they had not brought 23 the Line ſo far as our Camp, for which reaſon we thought it needleſs to go forward till they came up with us. They cou'd run no more than 4 Miles and 5 Poles, becauſe the Ground was every where grown up with thick Buſhes.

The Soil here appear'd to be very good, tho' much broken betwixt Fountain creek and Roanoak River. The Line croſt Meherin the 5th and laſt time, nor were our People ſorry to part with a Stream the Meanders of which had given them ſo much Trouble.

Our Hunters brought us four wild Turkeys, which at that Seaſon began to be fat and very delicious, eſpecially the Hens.

Theſe Birds ſeem to be of the Buſtard kind, and fly heavily. Some of them are exceedingly large, and weigh upwards of 40 Pounds; Nay, ſome bold Hiſtorians venture to ſay, upwards of 50. They run very faſt, ſtretching forth their Wings all the time, like the Oſtrich, by way of Sails to quicken their Speed.

They rooſt commonly upon very high Trees, Standing near ſome River or Creek, and are ſo ſtupify'd at the Sight of Fire, that if you make a Blaze in the Night near the Place where they rooſt, you may fire upon them Several times ſucceſſively, before they will dare to fly away.

Their Spurs are ſo Sharp and Strong that the Indians uſed formerly to point their Arrows with them, tho' now they point them with a Sharp white Stone. In the Spring the Turkey-

1729 Sept. Cocks begin to gobble, which is the Language wherein they make Love.

It rain'd very hard in the Night, with a violent Storm of Thunder and Lightening, which oblig'd us to trench in our Tent all round, to carry off the Water that fell upon it.

24 So ſoon as the men could dry their Blankets, we ſent out the Surveyors, who now meeting with more favourable Grounds, advanc'd the line 7 Miles and 82 Poles. However, the Commiſſioners did not think proper to decamp that day, believing they might eaſily overtake the Surveyors the next. In the mean time they ſent out ſome of their moſt expert Gunners, who brought in four more wild Turkeys.

This part of the Country being very proper for raiſing Cattle and Hogs, we obſerv'd the Inhabitants lived in great plenty without killing themſelves with Labour.

I found near our Camp ſome Plants of that kind of Rattle-Snake Root, called Star-graſs. The Leaves ſhoot out circularly, and grow Horiſontally and near the Ground. The Root is in Shape not unlike the Rattle of that Serpent, and is a Strong Antidote againſt the Bite of it. It is very bitter, and where it meets with any Poiſon, works by Violent Sweats, but where it meets with none, has no Senſible Operation but that of putting the Spirits into a great Hurry, and ſo of promoting Perſpiration.

The Rattle-ſnake has an utter Antipathy to this Plant, inſomuch that if you Smear your hands with the Juice of it, you may handle the Viper Safely. Thus much I can ſay on my own Experience, that once in July, when theſe Snakes are in their greateſt Vigour, I beſmear'd a Dog's Noſe with the Powder of this Root, and made him trample on a large Snake Several times, which, however, was ſo far from biting him, that it perfectly Sicken'd at the Dog's Approach, and turn'd its Head from him with the Utmoſt Averſion.

Our Chaplain, to Shew his Zeal, made an Excurſion of 6 Miles to chriſten 2 children, but without the leaſt regard to the good Chear at theſe Solemnities. 1729 Sept.

The Surveyors taking the Advantage of clear Woods, puſht on the Line 7 Miles and 40 Poles. In the mean time the Commiſſioners marcht with the Baggage about 12 miles, and took up their Quarters near the Banks of the Beaver Pond, (which is one Branch of Fountain's creek,) juſt by the place where the Surveyors were to finiſh their day's work. 25

In our march one of the men kill'd a Small Rattle-Snake, which had no more than two Rattles. Thoſe Vipers remain in Vigour generally till towards the End of September, or Sometimes later, if the Weather continue a little warm. On this conſideration we had provided three Several Sorts of Rattle-Snake-Root, made up into proper Doſes, and ready for immediate uſe, in caſe any one of the Men or their Horſes had been bitten.

We croſſt Fountain's Creek once more in our Journey this day, and found the Grounds very Rich, notwithſtanding they were broken and Stony.

Near the place where we encampt the county of Brunſwick is divided from *the* Iſle of Wight. Theſe Counties run quite on the back of Surry and Prince George, and are laid out in very irregular Figures.

As a Proof the Land mended hereabouts, we found the Plantations began to grow thicker by much than we had found them lower down.

We hurry'd away the Surveyors without Loſs of time, who extended the Line 10 Miles and 160 Poles, the Grounds proving dry and free from Under-woods. By the way the chain-carriers kill'd two more Rattle-Snakes, which I own was a little ungrateful, becauſe two or three of the Men had Strided over them without receiving any Hurt; tho' one of theſe Vipers had 26

1729 Sept. made bold to Strike at one of the Baggage Horſes, as he went along, but by good Luck his Teeth only grazed on the hoof, without doing him any Damage. However, theſe Accidents were, I think, ſo many Arguments that we had very good Reaſon to defer our coming out till the 20th of September.

We obſerv'd Abundance of St. Andrew's Croſs in all the Woods we paſſed thro', which is the common Remedy uſed by the Indian traders to cure their horſes when they are bitten by Rattle-Snakes.

It grows on a Strait Stem, about 18 Inches high, and bears a Yellow Flower on the Top, that has an Eye of Black in the Middle, with Several Pairs of Narrow Leaves Shooting out at right Angles from the Stalk over againſt one another.

This Antidote grows Providentially all over the Woods, and upon all Sorts of Soil, that it may be every where at hand in Caſe a Diſaſter ſhould Happen, and may be had all the hot Months while the Snakes are dangerous.

About four a'clock in the Afternoon we took up our Quarters upon Caban Branch, which alſo diſcharges itſelf into Fountain Creek. On our way we obſerved Several Meadows cloth'd with very rank-Graſs, and Branches full of tall Reeds, in which Cattle keep themſelves fat good part of the Winter. But Hogs are as injurious to both as Goats are ſaid to be to Vines, and for that Reaſon it was not lawful to Sacrifice them to Bacchus. We halted by the way to Chriſten two Children at a Spring, where their Mothers waylaid us for that good Purpoſe.

27 It was ten of the clock before the Surveyors got to work, becauſe ſome of the Horſes had ſtraggled to a great Diſtance from the Camp. Nevertheleſs, meeting with Practicable Woods, they advanct the Line 9 Miles and 104 Poles. We croſſt over Pea-Creek about four Miles from our Quarters, and, three Miles farther, Lizard-Creek, both which empty their Waters into Roanoak River.

Between theſe two Creeks a poor Man waited for us with five Children to be baptiz'd, and we halted till the Ceremony was ended. The Land ſeem'd to be very good, by the largeneſs of the Trees, tho' very Stony. We proceeded as far as Pidgeon-Rooſt-Creek, which alſo runs into Roanoak, and there Quarter'd. 1729 Sept.

We had not the pleaſure of the Company of any of the Carolina-Commiſſioners in this day's March, except Mr. Moſeley's, the reſt tarrying behind to wait the coming up of their Baggage-Cart, which they had now not ſeen nor heard (though the Wheels made a Diſmal Noiſe) for ſeveral days paſt.

Indeed it was a very difficult Undertaking to conduct a Cart thro' ſuch pathleſs and perplext Woods, and no wonder if its Motion was a little Planetary. We would have payd them the Complement of waiting for them, cou'd we have done it at any other Expenſe but that of the Publick.

In the Stony Grounds we rode over we found great Quantity of the true Ipocoacanna, which in this part of the World is call'd Indian-Phyſick. This has Several Stalks growing up from the Same Root about a Foot high, bearing a Leaf reſembling that of a Straw-Berry. It is not ſo ſtrong as that from Brazil, but has the ſame happy Effects, If taken in Somewhat a larger Doſe. It is an Excellent Vomit, and generally cures intermitting Fevers and Bloody Fluxes at once or twice taking. There is abundance of it in the upper part of the Country, where it delights moſt in a Stony Soil intermixt with black Mold.

Our Surveyors got early to work, yet cou'd forward the Line 28 but 6 miles and 121 Poles, becauſe of the uneven Grounds in the Neighbourhood of Roanoak, which they croſſt in this Day's work.

In that Place the River is 49 Poles wide, and rolls down a cryſtal Stream of very Sweet water, Inſomuch that when there comes to be a great Monarch in this Part of the World, he will

1729 Sept. cauſe all the Water for his own Table to be brought from Roanoak, as the great Kings of Perſia did theirs from the Nile and Choaſpis, becauſe the Waters of thoſe Rivers were light, and not apt to corrupt.[1]

The great Falls of Roanoak lie about 20 Miles lower, to which a Sloop of Moderate Burthen may come up. There are, beſides theſe, many Smaller Falls above, tho' none that entirely intercept the Paſſage of the River, as the great Ones do, by a Chain of Rocks for 8 Miles together.

The River forks about 36 Miles higher, and both Branches are pretty equal in Breadth where they divide, tho' the Southern, now call'd the Dan, runs up the fartheſt. That to the North runs away near North-weſt, and is call'd the Staunton, and heads not far from the Source of Appamatuck River, while the Dan ſtretches away pretty near Weſt & runs clear thro' the great Mountains.

We did not follow the Surveyors till towards Noon, being detain'd in our camp to Chriſten Several more Children. We were conducted a nearer way, by a famous Woodſman, call'd Epaphroditus Bainton. This Foreſter Spends all his time in ranging the Woods, and is ſaid to make great Havock among the Deer, and other Inhabitants of the Foreſt, not much wilder than Himſelf.

We proceeded to the Canoe-Landing on Roanoak, where we paſſt the River with the Baggage. But the Horſes were directed to a Ford about a Mile higher, call'd by the Indians Moni-ſeep, which ſignifies, in their Jargon, Shallow Water. This is the Ford where the Indian-Traders uſed to croſs with their Horſes, in their way to the Catauba Nation.

[1] The ſame Humour prevails at this day in the Kings of Denmark, who order all the Eaſt India Ships of that nation to call at the Cape of Good Hope, and take in a But of Water from a Spring on the Table Hill, and bring it to Coppenhagen, for Their Majeſty's own Drinking.

There are many Rocks in the River thereabouts, on which grows a kind of Water-Graſs, which the wild Geeſe are fond of, and reſort to it in great Numbers. 1729 Sept.

We landed on the South Side of Roanoak at a Plantation of Colo. Mumford's, where, by that Gentleman's Special Directions, we met with Sundry Refreſhments. Here we pitcht our Tent, for the benefit of the Proſpect, upon an Eminence that overlookt a broad Piece of Low Ground, very rich, tho' liable to be overflow'd.

By the way, one of our Men kill'd another Rattle-Snake, with 11 Rattles, having a large Gray Squirrel in his Maw, the head of which was already digeſted, while the Body remain'd Stil entire.

The way theſe Snakes catch their Prey is thus: They Ogle the poor little animal, till by force of the Charm he falls down Stupify'd and Senſeleſs on the Ground. In that condition the Snake approaches, and moiſtens firſt one Ear and then the Other with his Spawl, and after that the other Parts of the Head, to make all Slippery. When that is done, he draws this Member into his Mouth, and after it, by Slow Degrees, all the reſt of the Body.

This being Sunday, we had Divine Service and a Sermon, at 29 which Several of the Borderers aſſiſted, and we concluded the Duties of the Day in the Chriſtening five Children. Our Devotion being perform'd in the Open Field, like that of Mr. Whitfield's Flocks, an unfortunate Shower of Rain had almoſt diſperſt our Congregation. About four in the Afternoon the Carolina-Commiſſioners made a Shift to come up with us, whom we had left at Pidgeon-Rooſt Creek the Fryday before, waiting for their Proviſions. When their Cart came up they prudently diſcharg'd it, and rather choſe to hire two Men to carry ſome part of their Baggage. The Reſt they had been Obliged to

1729 Sept. leave behind, in the Crotch of an Old Tree, for want of proper Conveniences to tranſport it any farther.

We found in the low Ground Several Plants of the Fern Root, which is ſaid to be much the Strongeſt Antidote yet diſcover'd againſt the Poiſon of the Rattle-Snake. The Leaves of it reſemble thoſe of Fern, from whence it obtain'd its Name. Several Stalks ſhoot from the ſame Root, about 6 Inches long, that ly moſtly on the Ground. It grows in a very Rich Soil, under the Protection of Some tall Tree, that Shades it from the Meridian Beams of the Sun. The Root has a faint Spicy taſt, and is preferr'd by the Southern Indians to all other Counterpoiſons in this Country.

But there is another Sort preferr'd by the Northern Indians, that they call Seneca Rattle-Snake-Root, to which wonderful Vertues are aſcrib'd in the Cure of Pleuriſys, Feavers, Rhumatiſms, and Dropſys; beſides it being a powerfull Antidote againſt the Venom of the Rattle-Snake.

In the Evening the Meſſenger we had ſent to Chriſtanna return'd with five Saponi Indians. We cou'd not entirely rely on the Dexterity of our own Men, which induced us to ſend for ſome of the Indians. We agreed with two of the moſt expert of them, upon reaſonable Terms, to hunt for us the remaining Part of our Expedition. But one of them falling Sick ſoon after, we were content to take only the other, whoſe Hunting Name was Bear-ſkin.

This Indian, either by his Skill or good Luck, Supply'd us plentifully all the way with Meat, Seldom diſcharging his piece in vain.

By his Aſſiſtance, therefore, we were able to keep our men to their Buſineſs, without Suffering them to Straggle about the Woods, on pretence of furniſhing us with Neceſſary Food.

30 It had rain'd all night, and made every thing ſo wet, that our Surveyors cou'd not get to their Work before Noon. They

cou'd therefore meaſure no more than four Miles and 220 Poles, which, according to the beſt information we cou'd get, was near as high as the uppermoſt Inhabitant at that time. 1729 Sept.

We croſt the Indian Trading path above-mention'd about a Mile from our Camp, and a Mile beyond that forded Haw-Tree-Creek. The Woods we paſſed thro' had all the Tokens of Sterility, except a ſmall Poiſon'd Field, on which grew no Tree bigger than a Slender Sapling. The larger Trees had been deſtroyed, either by Fire or Caterpillars, which is often the Caſe in the upland Woods, and the places where ſuch Deſolation happens are call'd Poiſon'd Fields.

We took up our Quarters upon a Branch of Great Creek, where there was tolerable good Graſs for the poor Horſes. Theſe poor Animals having now got beyond the Latitude of Corn, were obliged to Shift as well as they cou'd for themſelves.

On our way the men rouſ'd a Bear, which being the firſt we had ſeen ſince we came out, the poor Beaſt had many purſuers. Several Perſons contended for the Credit of killing Him: tho' he was ſo poor he was not worth the Powder. This was ſome Diſappointment to our Woodſmen, who commonly prefer the Fleſh of Bears to every kind of Veniſon. There is Something indeed peculiar to this Animal, namely, that its fat is very firm, and may be eaten plentifully without riſing in the Stomach. The Paw (which, when ſtript of the hair, looks like a Human Foot,) is accounted a delicious Morſel by all who are not Shockt at the ungracious Reſemblance it bears to a Human Foot.

There was a white Froſt this morning on the Ground, occaſion'd by a North-Weſt Wind, which ſtood our Friend in diſperſing all Aguiſh Damps, and making the Air wholſome at the Same time that it made it cold. Encourag'd therefore by Oct. 1

1729 Oct. the Weather, Our Surveyors got to work early, and by the Benefit of Clear Woods, and Level Ground, drove the Line 12 Miles and 12 Poles.

At a Small Diſtance from our Camp we croſt Great Creek, and about 7 Miles farther Nut-buſh Creek, ſo call'd from the many Hazle-Trees growing upon it. By good Luck Many Branches of theſe Creeks were full of Reeds, to the great comfort of our Horſes. Near five Miles from thence we encampt on a Branch that runs into Nut-Buſh Creek, where thoſe Reeds flouriſht more than Ordinary. The Land we marcht over was for the moſt part broken and Stony, and in ſome places cover'd over with Thickets almoſt impenetrable.

At Night the Surveyors, taking Advantage of a very clear Sky, made a third Tryal of the Variation, and found it Still ſomething leſs than 3 Degrees, ſo that it did not diminiſh by advancing towards the Weſt, or by approaching the Mountains, nor yet by encreaſing our diſtance from the Sea; but remain'd much the Same we had found it at Corotuck-Inlet.

One of our Indians kill'd a large Fawn, which was very welcome, tho', like Hudibras's Horſe, it had hardly fleſh Enough to cover its Bones.

In the low Grounds the Carolina Gentlemen ſhew'd us another Plant, which they ſaid was uſed in their country to cure the Bite of the Rattle-Snake. It put forth Several Leaves in figure like a Heart, and was clouded ſo like the common Aſſarabacca, that I conceived it to be of that Family.

2 So Soon as the Horſes cou'd be found, we hurry'd away the Surveyors, who advanct the line 9 Miles and 254 Poles. About 3 Miles from the Camp they croſſt a large Creek, which the Indians call'd Maſſamoni, Signifying, in their Language, Paint-Creek, becauſe of the great Quantity of Red ochre found in its banks. This in every Freſh tinges the Water juſt as the ſame Mineral did formerly, and to this day continues to tinge, the

famous River Adonis, in Phœnicia, by which there hangs a celebrated Fable. 1729 Oct.

Three Miles beyond that we paſt another Water with difficulty, call'd Yaypatſco, or Bever Creek. Thoſe induſtrious Animals had damm'd up the water ſo high, that we had much ado to get over. Tis hardly credible how much work of this kind they will do in the Space of one Night. They bite young Saplings into proper Lengths with their Fore-teeth, which are exceeding Strong and Sharp, and afterwards drag them to the Place where they intend to Stop the Water.

Then they know how to join Timber and Earth together with ſo much Skill, that their Work is able to reſiſt the moſt violent Flood that can happen. In this they are qualify'd to inſtruct their Betters, it being certain their damms will ſtand firm when the Strongeſt that are made by men will be carry'd down the Stream.

We obſerved very broad low Grounds upon this Creek, with a growth of large Trees, and all the other Signs of Fertility, but ſeem'd ſubject to be every where overflow'd in a freſh.

The certain way to catch theſe Sagacious Animals is thus: Squeeze all the Juice out of the large Pride of the Beaver, and 6 Drops out of the ſmall Pride. Powder the inward Bark of Saſſafras, and mix it with this Juice, then bait therewith a Steel Trap, and they will eagerly come to it, and be taken.

About three Miles and an half farther we came to the Banks of another creek, call'd, in the Saponi Language, Ohimpa-moni, Signifying Jumping Creek, from the frequent Jumping of Fiſh during the Spring Seaſon.

Here we encampt, and by the time the Horſes were hobbled, our Hunters brought us no leſs than a Brace and a half of Deer, which made great Plenty, and conſequently great content in our Quarters.

Some of our People had Shot a great Wild Cat, which was

1729 Oct. that fatal moment making a comfortable Meal upon a Fox-Squirrel, and an Ambitious Sportſman of our Company claim'd the merit of killing this monſter after it was dead.

The Wild-cat is as big again as any Houſehold-Cat, and much the fierceſt Inhabitant of the Woods. Whenever 'tis diſabled, it will tear its own Fleſh for madneſs. Altho' a Panther will run away from a Man, a Wild-cat will only make a Surly Retreat, now and then facing about, if he be too cloſely purſued; and will even purſue in his turn, if he obſerve the leaſt Sign of Fear or even of caution in thoſe that pretend to follow Him.

The Fleſh of this beaſt, as well as of the Panther, is as white as veal, and altogether as ſweet and delicious.

3 We got to work early this Morning, and carry'd the line 8 Miles and a 160 Poles. We forded Several Runs of Excellent Water, and afterwards traverſt a large levil of high land full of lofty Walnut, Poplar, and White Oak Trees, which are certain Proofs of a fruitful Soil. This levil was near two Miles in length, and of an unknown breadth, quite out of Danger of being overflow'd, which is a misfortune moſt of the Low Grounds are liable to in thoſe Parts. As we marcht along we ſaw many Buffalo-Tracks, and abundance of their Dung very Freſh, but could not have the pleaſure of ſeeing them. They either Smelt us out, having that ſenſe very Quick, or elſe were alarm'd at the Noiſe that ſo many People muſt neceſſarily make in marching along. At the Sight of a Man they will Snort and Grunt, cock up their ridiculous Short Tails, and tear up the Ground with a Sort of Timorous Fury.

Theſe wild Cattle hardly ever range alone, but herd together like thoſe that are tame. They are Seldom ſeen ſo far North as 40° of latitude, delighting much in canes and Reeds, which grow generally more Southerly.

We quarter'd on the Banks of a Creek that the Inhabitants call Tewahominy, or Tuſkarooda creek, becauſe one of that

Nation had been kill'd thereabouts, and his Body thrown into the Creek. 1729 Oct.

Our people had the Fortune to kill a Brace of does, one of which we preſented to the Carolina-Gentlemen, who were glad to partake of the Bounty of Providence, at the ſame time that they ſneer'd at us for depending upon it.

We hurry'd away the Surveyors about 9 this Morning, who 4 extended the Line 7 Miles and 160 Poles, notwithſtanding the Ground was *exceedingly uneaven.* At the Diſtance of five Miles we forded a Stream to which we gave the Name of Blewing creek, becauſe of the great Number of thoſe Fowls that then frequented it.

About 2½ Miles beyond that, we came upon Sugar-Tree-Creek, ſo call'd from the many Trees of that kind that grow upon it. By tapping this Tree, in the firſt Warm weather in February, One may get from 20 to 40 Gallons of Liquor, very ſweet to the taſt and agreeable to the Stomach. This may be boil'd into moloſſes firſt, and afterwards into very good Sugar, allowing about 10 Gallons of the Liquor to make a Pound. There's no doubt, too, that a very fine Spirit may be diſtill'd from the moloſſes, at leaſt as good as Rum. The Sugar Tree delights only in Rich Ground, where it grows very tall, and by the Softneſs and Spunginеſs of the Wood ſhou'd be a quick Grower.

Near this Creek we diſcovered likewiſe Several Spice-Trees, the Leaves of which are fragrant, and the Berries they bear are black when dry, and of a hot taſt, not much unlike Pepper.

The low Grounds upon the creek are very wide, ſometimes on one Side, Sometimes on the Other; tho' moſt commonly upon the Oppoſite Shore the high-land advances cloſe to the Bank, only on the North-Side of the Line it ſpreads itſelf into a great Breadth of rich low Ground on both ſides the Creek for four Miles together, as far as this Stream runs into Hico-River, whereof I ſhall preſently make mention.

1729 Oct. One of our Men Spy'd three Buffaloes, but his Piece being loaded only with Gooſe-ſhot, he was able to make no effectual Impreſſion on their thick hides; however, this Diſappointment was made up by a Brace of Bucks, and as many Wild Turkeys, kill'd by the reſt of the company.

Thus Providence was very Bountiful to our Endeavours, never diſappointing thoſe that faithfully rely upon it, and pray heartily for their Daily Bread.

5 This day we met with ſuch uneven Grounds, and thick Underwoods, that with all our Induſtry we were able to advance the Line but 4 Miles and 312 Poles. In this ſmall Diſtance it interſected a large ſtream four times, which our Indian at firſt miſtook for the South Branch of Roanoke River; but, diſcovering his Error ſoon after, he aſſured us 'twas a River called Hicootomony, or Turkey-Buzzard River, from the great Number of thoſe unſavoury Birds that rooſt on the tall Trees growing near its banks.

Early in the Afternoon, to our very great ſurprize, the Commiſſioners of Carolina acquainted us with their Reſolution to return Home. This Declaration of theirs ſeem'd the more abrupt, becauſe they had not been ſo kind as to prepare us, by the leaſt Hint, of their Intention to deſert us.

We therefore let them underſtand they Appear'd to us to abandon the Buſineſs they came about with too much Precipitation, this being but the 15th day ſince we came out the laſt time. But, altho' we were to be ſo unhappy as to loſe the Aſſiſtance of their great Abilities, yet we, who were concern'd for Virginia, determin'd by the Grace of God, not to do our Work by Halves, but, all deſerted as we were like to be, ſhou'd think it our duty to puſh the Line quite to the Mountains; and if their Government ſhould refuſe to be bound by ſo much of the Line as was run without their Commiſſioners, yet at leaſt it would bind Vir-

ginia, and Stand as a Direction how far his Majeſty's Lands extend to the Southward. 1729 Oct.

In ſhort, theſe Gentlemen were poſitive, and the moſt we could agree upon was to Subſcribe plats of our work as far as we had Acted together; tho' at the ſame time we inſiſted theſe Plats ſhould be got ready by Monday Noon at fartheſt, when we on the Part of Virginia intended, if we were alive, to move forward without farther loſs of Time, the Seaſon being then too far advanct to admit of any unneceſſary or complaiſant delays.

We lay ſtill this day, being Sunday, on the Bank of Hico 6 River, and had only Prayers, our Chaplain not having Spirits enough to preach. The Gentlemen of Carolina aſſiſted not at our Publick Devotions, becauſe they were taken up all the Morning in making a formidable Proteſt againſt our Proceeding on the Line without them.

When the Divine Service was over, the Surveyors ſat about making the Plats of ſo much of the Line as we had run this laſt Campaign. Our pious Friends of Carolina aſſiſted in this work with ſome Seeming Scruple, pretending it was a Violation of the Sabbath, which we were the more Surpriz'd at, becauſe it happen'd to be the firſt Qualm of Conſcience they had ever been troubled with dureing the whole journey. They had made no Bones of Staying from Prayers to hammer out an unneceſſary Proteſt, tho' Divine Service was no Sooner over, but an unuſual Fit of Godlineſs made them fancy that finiſhing the plats, which was now matter of neceſſity, was a prophanation of the Day. However, the Expediency of loſing no time, for us who thought it our duty to finiſh what we had undertaken, made ſuch a Labour pardonnable.

In the Afternoon, Mr. Fitz William, one of the Commiſſioners for Virginia, acquainted his Collegues it was his Opinion, that by his Majeſty's Order they could not proceed farther on the Line, but in Conjunction with the Commiſſioners of Carolina;

1729 Oct. for which reaſon he intended to retire, the Next Morning, with thoſe Gentlemen.

This lookt a little odd in our Brother Commiſſioner; tho', in Juſtice to Him, as well as to our Carolina Friends, they ſtuck by us as long as our good Liquor laſted, and were ſo kind to us as to drink our good Journey to the Mountains in the laſt Bottle we had left.

7 The Duplicates of the plats cou'd not be drawn fair this day before Noon, when they were counterſign'd by the Commiſſioners of Each Government. Then thoſe of Carolina deliver'd their Proteſt, which was by this time lickt into form, and ſign'd by them all. And we have been ſo juſt to them as to ſet it down at full length in the Appendix, that their Reaſons for leaving us may appear in their full Strength.

After having thus adjuſted all our Affairs with the Carolina Commiſſioners, and kindly ſupply'd them with Bread to carry them back, which they hardly deſerv'd at our hands, we took leave both of them and our colleague, Mr. Fitzwilliam.

This Gentleman had ſtil a Stronger Reaſon for hurrying him back to Williamſburg, which was, that neither the General Court might loſe an able Judge, nor himſelf a double Salary, not deſpairing in the leaſt but he ſhou'd have the whole pay of Commiſſioner into the Bargain, tho' he did not half the Work. This, to be ſure, was relying more on the Intereſt of his Friends than on the Juſtice of his cauſe; in which, however, he had the misfortune to miſcarry, when it came to be fairly conſidered.

It was two a clock in the Afternoon before theſe arduous Affairs could be deſpatcht, and then, all forſaken as we were, we held on our courſe towards the Weſt. But it was our misfortune to meet with ſo many Thickets in this Afternoon's Work, that we cou'd advance no further than 2 Miles and 260 Poles.

In this ſmall Diſtance we croſſt the Hico the fifth time, and

Quarter'd near Buffalo-Creek, ſo nam'd from the frequent Tokens we diſcover'd of that American Behemoth. 1729 Oct.

Here the Buſhes were ſo intolerably thick, that we were oblig'd to cover the Bread Baggs with our Deer Skins, otherwiſe the Joke of one of the Indians muſt have happen'd to us in good Earneſt, that in a few days We muſt cut up our Houſe to make Bags for the Bread, and ſo be forct to expoſe our Backs in compliment to our Bellys.

We computed we had then Biſquet enough left to laſt us, with good Management, Seven Weeks longer; And this being our chief Dependence, it imported us to be very careful both in the Carriage and the Diſtribution of it.

We had no other Drink but what Adam drank in Paradiſe, tho' to our comfort we found the Water excellent, by the Help of which we perceiv'd our Appetites to Mend, our Slumbers to Sweeten, the Stream of Life to run cool and peaceably in our Veins, and if ever we dreamt of Women, they were kind.

Our men kill'd a very fat Buck and Several Turkeys. Theſe two kinds of Meat boil'd together, with the Addition of a little Rice or French Barley, made excellent Soupe, and, what happens rarely in Other good things, it never cloy'd, no more than an Engaging Wife wou'd do, by being a Conſtant Diſh.

Our Indian was very Superſtitious in this Matter, and told us, with a face full of concern, that if we continued to boil Veniſon and Turkey together, we Shou'd for the future kill nothing, becauſe the Spirit that preſided over the Woods would drive all the Game out of our Sight. But we had the Happineſs to find this an Idle Superſtition, and tho' his Argument could not convince us, yet our repeated Experience at laſt, with much ado, convinc'd Him.

We obſerv'd abundance of Colt's foot and Maiden-hair in many Places, and no where a larger Quantity than here. They

1729 Oct. are both Excellent Pectoral Plants, and ſeem to have greater Vertues much in this part of the World than in more Northern climates; and I believe it may paſs for a Rule in Botanicks, that where any Vegetable is planted by the hand of Nature, it has more Vertue than in Places whereto it is tranſplanted by the Curioſity of Man.

8 Notwithſtanding we hurry'd away the Surveyors very early, yet the Underwoods embarraſſ'd them ſo much that they cou'd with Difficulty advance the Line 4 Miles and 20 Poles.

Our Cloaths Suffer'd extreamely by the Buſhes, and it was really as much as both our hands could do to preſerve our Eyes in our Heads. Our poor Horſes, too, could hardly drag their Loads thro' the Saplings, which ſtood ſo cloſe together that it was neceſſary for them to draw and carry at the ſame time.

We quarter'd near a Spring of very fine Water, Soft as oyl and as cold as Ice, to make us amends for the want of Wine. And our Indian knockt down a very fat Doe, juſt time enough to hinder us from going Supperleſs to Bed.

The heavy Baggage cou'd not come up with us, becauſe of the Exceſſive badneſs of the Ways. This gave us no Small uneaſineſs, but it went worſe with the poor men that guarded it. They had nothing in the World with them but dry Bread, nor durſt they eat any of that, for fear of inflaming their Thirſt, in a Place where they could find no Water to quench it.

This was, however, the better to be endured, becauſe it was the firſt Faſt any one had kept dureing the whole Journey, and then, Thanks to the gracious Guardian of the Woods! there was no more than a Single Meal loſt to a few of the Company.

We were entertain'd this Night with the Yell of a whole Family of Wolves, in which we cou'd diſtinguiſh the Treble, Tenor and Baſs, very clearly. Theſe Beaſts of Prey kept pretty much upon our Track, being tempted by the Garbage of

the Creatures we kill'd every day ; for which we were Serenaded with their Shrill Pipes almoſt every Night. This Beaſt is not ſo untameable as the Panther, but the Indians know how to gentle their Whelps, and uſe them about their cabans inſtead of Dogs. 1729 Oct.

The Thickets were hereabouts ſo impenetrable, that we were obliged, at firſt ſetting off this Morning, to order four Pioneers to clear the way before the Surveyors. But after about 2 Miles of theſe rough-woods, we had the Pleaſure to meet with Open Grounds and not very uneven, by the help of which we were enabled to puſh the Line about 6 Miles. 9

The Baggage that lay Short of our camp laſt Night came up about Noon, and the Men made heavy Complaints, that they had been half Starv'd, like Tantalus, in the midſt of plenty, for the Reaſon above mention'd.

The Soil we paſt over this Day was generally very good, being cloath'd with large Trees, of Poplar, Hiccory, and Oak. But another certain Token of its Fertility was, that wild Angelica grew plentifully upon it.

The Root of this Plant, being very warm and Aromatick, is coveted by Woodſmen extremely as a dry Dram, that is, when Rum, that cordial for all Diſtreſſes, is wanting.

Several Deer came into our View as we marcht along, but none into the Pot, which made it neceſſary for us to ſup on the Fragments we had been ſo provident as to carry along with us. This being but a temperate Repaſt, made ſome of our hungry Fellows call the Place we lodg'd at that Night, Bread and Water Camp.

A great Flock of Cranes flew over our Quarters, that were exceeding Clamorous in their Flight. They ſeem to ſteer their Courſe towards the South (being Birds of Paſſage) in Queſt of Warmer Weather. They only took this Country in their way,

1729 Oct. being as rarely met with, in this part of the World, as a High-wayman or a Beggar.

Theſe Birds travel generally in Flocks, and when they rooſt they place Sentinels upon ſome of the higheſt Trees, which conſtantly ſtand upon one leg to keep themſelves waking.[1]

Our Indian kill'd nothing all day but a Mountain Patridge, which a little reſembled the common Partridge in the Plumage, but was near as large as a Dunghill Hen. Theſe are very frequent towards the Mountains, tho' we had the fortune to meet with very few. They are apt to be Shy, and conſequently the Noiſe of ſo great a Number of People might eaſily Scare them away from our Sight.

We found what we conceiv'd to be Good Limeſtone in ſeveral Places, and a great Quantity of Blue Slate.

10 The day began very fortunately by killing a Fat Doe, and Two Brace of wild Turkeys; ſo the Plenty of the Morning made amends for the Short Commons over Night. One of the new men we brought out with us the laſt time was unfortunately heard to wiſh himſelf at Home, and for that Shew of Impatience was publickly reprimanded at the Head of the men, who were all drawn up to witneſs his Diſgrace.

He was aſkt how he came ſo ſoon to be tired of the Company of ſo many brave Fellows, and whether it was the Danger or

[1] Nor are theſe Birds the only Animals that appoint Scouts to keep the main Body from being ſurpriz'd. For the Baboons, whenever they go upon any miſchievous Expedition, ſuch as robbing an Orchard, they place centinels to look out towards every Point of the Compaſs, and give notice of any danger. Then ranking themſelves in one File, that reaches from the mountain where they harbour, to the Orchard they intend to rob, ſome of them toſs the Fruits from the Trees to thoſe that ſtand neareſt, theſe throw them to the next, and ſo from one to tother, til the fruit is all ſecured in a few Minutes out of Harm's way. In the mean time, if any of the Scouts ſhould be careleſs at their Poſts & Suffer any Surprize, they are torn to pieces without Mercy. In caſe of danger theſe centinels Set up a fearful cry, upon which the reſt take the alarm, and Scour away to the Mountains as faſt as they can.

the Fatigue of the Journey that diſhearten'd Him? This publick Reproof from thenceforward put an effectual Stop to all complaints, and not a man amongſt us after that pretended ſo much as to wiſh himſelf in Paradiſe. 1729 Oct.

A Small Diſtance from our Camp we croſſt a pleaſant Stream of Water call'd Cocquade Creek, and ſomething more than a Mile from thence our Line interſected the South Branch of Roanoak River the firſt time, which we call'd the Dan. It was about 200 Yards wide where we forded it, and when we came over to the Weſt Side, we found the Banks lin'd with a Foreſt of Tall canes, that grew more than a furlong in depth. So that it coſt us abundance of time and Labour to cut a Paſſage thro' them wide enough for our Baggage.

In the mean time we had leizure to take a full view of this charming River. The Stream, which was perfectly clear, ran down about two Knots, or two Miles, an Hour, when the water was at the loweſt. The Bottom was cover'd with a coarſe Gravel, Spangled very thick with a Shining Subſtance, that almoſt dazzled the eye, and the Sand upon either Shore Sparkled with the ſame Splendid Particles.

At firſt Sight, the Sun-Beams giving a Yellow caſt to theſe Spangles made us fancy them to be Gold-Duſt, and conſequently that all our Fortunes were made. Such Hopes as theſe were the leſs extravagant, becauſe ſeveral Rivers lying much about the Same Latitude with this have formerly abounded with Fragments of that tempting Metal. Witneſs the Tagus in Portugal, the Heber in Thrace, and the Pactolus in Leſſer Aſia; Not to mention the Rivers on the Gold Coaſt in Africa, which ly in a more Southern Climate.

But we ſoon found our Selves miſtaken, and our Gold Duſt dwindled into ſmall Flakes of iſingglaſs. However, tho' this did not make the River ſo rich as we cou'd wiſh, yet it made it exceedingly Beautiful.

1729 Oct. We marcht about two Miles and a half beyond this River, as far as Cane Creek, ſo call'd from a Prodigious Quantity of tall canes that fring'd the Banks of it.

On the Weſt ſide of this Creek we markt out our Quarters, and were glad to find our Horſes fond of the canes, tho' they Scowred them ſmartly at firſt, and diſcolor'd their Dung. This beautiful Vegetable grows commonly from 12 to 16 feet High, and ſome of them as thick as a Man's wriſt.

Tho' theſe appear'd large to us, yet they are no more than Spires of Graſs, if compar'd to thoſe which ſome curious Travellers tell us grow in the Eaſt Indies, one Joint of which will make a Brace of Canoes, if ſaw'd in two in the Middle. Ours continue green thro' all the Seaſons during the Space of Six Years, and the Seventh ſhed their Seed, wither away and Die. The Spring following they begin to Shoot again, and reach their former Stature the Second or third Year after.

They grow ſo thick, and their Roots lace together ſo firmly, that they are the beſt Guard that can be of the River-Bank, which wou'd otherwiſe be waſht away by the frequent Inundations that happen in this part of the World.

They would alſo ſerve excellently well to plant on the Borders of Fiſh-Ponds and Canals, to ſecure their ſides from falling in; tho' I fear they would not grow kindly in a cold Country, being ſeldom ſeen here ſo Northerly as 38 Degrees of Latitude.

11 At the Diſtance of 4 Miles and 60 Poles from the Place where we encampt, we came upon the River Dan a Second time; tho' It was not ſo wide in this Place as where we croſſt it firſt, being not above a 150 yards over.

The Weſt Shore continued to be cover'd with the Canes above mention'd, but not to ſo great a Breadth as before, and 'tis Remarkable that theſe canes are much more frequent on the Weſt Side of the River than on the Eaſt, where they grow generally very ſcattering.

It was Still a beautiful Stream, rolling down its limpid and murmuring waters among the Rocks, which lay ſcatter'd here and there, to make up the variety of the Proſpect. 1729 Oct.

It was about two Miles from this River to the End of our Day's Work, which led us moſtly over Broken Grounds and troubleſome Underwoods. Hereabout, from one of the Higheſt hills, we made the firſt Diſcovery of the Mountains, on the North-weſt of our *courſe. They ſeem'd to lye off* at a vaſt Diſtance, and lookt like Ranges of Blue clouds riſing one above another.

We encampt about two Miles beyond the River, where we made good chear upon a very fat Buck, that luckily fell in our way. The Indian likewiſe Shot a Wild Turkey, but confeſſt he wou'd not bring it us, leſt we ſhou'd continue to provoke the Guardian of the Forreſt, by cooking the Beaſts of the Field and the Birds of the Air together in one veſſel.

This Inſtance of Indian Superſtition, I confeſs, is countenanced in ſome meaſure by the Levitical Law, which forbad the mixing of things of a Different Nature together in the Same field, or in the Same Garment, and why not then in the ſame Kettle?

But, after all, if the Jumbleing of two Sorts of Fleſh together be a Sin, how intolerable an Offence muſt it be to make a Spaniſh Ole, that is, a Hotchpotch of every kind of thing that is eatable? And the good People of England wou'd have a great deal to anſwer for, for beating up ſo many different Ingredients into a Pudding.

We were ſo cruelly intangled with Buſhes and Grape-Vines all day, that we could advance the Line no farther than 5 Miles and 28 Poles. 12

The Vines grow very thick in theſe Woods, twineing lovingly round the Trees almoſt every where, eſpecially to the Saplings. *This makes it* evident how Natural both the Soil and Climate

1729 Oct. of this Country are to Vines, tho' I believe moſt to our own Vines.

The Grapes we commonly met with were black, tho' there be two or three kinds of White Grapes that grow wild. The Black are very Sweet, but Small, becauſe the Strength of the Vine ſpends itſelf in Wood; tho' without Queſtion a proper Culture would make the ſame Grapes both larger and Sweeter. But, with all theſe Diſadvantages, I have Drunk tolerable good Wine preſt from them, tho' made without Skill. There is then good Reaſon to believe it might Admit of great Improvement, if rightly managed.

Our Indian kill'd a Bear, of two years old, that was feaſting on theſe Grapes. He was very fat, as they generally are in that ſeaſon of the year. In the fall, the Fleſh of this Animal has a high Reliſh, different from that of other Creatures, tho' inclining neareſt to that of Pork, or rather of Wild Boar.

A true Woodſman prefers this Sort of meat to that of the fatteſt Veniſon, not only for the *Haut-gout*, but alſo becauſe the Fat of it is well taſted, and never riſes in the ſtomach. Another proof of the goodneſs of this meat is, that it is leſs apt to corrupt than any other we are acquainted with. As agreeable as ſuch rich Diet was to the men, yet we who were not accuſtom'd to it, taſted it at firſt with ſome ſort of Squeamiſhneſs, that Animal being of the Dog-kind; tho' a little Uſe ſoon reconcil'd us to this American Veniſon. And that its being of the Dog kind might give us the leſs diſguſt, we had the Example of that Ancient and polite People, the Chineſe, who reckon Dog's Fleſh too good for any under the Quality of a mandarin.

This Beaſt is in truth a very clean Feeder, living, while the Seaſon laſts, upon Acorns, Cheſnuts and Chinkapins, Wild-Hony and Wild-Grapes. They are naturally not carniverous, unleſs Hunger conſtrain them to it, after the Maſt is all gone, and the Products of the Woods quite exhauſted.

They are not provident enough to lay up any Hoard, like the Squirrels, nor can they, after all, live very long upon licking their Paws, as Sr John Mandevil and ſome Travellers tell us, but are forct in the Winter Months to quit the Mountains, and viſit the Inhabitants. 1729 Oct.

Their Errand is then to Surpriſe a poor Hog at a Pinch to keep them from Starving. And to ſhew that they are not Fleſh-Eaters by Trade, they devour their Prey very awkwardly.

They don't kill it right out, and feaſt upon its Blood and Entrails, like other ravenous Beaſts, but having, after a fair purſuit, ſeiz'd it with their Paws, they begin firſt upon the Rump, and ſo devour one collop after another, till they come to the Vitals, the poor Animal crying all the while, for ſeveral Minutes together. However, in ſo doing, Bruin acts a little imprudently, becauſe the diſmal outcry of the Hog alarms the Neighbourhood, and 'tis odds but he pays the forfeit with his Life, before he can Secure his Retreat.

But Bears ſoon grow weary of this unnatural Diet, and about January, when there is nothing to be got in the Woods, they retire into ſome cave or hollow Tree, where they Sleep away two or three Months very comfortably. But then they quit their Holes in March, when the Fiſh begin to run up the Rivers, on which they are forct to keep Lent, till ſome Fruit or Berry comes in Seaſon.

But Bears are fondeſt of cheſnuts, which grow plentifully towards the Mountains, upon very large Trees, where the Soil happens to be rich. We were curious to know how it happen'd that many of the outward Branches of thoſe Trees came to be brok off in that Solitary Place, and were inform'd that the Bears are ſo diſcreet as not to truſt their unwieldy Bodies on the Smaller Limbs of the Tree, that would not bear their weight; but after venturing as far as is ſafe, which they can judge to an Inch, they bite off the End of the Branch, which falling down, they are

1729 Oct. content to finiſh their Repaſt upon the Ground. In the ſame Cautious Manner they ſecure the Acorns that grow on the weaker Limbs of the Oak. And it muſt be allow'd that, in theſe Inſtances, a Bear carries Inſtinct a great way, and Acts more reaſonably than many of his Betters, who indiſcreetly Venture upon frail Projects that wont bear them.

13 This being Sunday, we reſted from our Fatigue, and had leiſure to reflect on the ſignal Mercies of Providence.

The great Plenty of Meat wherewith Bearſkin furniſht us in theſe lonely Woods made us once more Shorten the men's allowance of Bread, from 5 to 4 Pounds of biſket a week. This was the more neceſſary, becauſe we knew not yet how long our Buſineſs might require us to be out.

In the Afternoon our Hunters went forth, and return'd triumphantly with three brace of wild Turkeys. They told us they cou'd ſee the Mountains diſtinctly from every Eminence, tho' the Atmoſphere was ſo thick with Smoak that they appear'd at a greater Diſtance than they really were.

In the Evening we examin'd our Friend Bearſkin, concerning the Religion of his Country, and he explain'd it to us, without any of that Reſerve to which his Nation is Subject.

He told us he believ'd there was one Supreme God, who had Several Subaltern Deities under Him. And that this Maſter-God made the World a long time ago. That he told the Sun, the Moon, and Stars, their Buſineſs in the Beginning, which they, with good looking after, have faithfully perform'd ever Since.

That the ſame Power that made all things at firſt has taken care to keep them in the ſame Method and Motion ever ſince.

He believ'd God had form'd many Worlds before he form'd this, but that thoſe Worlds either grew old and ruinous, or were deſtroyed for the Diſhoneſty of the Inhabitants.

That God is very juſt and very good—ever well pleaſ'd with thoſe men who poſſeſs thoſe God-like Qualities. That he takes good People into his ſafe Protection, makes them very rich, fills their Bellies plentifully, preſerves them from ſickneſs, and from being ſurpriz'd or Overcome by their Enemies. 1729 Oct.

But all ſuch as tell Lies, and Cheat thoſe they have Dealings with, he never fails to puniſh with Sickneſs, Poverty and Hunger, and, after all that, Suffers them to be knockt on the Head and ſcalpt by thoſe that fight againſt them.

He believ'd that after Death both good and bad People are conducted by a ſtrong Guard into a great Road, in which departed Souls travel together for ſome time, till at a certain Diſtance this Road forks into two Paths, the one extremely Levil, and the other Stony and Mountainous.

Here the good are parted from the Bad by a flaſh of Lightening, the firſt being hurry'd away to the Right, the other to the Left. The Right hand Road leads to a charming warm Country, where the Spring is everlaſting, and every Month is May; and as the year is always in its Youth, ſo are the People, and particularly the Women are bright as Stars, and never Scold.

That in this happy Climate there are Deer, Turkeys, Elks, and Buffaloes innumerable, perpetually fat and gentle, while the Trees are loaded with delicious Fruit quite throughout the four Seaſons.

That the Soil brings forth Corn Spontaneouſly, without the Curſe of Labour, and ſo very wholeſome, that None who have the happineſs to eat of it are ever Sick, grow old, or dy.

Near the Entrance into this Bleſſed Land Sits a Venerable Old Man on a Mat richly woven, who examins Strictly all that are brought before Him, and if they have behav'd well, the Guards are order'd to open the Cryſtal Gate, and let them enter into the Land of Delights.

1729 Oct. The left Hand Path is very rugged and uneaven, leading to a dark and barren Country, where it is always Winter. The Ground is the whole year round cover'd with Snow, and nothing is to be ſeen upon the Trees but Icicles.

All the People are hungry, yet have not a Morſel of any thing to eat, except a bitter kind of Potato, that gives them the Dry-Gripes, and fills their whole Body with loathſome Ulcers, that Stink, and are inſupportably painfull.

Here all the Women are old and ugly, having Claws like a Panther, with which they fly upon the Men that Slight their Paſſion. For it ſeems theſe haggard old Furies are intolerably fond, and expect a vaſt deal of Cheriſhing. They talk much, and exceedingly Shrill, giving exquiſite Pain to the Drum of the Ear, which in that Place of the Torment is ſo tender, that every Sharp Note wounds it to the Quick.

At the End of this Path ſits a dreadful Old Woman on a monſtrous Toad-Stool, whoſe head is cover'd with Rattle-Snakes inſtead of Treſſes, with glaring white Eyes, that ſtrike a Terror unſpeakable into all that behold her.

This Hag pronounces Sentence of Woe upon all the miſerable Wretches that hold up their hands at her Tribunal. After this they are deliver'd over to huge Turkey-Buzzards, like harpys, that fly away with them to the Place above mentioned.

Here, after they have been tormented a certain Number of years, according to their ſeveral Degrees of Guilt, they are again driven back into this World, to try if they will mend their Manners, and merit a place the next time in the Regions of Bliſs.

This was the Subſtance of Bearſkin's Religion, and was as much to the purpoſe as cou'd be expected from a meer State of Nature, without one Glimps of Revelation or Philoſophy.

It contain'd, however, the three Great Articles of Natural Religion: The Belief of a God; The Moral Diſtinction betwixt Good and Evil; and the Expectation of Rewards and Puniſhments in Another World. 1729 Oct.

Indeed, the Indian Notion of a Future Happineſs is a little Groſs and Senſual, like Mahomet's Paradiſe. But how can it be otherwiſe, in a People that are contented with Nature as they find Her, and have no other Lights but what they receive from purblind Tradition?

There having been great Signs of Rain yeſterday Evening, 14 we had taken our Precautions in Securing the Bread, and trenching in our Tent.

The men had alſo Stretcht their Blankets upon Poles, Penthouſe faſhion, againſt the Weather, ſo that nobody was taken unprepar'd.

It began to fall heavily about three a'clock in the Morning, and held not up till near Noon. Every thing was ſo thoroughly Soakt, that we laid aſide all thoughts of decamping that Day.

This gave leizure to the moſt expert of our Gunners to go and try their Fortunes, and they ſucceeded ſo well, that they return'd about Noon with three fat Deer, and 4 wild Turkeys. Thus Providence took care of us, and however ſhort the Men might be in their Bread, 'tis certain they had Meat at full Allowance.

The Cookery went on merrily all Night long, to keep the Damps from entering our Pores; and in truth the Impreſſions of the Air are much more powerfull upon empty Stomachs.

In ſuch a Glut of Proviſions, a true Woodſman, when he has nothing elſe to do, like our honeſt countrymen the Indians, keeps eating on, to avoid the imputation of Idleneſs; Though, in a Scarcity, the Indian will faſt with a much better Grace than they. They can Subſiſt Several days upon a little Rockahominy, which is parcht Indian Corn reduc'd to powder. This they

1729 Oct. moiſten in the hollow of their Hands with a little water, and 'tis hardly credible how ſmall a Quantity of it will Support them. Tis true they grow a little lank upon it, but to make themſelves feel full, they gird up their Loins very tight with a Belt, taking up a Hole every day. With this Slender Subſiſtence they are able to travel very long Journeys; but then, to make themſelves Amends, when they do meet with better Chear, they eat without ceaſing, till they have raven'd themſelves into another Famine.

This was the firſt time we had ever been detain'd a whole day in our camp by the Rain, and therefore had Reaſon to bear it with the more patience.

As I ſat in the Tent I overheard a learn'd converſation between one of our men and the Indian. He aſk't the Engliſhman what it was that made that rumbling noiſe when it thunder'd?

The man told him merrily, that the God of the Engliſh was firing his great Guns upon the God of the Indians, which made all the roaring in the clouds, and that the Lightening was only the Flaſh of thoſe Guns.

The Indian carrying on the Humour reply'd very gravely, He believed that might be the caſe indeed, and that the Rain which follow'd upon the Thunder muſt be occaſion'd by the Indian God's being ſo ſcar'd he could not hold his Water.

The few good Huſbands amongſt us took ſome thought of their Backs as well as their Bellies, and made uſe of this Opportunity to put their Habiliments in repair, which had Suffer'd wofully by the Buſhes.

The Horſes got ſome reſt, by reaſon of the bad weather, but very little Food, the chief of their Forage being a little wild Roſemary, which reſembles the Garden Roſemary pretty much in Figure, but not at all in taſte or ſmell. This Plant grows in ſmall Tufts here and there on the Barren Land in theſe upper

Parts, and the Horſes liked it well, but the misfortune was, they cou'd not get enough of it to fill their Bellies. 1729 Oct.

After the Clouds brake away in the Morning, the People dryed their Blankets with all diligence. Nevertheleſs, it was Noon before we were in condition to move forward, and then were ſo puzzled with paſſing the river twice in a Small Diſtance, that we could advance the Line in all no farther than One Single Mile and 300 Poles. 15

The firſt time we paſt the Dan this day was 240 Poles from the Place where we lay, and the Second time was one Mile and Seven Poles beyond that. This was now the fourth time we forded that fine River, which ſtill tended weſterly, with many Short and returning Reaches.

The Surveyors had much Difficulty in getting over the River, finding it deeper than formerly. The Breadth of it here did not exceed fifty Yards. The Banks were about 20 feet high from the Water, and beautifully beſet with canes.

Our Baggage Horſes croſt not the River here at all, but, fetching a compaſs, went round the Bent of it. On our Way we forded Sable-Creek, ſo call'd from the Dark Colour of the Water, which happen'd, I ſuppoſe, by its being Shaded on both Sides with canes.

In the Evening we quarter'd in a Charming Situation near the angle of the River, from whence our Eyes were carried down both Reaches, which kept a Straight Courſe for a great way together.

This Proſpect was ſo beautiful, that we were perpetually climbing up to a Neighbouring eminence, that we might enjoy it in more Perfection.

Now the Weather grew cool, the Wild Geeſe began to direct their Flight this way from Hudſon's Bay, and the Lakes that lay North-weſt of us.

They are very lean at their firſt coming, but fatten ſoon upon

1729 Oct. a Sort of Graſs that grows on the Shores and Rocks of this River.

The Indians call this Fowl Cohunks, from the hoarſe Note it has, and begin the year from the Coming of the Cohunks, which happens in the Beginning of October.

Theſe Wild Geeſe are guarded from cold by a Down, that is exquiſitely ſoft and fine, which makes them much more valuable for their Feathers than for their Fleſh, which is dark and coarſe.

The Men chaſt a Bear into the River that got ſafe over, notwithſtanding the continual fire from the Shore upon Him. He Seem'd to Swim but heavily, conſidering it was for his Life.

Where the Water is Shallow, 'tis no Uncommon thing to ſee a Bear ſitting, in the Summer time, on a heap of Gravel in the Middle of the River, not only to cool himſelf, but likewiſe for the Advantage of Fiſhing, particularly for a ſmall Shell-fiſh, that is brought down with the Stream.

In the upper part of James River I have obſerved this Several times, and wonder'd very much, at firſt, how ſo many heaps of ſmall Stones came to be piled up in the Water, till at laſt we ſpy'd a Bear Sitting upon one of them, looking with great attention on the Stream, and rakeing up Something with his Paw, which I take to be the Shell-fiſh above mention'd.

16 It was Ten a'clock this Morning before the Horſes cou'd be found, having hidden themſelves among the canes, whereof there was great plenty juſt at hand. Not far from our camp we went over a Brook, whoſe Banks were edg'd on both Sides with theſe canes. But three Miles further we forded a larger Stream, which we call'd Low Land Creek, by reaſon of the great Breadth of Low Grounds incloſ'd between that and the River.

The high Land we travell'd over was very good, and the low Grounds promiſ'd the greateſt Fertility of any I had ever ſeen.

At the End of 4 Miles and 311 Poles from where we lay, the Line interſected the Dan the fifth time. We had day enough

to carry it farther, but the Surveyors cou'd find no Safe ford over the River. 1729 Oct.

This obliged us to ride two Miles up the River in queſt of a Ford, and by the way we traverſt Several Small Indian Fields, where we conjectur'd the SAWRO'S had been uſed to plant Corn, the Town where they had liv'd lying Seven or Eight Miles more Southerly, upon the Eaſtern Side of the River.

Theſe Indian Fields produc'd a Sweet kind of Graſs, Almoſt knee-high, which was excellent Forage for the Horſes.

It muſt be obſerv'd, by the way, that Indian Towns, like Religious Houſes, are remarkabler for a fruitful Situation; for being by Nature not very Induſtrious, they chooſe ſuch a Situation as will Subſiſt them with the leaſt Labour.

The Trees grew Surpriſeingly large in this low-Ground, and amongſt the reſt we obſerv'd a tall kind of hiccory, peculiar to the Upper Parts of the Country. It is cover'd with a very rough Bark, and produces a Nut with a thick Shell that is eaſily broken. The Kernel is not ſo rank as that of the Common Hiccory, but altogether as oily.

And now I am upon the Subject of theſe Nuts, it may not be improper to remark, that a very great benefit might be made of Nut-Oyl in this Colony. The Walnuts, the Hiccory-Nuts, and Pig-nuts, contain a vaſt deal of Oyl, that might be preſſ'd out in great abundance with proper Machines.

The Trees grow very kindly, and may be eaſily propagated. They bear plenty of Nuts every year, that are now of no other uſe in the World but to feed Hogs. 'Tis certain there is a large Conſumption of this Oyl in Several of our Manufactures, and in ſome parts of France, as well as in other Countries, it is eaten inſtead of Oyl-Olive, being tolerably Sweet and wholeſome.

The Indian kill'd a fat Buck, and the men brought in four Bears and a Brace of wild Turkeys, ſo that this was truly a Land of Plenty, both for man and Beaſt.

1729 Oct. 17 We detacht a Party of men this morning early in Search of a Ford, who after all cou'd find None that was ſafe; tho' dangerous as it was, we determin'd to make uſe of it, to avoid all further delay. Accordingly we rode over a Narrow Ledge of Rocks, Some of which lay below the Surface of the Water, and ſome above it.

Thoſe that lay under the Water were as Slippery as Ice; and the Current glided over them ſo ſwiftly, that tho' it was only Water, it made us perfectly drunk. Yet we were all ſo fortunate as to get ſafe over to the Weſt Shore, with no other Damage than the Sopping ſome of our Bread by the flounceing of the Horſes.

The tedious time Spent in finding out this Ford, and in getting all the Horſes over it, prevented our carrying the Line more than 2 Miles and 250 Poles.

This was the laſt time we croſt the Dan with our Line, which now began to run away more Southerly, with a very fluſh and plentifull Stream, the Deſcription whereof muſt be left to future Diſcoveries, tho' we are well aſſured by the Indians that it runs thro' the Mountains.

We conducted the Baggage a roundabout way for the Benefit of evener Grounds, and this carry'd us over a broad Levil of exceeding rich Land, full of large Trees, with Vines marry'd to them, if I may be allow'd to ſpeak ſo Poetically.

We untreed a young Cub in our March, that made a brave Stand againſt one of the beſt of our Dogs. This and a Fawn were all the Game that came in our way.

In this day's Journey, as in many others before, we ſaw beautiful Marble of Several Colours, and particularly that of the Purple kind with white Streaks, and in ſome places we came acroſs large pieces of pure Alabaſter.

We markt out our Quarters on the Banks of a purling Stream, which we call'd Caſquade Creek, by reaſon of the Mul

titude of Water-Falls that are in it. But, different from all other Falls that ever I met with, the Rocks over which the water roll'd were Soft, and would Split eaſily into broad Flakes, very proper for Pavement; and ſome Fragments of it ſeem'd ſoft enough for Hones, and the Grain fine enough. 1729 Oct.

Near our Camp we found a prickly Shrub, riſeing about a foot from the Ground, ſomething like that which bears the Barberry, tho' much Smaller. The Leaves had a freſh, agreeable Smell, and I am perſwaded the Ladies would be apt to fancy a Tea made of them, provided they were told how far it came, and at the Same time were obliged to buy it very dear.

About a Mile to the South-weſt of our Camp roſe a regular Mount, that commanded a full Proſpect of the Mountains, and an Extenſive View of the Flat Country. But being, with reſpect to the high Mountains, no more than a Pimple, we call'd it by that Name.

Preſently after Sunſet we diſcovered a great Light towards the Weſt, too bright for a fire, and more reſembling the Aurora Borealis. This, all our Woodſmen told us, was a Common Appearance in the High Lands, and generally foreboded bad Weather. Their Explanation happen'd to be exactly true, for in the Night we had a Violent Gale of Wind, accompany'd with Smart Hail, that rattled frightfully amongſt the Trees, tho' it was not large enough to do us any Harm.

We croſt Caſquade Creek over a Ledge of Smooth Rocks, and then Scuffled thro' a mighty Thicket, at leaſt three Miles long. The whole was one continued Tract of rich high Land, the woods whereof had been burnt not long before. It was then overgrown with Saplings of Oak, Hiccory and Locuſt, interlac'd with Grape Vines. In this fine Land, however, we met with no Water, till at the End of three Miles we luckily came upon a Chryſtal Stream, which, like ſome Lovers of Con-

1729 Oct. verſation, diſcover'd every thing committed to its faithleſs Boſom.

Then we came upon a piece of Rich Low Ground, covered with large Trees, of the extent of half a Mile, which made us fancy ourſelves not far from the River; tho' after that we aſcended gently to higher Land, with no other Trees growing upon it except Butter-wood, which is one Species of White Maple.

This being a dead Levil, without the leaſt Declivity to carry off the Water, was moiſt in many Places, and produc'd abundance of Graſs. All our Woodſmen call theſe flat Grounds High-Land-Ponds, and in their Trading Journeys are glad to halt at ſuch Places for Several days together, to recruit their Jaded Horſes, eſpecially in the Winter Months, when there is little or no Graſs to be found in other Places.

This High-Land-Pond extended above two Miles, our Palfry's Snatching greedily at the Tufts of Graſs, as they went along. After we got over this Level, we deſcended ſome Stony Hills for about half a Mile, and then came upon a large Branch of the River, which we chriſten'd the Irvin, in honour of our learned Profeſſor. This River we forded with much Difficulty and ſome Danger, by reaſon of the Hollow-Spaces betwixt the Rocks, into which our Horſes plunged almoſt every Step.

The Irvin runs into the Dan about four miles to the Southward of the Line, and ſeem'd to roll down its Waters from the N.N.W. in a very full and Limpid ſtream, and the Murmur it made, in tumbling over the Rocks, cauſ'd the Situation to appear very Romantick, and had almoſt made ſome of the Company Poetical, tho' they drank nothing but Water.

We encampt on a pleaſant Hill, overlooking the River, which ſeem'd to be deep every where except juſt where we forded. In the mean time, neither that Chain of Rocks, nor any

other that we cou'd obſerve in this Stream, was ſo uninterrupted, but that there were Several Breaks where a Canoe, or even a Moderate Flat-bottom'd Boat, might Shear clear. Nor have we reaſon to believe there are any other Falls (except the great ones, thirty Miles below Moniſeep-Ford) that reach quite acroſs, ſo as to interrupt the Navigation for Small Craft. And I have been inform'd that, even at thoſe Great Falls, the Blowing up a few Rocks wou'd open a Paſſage at leaſt for canoes, which certainly wou'd be an unſpeakable Convenience to the Inhabitants of all that beautiful Part of the Country. 1729 Oct.

The Indian kill'd a very fat Doe, and came acroſs a Bear, which had been put to Death and was half devour'd by a Panther. The laſt of theſe Brutes reigns abſolute Monarch of the Woods, and in the keenneſs of his hunger will venture to attack a Bear; tho' then 'tis ever by ſurprize, as all Beaſts of the cat kind uſe to come upon their Prey.

Their Play is to take the poor Bears napping, they being very drowſy Animals, and tho' they be exceedingly Strong, yet their Strength is heavy, while the Panthers are too Nimble and cunning to truſt themſelves within their Hugg.

As formidable as this Beaſt is to his Fellow Brutes, he never has the confidence to venture upon a Man, but retires from him with great reſpect, if there be a way open for his Eſcape. However, it muſt be confeſſt, his Voice is a little contemptible for a Monarch of the Forreſt, being not a great deal louder nor more awful than the Mewing of a Houſehold Cat.[1]

In South Carolina they call this Beaſt a Tyger, tho' impro-

[1] Some Authors, who have given an Account of the Southern Continent of America, wou'd make the World believe there are Lyons; but in all likelihood they were miſtaken, imagining theſe Panthers to be Lyons. What makes this probable is, that the Northern and Southern Parts of America being join'd by the Iſthmus of Darien, if there were Lyons in either they would find their way into the other, the Latitudes of each being equally proper for that generous animal.

1729 Oct. perly, and ſo they do in ſome parts of the Spaniſh Weſt Indies. Some of their Authors, a little more properly, complement it with the Name of a Leopard. But none of theſe are the Growth of America, that we know of.

The whole Diſtance the Surveyors advanc'd the Line this day amounted to 6 Miles and 30 Poles, which was no ſmall Journey, conſidering the Grounds we had traverſt were exceedingly rough and uneven, and in many Places intolerably entangled with Buſhes. All the Hills we aſcended were encumber'd with Stones, many of which ſeem'd to contain a Metallick Subſtance, and the Vallies we croſt were interrupted with Miry Branches. From the Top of every Hill we cou'd diſcern diſtinctly, at a great Diſtance to the Northward, three or four Ledges of Mountains, riſing one above another; and on the higheſt of all roſe a Single Mountain, very much reſembling a Woman's Breaſt.

19 About four Miles beyond the River Irvin, we forded Matrimony Creek, call'd ſo by an unfortunate marry'd man, becauſe it was exceedingly noiſy and impetuous. However, tho' the Stream was Clamorous, yet, like thoſe Women who make themſelves plaineſt heard, it was likewiſe perfectly clear and unſully'd.

Still half a Mile further we ſaw a Small Mountain, about five Miles to the North-weſt of us, which we call'd the Wart, becauſe it appear'd no bigger than a Wart, in Compariſon of the great Mountains which hid their haughty Heads in the Clouds.

We were not able to extend the Line farther than 5 Miles and 135 Poles, notwithſtanding we began our March Early in the Morning, and did not encamp till it was almoſt dark.

We made it the later by endeavouring to Quarter in ſome convenient Situation, either for Graſs or Canes. But Night

Surpriſing us, we were oblig'd to Lodge at laſt upon High and uneven Ground, which was ſo overgrown with Shrubs and Saplings, that we cou'd hardly ſee ten yards around us. 1729 Oct.

The moſt melancholy part of the Story was, that our Horſes had Short Commons. The poor Creatures were now grown ſo weak that they Stagger'd when we mounted them. Nor wou'd our own Fare have been at all more plentiful, had we not been ſo provident as to carry a Load of Meat along with us. Indeed, the Woods were too thick to ſhew us any ſort of Game but one Wild Turkey, which help'd to enrich our Soup.

To make us amends, we found abundance of very Sweet Grapes, which, with the help of Bread, might have furniſh'd out a good Italian Repaſt, in the Abſence of more Savoury Food.

The men's Mouths water'd at the Sight of a Prodigious Flight of Wild Pigeons, which flew high over our Heads to the Southward.

The Flocks of theſe Birds of Paſſage are ſo amazingly great, Sometimes, that they darken the Sky; nor is it uncommon for them to light in ſuch Numbers on the Larger Limbs of Mulberry-Trees and Oaks as to break them down.

In their Travels they make vaſt Havock amongſt the Acorns and Berries of all Sorts, that they waſt whole Forreſts in a ſhort time, and leave a Famine behind them for moſt other Creatures; and under Some Trees where they light, it is no Strange thing to find the ground cover'd three Inches thick with their Dung. Theſe Wild Pigeons commonly breed in the uninhabited parts of Canada, and as the Cold approaches aſſemble their Armies and bend their Courſe Southerly, Shifting their Quarters, like many of the Winged kind, according to the Seaſon. But the moſt remarkable thing in their Flight, as we are told, is that they never have been obſerv'd to return to the Northern Countries the ſame way they came from thence, but take quite another Rout, I ſuppoſe for their better Subſiſtence.

1729 Oct. In theſe long Flights they are very lean, and their Fleſh is far from being white or tender, tho' good enough upon a March, when Hunger is the ſauce, and makes it go down better than Truffles and Morels wou'd do.

20 It was now Sunday, which we had like to have ſpent in Faſting as well as Prayer; for our Men, taking no Care for the Morrow, like good Chriſtians, but bad Travellers, had improvidently Devour'd all their Meat for Supper.

They were order'd in the Morning to drive up their Horſes, leſt they ſhou'd ſtray too far from the Camp and be loſt, in caſe they were let alone all day. At their Return they had the very great Comfort to behold a monſtrous fat Bear, which the Indian had kill'd very Seaſonably for their Breakfaſt.

We thought it ſtill neceſſary to make another Reduction of our Bread, from four to three Pounds a Week to every man, computing that we had ſtill enough in that Proportion to laſt us Three weeks longer.

The Atmoſphere was ſo ſmoaky all round us, that the Mountains were again grown inviſible. This happen'd not from the Hazyneſs of the Sky, but from the fireing of the Woods by the Indians, for we were now near the Route the Northern Savages take when they go out to War againſt the Cataubas and other Southern Nations.

On their way the Fires they make in their camps are left burning, which, catching the dry Leaves that ly near, ſoon put the adjacent Woods into a flame.

Some of our men in Search of their Horſes diſcovered one of thoſe Indian camps, where not long before they had been Furring and dreſſing their Skins.

And now I mention the Northern Indians, it may not be improper to take Notice of their implacable Hatred to thoſe of the South. Their Wars are everlaſting, without any Peace, Enmity being the only Inheritance among them that deſcends from Fa-

ther to Son, and either Party will march a thouſand Miles to take their Revenge upon ſuch Hereditary Enemies. 1729 Oct.

Theſe long Expeditions are commonly carry'd on in the following Manner; Some Indian, remarkable for his Proweſs, that has raiſ'd himſelf to the Reputation of a War-Captain, declares his Intention of paying a Viſit to ſome ſouthern Nation; Hereupon as many of the Young Fellows as have either a Strong Thirſt of Blood or Glory, liſt themſelves under his command.

With theſe Volunteers he goes from One Confederate Town to another, lifting all the Rabble he can, til he has gather'd together a competent Number for Miſchief.

Their Arms are a Gun and Tomahawk, and all the Proviſions they carry from Home is a Pouch of Rockahominy. Thus provided and accoutr'd, they march towards their Enemy's Country, not in a Body, or by a certain Path, but Straggling in Small Numbers, for the greater convenience of Hunting and paſſing along undiſcover'd.

So ſoon as they approach the Grounds on which the Enemy is uſed to hunt, they never kindle any Fire themſelves, for fear of being found out by the ſmoak, nor will they Shoot at any kind of Game, tho' they ſhou'd be half Famiſht, leſt they might alarm their Foes, and put them upon their Guard.

Sometimes indeed, while they are ſtill at ſome diſtance, they roaſt either Veniſon or Bear, till it is very dry, and then having Strung it on their Belts, wear it round their Middle, eating very Sparingly of it, becauſe they know not when they ſhall meet with a freſh Supply. But coming nearer, they begin to look all round the Hemiſphere, to watch if any Smoke aſcends, and liſten continually for the Report of Guns, in order to make ſome happy Diſcovery for their own advantage.

It is amazing to ſee their Sagacity in diſcerning the Track of a Human Foot, even amongſt dry leaves, which to our Shorter Sight is quite undiſcoverable.

1729 Oct. If by one or more of thoſe Signs they be able to find out the Camp of any Southern Indians, they Squat down in ſome Thicket, and keep themſelves huſh and Snug till it is dark; Then creeping up Softly, they approach near enough to obſerve all the Motions of the Enemy. And about two a Clock in the Morning, when they conceive them to be in a Profound Sleep, for they never keep Watch and Ward, pour in a Volley upon them, each Singling out his Man. The Moment they have diſcharg'd their Pieces, they ruſh in with their Tomahawks, and make ſure work of all that are diſabled.

Sometimes, when they find the Enemy Aſleep around their little Fire, they firſt Pelt them with little Stones to wake them, and when they get up, fire in upon them, being in that poſture a better Mark than when proſtrate on the Ground.

Thoſe that are kill'd of the Enemy, or diſabled, they Scalp, that is, they cut the Skin all round the Head juſt below the hair, and then clapping their Feet to the poor Mortal's Shoulders, pull the Scalp off clean, and carry it home in Triumph, being as proud of thoſe Trophies, as the Jews uſed to be of the Foreſkins of the Philiſtines.

This way of Scalping was practiſed by the Ancient Scythians, who uſ'd theſe hairy Scalps as Towels at Home, and Trappings for their Horſes when they went abroad.

They alſo made Cups of their Enemies' Skulls, in which they drank Proſperity to their country, and Confuſion to all their Foes.

The Priſoners they happen to take alive in theſe expeditions generally paſs their time very Scurvily. They put them to all the Tortures that ingenious Malice and cruelty can invent. And (what ſhews the baſeneſs of the Indian Temper in Perfection) they never fail to treat thoſe with the greateſt Inhumanity that have diſtinguiſh'd themſelves moſt by their Bravery; and, if he be a War-Captain, they do him the Honour to roaſt him alive, and

diſtribute a Collop to all that had a Share in Stealing the Victory.[1] 1729 Oct.

They are very cunning in finding out new ways to torment their unhappy Captives, tho', like thoſe of Hell, their uſual Method is by Fire. Sometimes they Barbacue them over live-Coals, taking them off every now and then, to prolong their Miſery; at other times they will Stick Sharp Pieces of Light-wood all over their Body's, and ſetting them afire, let them burn down into the Fleſh to the very Bone. And when they take a Stout Fellow, that they believe able to endure a great deal, they will tear all the Fleſh off his Bones with red hot Pincers.

While theſe and ſuch like Barbarities are practiſing, the Victors are ſo far from being touch'd with Tenderneſs and Compaſſion, that they dance and Sing round theſe wretched Mortals, ſhewing all the Marks of Pleaſure and Jollity. And if ſuch cruelties happen to be executed in their Towns, they employ their Children in tormenting the Priſoners, in order to extinguiſh in them betimes all Sentiments of Humanity.

In the mean time, while theſe poor Wretches are uuder the Anguiſh of all this inhuman Treatment, they diſdain ſo much as to groan, Sigh, or ſhew the leaſt Sign of Diſmay or concern, ſo much as in their Looks; on the Contrary, they make it a Point of Honour all the time to Soften their Features, and look as pleaſ'd as if they were in the Actual Enjoyment of Some Delight; and if they never ſang before in their Lives, they will be ſure to be Melodious on this ſad and Diſmal Occaſion.

[1] Tho' who can reproach the poor Indians for this, when Homer makes his celebrated Hero, Achilles, drag the Body of Hector at the Tail of his chariot, for having fought gallantly in defence of his Country. Nor was Alexander the Great, with all his Fam'd Generoſity, leſs inhuman to the brave Tyrians, 2000 of whom he order'd to be crucify'd in cold Blood, For no other fault but for having defended their City moſt courageouſly againſt Him, dureing a Siege of Seven Months. And what was ſtill more brutal, he dragg'd alive —— at the Tail of his Chariot, thro' all the Streets, for defending the Town with ſo much Vigour.

1729 Oct. So prodigious a Degree of Paſſive Valour in the Indians is the more to be wonder'd at, becauſe in all Articles of Danger they are apt to behave like Cowards. And what is ſtill more Surprizeing, the very Women diſcover, on ſuch Occaſions, as great Fortitude and Contempt, both of Pain and Death, as the Gallanteſt of their Men can do.

21 The Apprehenſions we had of loſing the Horſes in theſe Copſe Woods were too well founded, nor were the Precautions we uſ'd Yeſterday of driveing them up Sufficient to prevent their Straying away afterwards, notwithſtanding they were ſecurely hobbled.

We therefore Order'd the men out early this Morning to look diligently for them, but it was late before any cou'd be found. It ſeems they had ſtraggled in queſt of Forrage, and, beſides all that, the Buſhes grew thick enough to conceal them from being Seen at the Smalleſt Diſtance. One of the People was ſo bewilder'd in ſearch of his Horſe, that he loſt Himſelf, being no great Foreſter.

However, becauſe we were willing to ſave time, we left two of our moſt expert Woodſmen behind to beat all the Adjacent Woods in Queſt of Him.

In the mean while the Surveyors proceeded vigouroufly on their Buſineſs, but were ſo perplext with Thickets at their firſt ſetting off, that their Progreſs was much retarded.

They were no ſooner over that Difficulty, but they were oblig'd to encounter another. The reſt of their day's-Work lay over very Sharp Hills, where the dry leaves were ſo Slippery that there was hardly any hold for their Feet. Such Rubbs as theſe prevented them from Meaſuring more than 4 Miles and 270 Poles.

Upon the Sides of theſe Hills the Soil was rich, tho' full of Stones, and the Trees reaſonably large.

The Smoak continued ſtill to Veil the Mountains from our

Sight, which made us long for Rain, or a briſk Gale of Wind, to diſperſe it. Nor was the loſs of this wild Proſpect all our concern, but we were apprehenſive leſt the Woods ſhou'd be burnt in the Courſe of our Line before us, or happen to take fire behind us, either of which wou'd effectually have Starv'd the Horſes, and made us all Foot Soldiers. But we were ſo happy, thank God! as to eſcape this Misfortune in every Part of our Progreſs. 1729 Oct.

We were exceedingly uneaſy about our loſt man, knowing he had taken no Proviſion of any kind, nor was it much Advantage towards his Support, that he had taken his Gun along with him, becauſe he had rarely been guilty of putting any thing to Death.

He had unluckily wander'd from the Camp Several Miles, and after Steering Sundry unſucceſsfull Courſes, in order to return, either to us or to the Line, was at length ſo tired he could go no Farther. In this Diſtreſs he ſat himſelf down under a Tree, to recruit his jaded Spirits, and at the ſame time indulge a few Melancholy Reflections.

Famine was the firſt Phantom that appear'd to him, and was the more frightfull, becauſe he fancy'd himſelf not quite Bear enough to Subſiſt long upon licking his Paws.

In the mean time the two Perſons we had ſent after him hunted diligently great part of the day without coming upon his Track. They fir'd their Pieces towards every Point of the Compaſs, but cou'd perceive no fireing in return. However, advancing a little farther, at laſt they made a lucky Shot, that our Straggler had the good Fortune to hear, and he returning the Salute, they ſoon found each other with no Small Satisfaction. But tho' they lighted of the man, they cou'd by no means light of his Horſe, and therefore he was oblig'd to be a Foot Soldier all the reſt of the Journey.

Our Indian ſhot a Bear ſo prodigiouſly fat, that there was no way to kill Him but by fireing in at his Ear.

1729 Oct. The fore part of the Skull of that Animal being guarded by a double Bone, is hardly penetrable, and when it is very fat, a Bullet aim'd at his Body is apt to loſe its force, before it reaches the Vitals.

This Animal is of the Dog kind, and our Indians, as well as Woodſmen, are as fond of its Fleſh as the Chineſe can be of that of the Common Hound.

22 Early in the Morning we ſent back two men to make further Search for the horſe that was Stray'd away. We were unwilling the Poor man ſhou'd Suſtain ſuch a Damage as wou'd eat out a large Part of his Pay, or that the Publick ſhou'd be at the Expenſe of reemburſing Him for it.

Theſe foreſters hunted all over the Neighbouring Woods, and took as much pains as if the Horſe had been their own Property, but all their Diligence was to no purpoſe.

The Surveyors, in the mean time, being fearful of leaving theſe men too far behind, advanc'd the Line no farther than One Mile and 230 Poles.

As we rode along we found no leſs than three Bears and a fat Doe, that our Indian, who went out before us, had thrown in our Courſe, and we were very glad to pick them up.

About a Mile from the Camp we croſt Miry Creek, So call'd becauſe Several of the Horſes were mired in its Branches. About 230 Poles beyond that, the Line interſected another River, that ſeem'd to be a Branch of the Irvin, to which we gave the Name of the Mayo, in complement to the other of our Surveyors. It was about 50 Yards wide where we forded it, being juſt below a Ledge of Rocks, which reacht acroſs the River, and made a natural caſquade.

Our Horſes cou'd hardly keep their feet over theſe Slippery Rocks, which gave Some of their Riders no ſmall Palpitation.

This River forks about a Quarter of a Mile below the Ford, and has Some Scattering Canes growing near the Mouth of it.

We pitcht our Tent on the Weſtern Banks of the Mayo, for the Pleaſure of being lull'd to Sleep by the Caſquade. Here our Hunters had leiſure to go out and try their Fortunes, and return'd loaden with Spoil. They brought in no leſs than Six Bears, exceedingly fat, ſo that the frying pan had no reſt all Night. We had now the Opportunity of trying the ſpeed of theſe lumpiſh Animals by a fair Courſe it had with the Nimbleſt of our Surveyors. 1729 Oct.

A Cubb of a year Old will run very faſt, becauſe, being upon his growth, he is never encumber'd with too much fat; but the Old ones are more Sluggiſh and unwieldy, eſpecially when Maſt is Plenty. Then their Nimbleſt Gait is only a heavy Gallop, and their Motion is ſtill Slower down hill, where they are oblig'd to Sidle very awkwardly, to keep their Lights from riſeing up into their Throat.

Theſe Beaſts always endeavour to avoid a man, except when they are wounded, or happen to be engaged in the Protection of their Cubbs.

By the force of theſe Inſtincts and that of Self-Preſervation, they will now and then throw off all Reverence for their Maker's Image. For that Reaſon, exceſs of hunger will provoke them to the ſame Deſperate Attack, for the ſupport of their Being.

A Memorable Inſtance of the laſt Caſe is ſaid to have happen'd not long ago in New England, where a Bear aſſaulted a Man juſt by his own Door, and rearing himſelf upon his Haunches, offer'd to take him lovingly into his Hug. But the Man's Wife obſerving the Danger her Huſband was in, had the courage to run behind the Bear, and thruſt her two Thumbs into his Eyes. This made Bruin quit the Man, and turn ſhort upon the Woman to take his Revenge, but She had the Preſence of mind to ſpring back with more than Female Agility, and ſo both their Lives were preſerv'd.

At the Diſtance of 62 Poles from where we lay, we croſt the 23

1729 Oct. South Branch of what we took for the Irvin, nor was it without Difficulty we got over, tho' it happen'd to be without Damage.

Great part of the way after that was Mountainous, ſo that we were no ſooner got down one Hill, but we were oblig'd to climb up another. Only for the laſt Mile of our Stage, we encounter'd a Locuſt Thicket that was level, but interlac'd terribly with Bryars and Grape Vines.

We forded a large creek, no leſs than five times, the Banks of which were ſo ſteep that we were forc'd to cut them down with a Hough.

We gave it the Name of Crooked creek, becauſe of its frequent Meanders. The Sides of it were planted with Shrub-Canes, extremely inviting to the Horſes, which were now quite jaded with clambering up ſo many Precipices, and tugging thro' ſo many diſmal Thickets, notwithſtanding which we puſht the Line this day Four Miles and 69 Poles. The men were ſo unthrifty this Morning as to bring but a Small Portion of their Abundance along with them. This was the more unlucky, becauſe we cou'd diſcover no Sort of Game the whole livelong Day. Woodſmen are certainly good Chriſtians in one reſpect, at leaſt, that they always leave the Morrow to care for itſelf; tho' for that very reaſon they ought to pray more fervently for their Dayly Bread than moſt of them remember to do.

The Mountains were ſtill conceal'd from our Eyes by a cloud of Smoak. As we went along we were alarmed at the Sight of a great Fire, which ſhewed itſelf to the Northward. This made our ſmall Corps march in cloſer Order than we uſ'd to do, leſt perchance we might be waylaid by Indians. It made us look out Sharp to ſee if we cou'd diſcover any Track or other Token of theſe inſidious Forreſters, but found none. In the mean time we came often upon the Track of Bears, which can't without ſome Skill be diſtinguiſht from that of Human Creatures, made with Naked Feet. And Indeed a Young Woodſman wou'd be

puzzled to find out the Difference, which conſiſts principally in a Bear's Paws being ſomething Smaller than a Man's foot, and in its leaving ſometimes the Mark of its Claws in the Impreſſion made upon the Ground. 1729 Oct.

The Soil where the Locuſt Thicket grew, was exceedingly rich, as it conſtantly is, where that kind of Tree is Naturally and largely produc'd.

But the Deſolation made there lately, either by Fire or Caterpillars, had been ſo general, that we could not ſee a Tree of any Bigneſs ſtanding within our Proſpect. And the Reaſon why a Fire makes ſuch a Havock in theſe lonely Parts is this.

The Woods are not there burnt every year, as they generally are amongſt the Inhabitants. But the dead Leaves and Traſh of many years are heapt up together, which being at length kindled by the Indians that happen to paſs that way, furniſh fewel for a conflagration that carries all before it.

There is a beautiful Range of Hills, as levil as a Terraſs-Walk, that overlooks the Valley through which Crooked Creek conveys its Spiral Stream.

This Terraſs runs pretty near Eaſt and Weſt, about two Miles South of the Line, and is almoſt Parallel with it.

The Horſes had been too much haraſſ'd to permit us to ride at all out of our way, for the pleaſure of any Proſpect, or the gratification of any Curioſity. This confin'd us to the Narrow Sphere of our Buſineſs, and is at the ſame time a juſt Excuſe for not animating our Story with greater Variety.

The Surveyors went out the ſooner this Morning, by reaſon the men loſt very little time in Cooking their Breakfaſt. They had made but a Spare Meal over Night, leaving nothing but the Hide of a Bear for the Morrow. Some of the keeneſt of them got up at Midnight to Cook that nice Morſel after the Indian Manner. 24

1729 Oct. They firſt Singed the Hair clean off, that none of it might Stick in their Throats; then they boil'd the Pelt into Soup, which had a Stratum of Greaſe Swimming upon it full half an Inch Thick. However, they commended this Diſh extremely; tho' I believe the Praiſes they gave it were more owing to their good Stomach than to their good Taſt.

The Line was extended 6 Miles and 300 Poles, and in that Diſtance croſſt Crooked Creek at leaſt eight times more.

We were forct to ſcuffle through a Thicket about two Miles in breadth, planted with Locuſts and hiccory Sapplings, as cloſe as they cou'd ſtand together. Amongſt theſe there was hardly a Tree of Tolerable Growth within View. It was a dead Plane of Several Miles Extent, and very fertile Soil. Beyond that the Woods were open for about three Miles, but Mountainous. All the reſt of our Day's Journey was peſter'd with Buſhes and Grape Vines, in the thickeſt of which we were obliged to take up our Quarters, near one of the Branches of Crooked creek.

This Night it was the Men's good fortune to fare very ſumptuouſly. The Indian had kill'd two large Bears, the fateſt of which he had taken napping. One of the People too Shot a Raccoon, which is alſo of the Dog-kind, and as big as a ſmall Fox, tho' its Legs are Shorter, and when fat has much a higher reliſh than either Mutton or Kid. 'Tis naturally not Carniverous, but very fond of Indian corn and Parſimons.

The fat of this Animal is reckon'd very good to aſſwage Swellings and Inflammations. Some old Maids are at the Trouble of breeding them up tame, for the pleaſure of ſeeing them play over as many Humorous Tricks as a Munkey. It climbs up ſmall Trees, like a Bear, by embraceing the Bodies of them.

Till this Night we had accuſtom'd ourſelves to go to Bed in our Night-Gowns, believing we ſhou'd thereby be better ſecur'd

from the cold: but upon tryal found we lay much warmer by Stripping to our Shirts, and Spreading our Gowns over us. 1729 Oct.

A True Woodſman, if he have no more than a Single Blanket, conſtantly pulls all off, and, lying on one part of it, draws the other over him, believing it much more refreſhing to ly ſo, than in his cloaths; and if he find himſelf not warm enough, Shifts his Lodging to Leeward of the Fire, in which Situation the ſmoak will drive over him, and effectually correct the cold Dews that wou'd otherwiſe deſcend upon his Perſon, perhaps to his great damage.

The Air clearing up this Morning, we were again agreeably 25 ſurprized with a full Proſpect of the Mountains. They diſcover'd themſelves both to the North and South of us, on either ſide, not diſtant above ten Miles, according to our beſt Computation.

We cou'd now ſee thoſe to the North riſe in four diſtinct Ledges, one above another, but thoſe to the South form'd only a Single Ledge, and that broken and interrupted in many Places; or rather they were only ſingle Mountains detacht from each other.

One of the Southern Mountains was ſo vaſtly high, it ſeem'd to hide its head in the Clouds, and the Weſt End of it terminated in a horrible Precipice, that we call'd the Deſpairing Lover's Leap. The Next to it, towards the Eaſt, was lower, except at one End, where it heav'd itſelf up in the form of a vaſt Stack of Chimnys.

The Courſe of the Northern Mountains ſeem'd to tend Weſt-South-Weſt, and thoſe to the Southward very near Weſt. We cou'd deſcry other Mountains ahead of us, exactly in the Courſe of the Line, tho' at a much greater diſtance. In this Point of View, the Ledges on the right and Left both ſeem'd to cloſe, and form a Natural Amphi-Theater.

Thus 'twas our Fortune to be wedg'd in betwixt theſe two Ranges of Mountains, inſomuch that if our Line had run ten

1729 Oct. Miles on either Side, it had butted before this day either upon one or the other, both of them now Stretching away plainly to the Eaſtward of us.

It had rain'd a little in the Night, which diſperſt the ſmoak and open'd this Romantick Scene to us all at once, tho' it was again hid from our Eyes as we mov'd forwards, by the rough Woods we had the Misfortune to be engag'd with. The Buſhes were ſo thick for near four Miles together, that they tore the Deer-Skins to Pieces that guarded the Bread-Bags. Tho', as rough as the Woods were, the Soil was extremely good all the way, being waſht down from the Neighbouring Hills into the Plane Country. Notwithſtanding all theſe Difficulties, the Surveyors drove on the line 4 Miles and 205 Poles.

In the mean time we were ſo unlucky as to meet with no Sort of Game the whole day, ſo that the men were oblig'd to make a frugal diſtribution of what little they left in the Morning.

We encampt upon a ſmall Rill, where the Horſes came off as temperatly as their Maſters. They were by this time grown ſo thin, by hard Travel and Spare Feeding, that henceforth, in pure Compaſſion, we choſe to perform the greater Part of the Journey on foot. And as our Baggage was by this time grown much lighter, we divided it, after the beſt Manner, that every Horſe's Load might be proportion'd to the Strength he had left. Tho', after all the prudent Meaſures we cou'd take, we perceiv'd the Hills began to riſe upon us ſo faſt in our Front, that it wou'd be impoſſible for us to proceed much farther.

We ſaw very few Squirrels in the upper parts, becauſe the Wild Cats devour them unmercifully. Of theſe there are four kinds: The Fox Squirrel, the Gray, the Flying, and the Ground-Squirrel.

Theſe laſt reſemble a Rat in every thing but the Tail, and the black and Ruſſet Streaks that run down the Length of their little Bodies.

We found our way grow ſtill more Mountainous, after extending the Line 300 Poles farther. We came then to a Rivulet that ran with a Swift Current towards the South. This we fancy'd to be another Branch of the Irvin, tho' ſome of theſe men, who had been Indian Traders, judg'd it rather to be the head of Deep River, that diſcharges its Stream into that of Pee Dee; but this ſeem'd a wild Conjecture. 1729 Oct. 26

The Hills beyond that River were exceedingly lofty, and not to be attempted by our Jaded Palfreys, which could now hardly drag their Legs after them upon level Ground. Beſides, the Bread began to grow Scanty, and the Winter Seaſon to advance apace upon us.

We had likewiſe reaſon to apprehend the Conſequences of being intercepted by deep Snows, and the Swelling of the many Waters between us and Home. The firſt of theſe Misfortunes would ſtarve all our Horſes, and the Other ourſelves, by cutting off our Retreat, and obliging us to Winter in thoſe Deſolate Woods. Theſe conſiderations determin'd us to Stop ſhort here, and puſh our Adventures no farther. The laſt Tree we markt was a Red Oak, growing on the Bank of the River; and to make the Place more remarkable, we blaz'd all the Trees around it.

We found the whole Diſtance from Corotuck Inlet to the Rivulet where we left off, to be, in a Strait Line, Two Hundred and Forty-one Miles and Two Hundred and Thirty Poles. And from the Place where the Carolina Commiſſioners deſerted us, 72 Miles and 302 Poles. This laſt part of the Journey was generally very hilly, or elſe grown up with troubleſome Thickets and underwoods, all which our Carolina Friends had the Diſcretion to avoid.

We encampt in a dirty Valley near the Rivulet above-mention'd, for the advantage of the Canes, and ſo ſacrificed our own Convenience for that of our Horſes.

1729 Oct. There was a Small Mountain half a Mile to the Northward of us, which we had the Curioſity to Climb up in the Afternoon, in Order to enlarge our Proſpect. From thence we were able to diſcover where the two Ledges of Mountains clof'd, as near as we cou'd gueſs, about 30 Miles to the Weſt of us, and lamented that our preſent circumſtances wou'd not permit us to advance the Line to that Place, which the Hand of Nature had made ſo very remarkable.

Not far from our Quarters one of the men pickt up a pair of Elk's Horns, not very large, and diſcover'd the Track of the Elk that had Shed them. It was rare to find any Tokens of thoſe Animals ſo far to the South, becauſe they keep commonly to the Northward of 37 degrees, as the Buffaloes, for the moſt part, confine themſelves to the Southward of that Latitude.

The Elk is full as big as a Horſe, and of the Deer kind. The Stags only have Horns, and thoſe exceedingly large and Spreading. Their Colour is Something lighter than that of the Red Deer, and their Fleſh tougher. Their ſwifteſt Speed is a large trot, and in that Motion they turn their Horns back upon their Necks, and Cock their Noſes aloft in the Air. Nature has taught them this Attitude to ſave their Antlers from being entangled in the Thickets, which they always retire to. They are very ſhy, and have the Senſe of Smelling ſo exquiſite that they wind a man at a great diſtance. For this reaſon they are Seldom Seen but when the Air is moiſt, in which Caſe their ſmell is not ſo Nice.

They commonly herd together, and the Indians ſay, if one of the Drove happen by ſome Wound to be diſabled from making his Eſcape, the reſt will forſake their fears to defend their Friend, which they will do with great obſtinacy, till they are kill'd upon the Spot. Tho', otherwiſe, they are ſo alarm'd at the Sight of a man, that to avoid him they will Sometimes throw themſelves down very high Precipices into the River.

A miſadventure happen'd here, which gave us no Small perplexity. One of the Commiſſioners was ſo unlucky as to bruiſe his Foot againſt a Stump, which brought on a formal Fit of the Gout. 1729 Oct.

It muſt be own'd there cou'd not be a more unſeaſonable time, nor a more improper Situation, for any one to be attackt by that cruel Diſtemper. The Joint was ſo inflam'd that he cou'd neither draw Shoe nor Boot upon it; and to ride without either wou'd have expoſ'd him to ſo many rude knocks and Bruiſes, in thoſe rough Woods, as to be intolerable even to a Stoick.

It was happy, indeed, that we were to reſt here the next day, being Sunday, that there might be leiſure for trying ſome Speedy Remedy. Accordingly he was perſuaded to bathe his Foot in Cold Water, in Order to repel the Humour and aſſwage the Inflammation. This made it leſs painful, and gave us hopes, too, of reducing the Swelling in a Short time.

Our men had the fortune to kill a Brace of Bears, a fat Buck, and a Wild Turkey, all which paid them with Intereſt for Yeſterday's Abſtinence. This conſtant and Seaſonable Supply of all our daily Wants made us reflect thankfully on the Bounty of Providence.

And that we might not be unmindful of being all along fed by Heaven in this great and Solitary Wilderneſs, we agreed to Wear in our Hats the Maoſti, which is, in Indian, the Beard of a Wild Turkey-Cock, and on our Breaſts the Figure of that Fowl with its Wings extended, and holding in its Claws a ſcrowl, with this Motto, "VICE COTURNICUM," meaning that we had been Supported by them in the Wilderneſs in the room of Quails.

This being Sunday we were not wanting in our Thanks to 27
Heaven for the Conſtant Support and Protection we had been favour'd with. Nor did our Chaplain fail to put us in mind of Our Duty by a Sermon proper for the Occaſion.

1729 Oct. We order'd a Strict Inquiry to be made into the Quantity of Bread we had left, and found no more than wou'd Subſiſt us a Fortnight at Short Allowance. We made a fair Diſtribution of our whole Stock, and at the Same time recommended to the Men to manage this, their laſt Stake, to the beſt advantage, not knowing how long they would be oblig'd to live upon it.

We likewiſe directed them to keep a Watchfull eye upon their Horſes, that none of them might be miſſing the next Morning, to hinder our Return.

There fell ſome Rain before Noon, which made our Camp more a Bogg than it was before. This moiſt Situation began to infect ſome of the men with Fevers, and ſome with Fluxes, which however we ſoon remov'd with Peruvian Bark and Ipocoacanah.

In the Afternoon we marcht up again to the top of the Hill to entertain our Eyes a Second time with the View of the Mountains, but a perverſe Fog aroſe that hid them from our Sight.

In the Evening we deliberated which way it might be moſt proper to return. We had at firſt intended to croſs over at the foot of the Mountains to the head of James River, that we might be able to deſcribe that Natural Boundary ſo far. But, on Second Thoughts, we found many good Reaſons againſt that laudable Deſign, Such as the Weakneſs of our Horſes, the Scantineſs of our Bread, and the near approach of Winter. We had Cauſe to believe the way might be full of Hills, and the farther we went towards the North, the more danger there wou'd be of Snow. Such conſiderations as theſe determin'd us at laſt to make the beſt of our way back upon the Line, which was the Straiteſt, and Conſequently the ſhorteſt way to the Inhabitants. We knew the worſt of that Courſe, and were ſure of a beaten Path all the way, while we were totally ignorant what Difficulties and Dangers the other Courſe might be attended with. So

Prudence got the better for once of Curioſity, and the Itch for new Diſcoveries gave Place to Self-preſervation. 1729 Oct.

Our Inclination was the Stronger to croſs over according to the Courſe of the Mountains, that we might find out whether James River and Appamattock River head there, or run quite thro' them. 'Tis Certain that Potomec paſſes in a large Stream thro' the Main Ledge, and then divides itſelf into two conſiderable Rivers. That which Stretches away to the Northward is call'd Cohungaroota,[1] and that which flows to the South-weſt, hath the Name of Sharantow.

The Courſe of this laſt Stream is near parallel to the Blue Ridge of Mountains, at the diſtance only of about three or four Miles. Tho' how far it may continue that Courſe has not yet been ſufficiently diſcover'd, but ſome Woodſmen pretend to ſay it runs as far as the ſource of Roanoak; Nay, they are ſo very particular as to tell us that Roanoak, Sharantow, and another Wide Branch of Miſſaſſippi, all head in one and the Same Mountain.

What dependence there may be upon this Conjectural Geography, I wont pretend to ſay, tho' 'tis certain that Sharantow keeps cloſe to the Mountains, as far as we are acquainted with its Tendency. We are likewiſe aſſur'd that the South Branch of James River, within leſs than 20 Miles Eaſt of the Main Ledge, makes an Elbow, and runs due South-weſt, which is parallel with the Mountains on this Side. But how far it Stretches that way, before it returns, is not yet certainly known, no more than where it takes its Riſe.

In the mean time it is Strange that our Woodſmen have not had Curioſity enough to inform themſelves more exactly of theſe

[1] Which by a Late Survey has been found to extend above 200 Miles before it reaches its Source, in a Mountain, from whence Allegany, one of the Branches of Miſſaſſiippi, takes its Riſe, and runs South-Weſt, as this River dos South-Eaſt.

1729 Oct. particulars, and it is Stranger Still that the Government has never thought it worth the Expenſe of making an accurate Survey of the Mountains, that we might be Maſters of that Natural Fortification before the French, who in ſome Places have Settlements not very diſtant from it.

It therefore concerns his Majeſty's Service very nearly, and the Safety of His Subjects in this part of the World, to take Poſſeſſion of ſo important a Barrier in time, leſt our good Friends, the French, and the Indians, thro' their Means, prove a perpetual Annoyance to theſe Colonies.

Another Reaſon to invite us to Secure this great Ledge of Mountains is, the Probability that very Valuable Mines may be diſcover'd there. Nor wou'd it be at all extravagant to hope for Silver Mines, among the reſt, becauſe Part of theſe Mountains ly exactly in the ſame Parallel, as well as upon the Same Continent with New Mexico, and the Mines of St. Barb.

28 We had given Orders for the Horſes to be brought up early, but the likelyhood of more Rain prevented our being over-haſty in decamping. Nor were we out in our conjectures, for about ten a'clock it began to fall very plentifully.

Our Commiſſioner's Pain began now to abate, as the Swelling encreaſ'd. He made an excellent Figure for a Mountaineer, with one boot of Leather and the other of Flannel. Thus accowtur'd, he intended to mount, if the Rain had not happen'd opportunely to prevent him.

Tho', in Truth, it was hardly poſſible for Him to ride with ſo Slender a Defenſe, without expoſeing his Foot to be bruiſ'd and tormented by the Saplings, that ſtood thick on either ſide of the Path. It was therefore a moſt Seaſonable Rain for Him, as it gave more time for his Diſtemper to abate.

Tho' it may be very difficult to find a certain Cure for the Gout, yet it is not improbable but ſome things may eaſe the Pain, and Shorten the Fits of it. And thoſe Medicines are moſt

likely to do this, that Supple the Parts, and clear the Paſſage Through the Narrow Veſſels, that are the Seat of this cruel Diſeaſe. Nothing will do this more Suddenly than Rattle-ſnake's Oyl, which will even penetrate the Pores of Glaſs when warm'd in the ſun. 1729 Oct.

It was unfortunate, therefore, that we had not taken out the Fat of thoſe Snakes we had kill'd ſome time before, for the Benefit of ſo uſeful an Experiment, as well as for the Relief of our Fellow-Traveller.

But lately the Seneca Rattle-Snake Root has been diſcover'd in this Country, which being infuſ'd in Wine, and drank Morning and Evening, has in Several Inſtances had a very happy Effect upon the Gout, and enabled Cripples to throw away their Crutches and walk ſeveral Miles, and, what is Stranger Still, it takes away the Pain in half an hour.

Nor was the Gout the only Diſeaſe amongſt us that was hard to cure. We had a man in our Company who had too Voracious a Stomach for a Woodſman. He ate as much as any other two, but all he Swallow'd ſtuck by him till it was carry'd off by Strong Purge. Without this Aſſiſtance, often repeated, his Belly and Bowels wou'd ſwell to ſo enormous a Bulk that he could hardly breathe, eſpecially when he lay down, juſt as if he had had an Aſthma; tho', notwithſtanding this oddneſs of conſtitution, he was a very Strong, lively Fellow, and uſ'd abundance of Violent Exerciſe, by which 'twas wonderfull the Periſtaltick Motion was not more Vigorouſly promoted.

We gave this poor Man Several Purges, which only eaſ'd Him for the preſent, and the next day he wou'd grow as burly as ever. At laſt we gave Him a Moderate Doſe of ipocoacanah, in Broth made very Salt, which turn'd all its Operation downwards. This had ſo happy an Effect that, from that day forward to the End of our Journey, all his Complaint ceaſ'd, and the paſſages continued unobſtructed.

1729 Oct. The Rain continued moſt of the Day and Some part of the Night, which incommoded us much in our Dirty Camp, and made the men think of Nothing but Eating, even at the time when nobody cou'd Stir out to make proviſion for it.

29 Tho' we were flattered in the morning with the uſual Tokens of a fair Day, yet they all blew over, and it rain'd hard before we cou'd make ready for our Departure.

This was ſtill in favour of our Podagrous Friend, whoſe Lameneſs was now grown better, and the Inflammation fallen. Nor did it ſeem to need above one day more to reduce it to its Natural Proportion, and make it fit for the Boot; And effectually The Rain procur'd this Benefit for him, and gave him particular Reaſon to believe his Stars propitious.

Notwithſtanding the falling Weather, our Hunters ſally'd out in the afternoon, and drove the Woods in a Ring, which was thus performed. From the circumference of a large Circle they all march't inwards and drove the Game towards the center. By this means they ſhot a Brace of fat Bears, which came very ſeaſonably, becauſe we had made clean Work in the Morning and were in Danger of dining with St. Anthony, or his Grace Duke Humphry.

But in this Expedition the unhappy man who had loſt himſelf once before, Straggled again ſo far in Purſuit of a Deer, that he was hurry'd a ſecond time quite out of his knowledge. And Night coming on before he cou'd recover the Camp, he was obliged to lie down, without any of the Comforts of Fire, Food or covering; Nor would his Fears ſuffer him to Sleep very Sound, becauſe, to his great diſturbance, the Wolves howl'd all that Night, and the Panthers ſcream'd moſt frightfully.

In the Evening a briſk North-Weſter ſwept all the Clouds from the Sky, and expoſ'd the mountains as well as the Stars to our Proſpect.

That which was the moſt lofty to the Southward, and which

we call'd the Lover's Leap, ſome of our Indian Traders fondly fancy'd was the Kiawan mountain, which they had formerly ſeen from the country of the Cherokees. 1729 Oct.

They were the more poſitive by reaſon of the prodigious Precipice that remarkably diſtinguiſhed the Weſt End of it.

We ſeem'd however not to be far enough South for that, tho' 'tis not improbable but a few miles farther the Courſe of our Line might carry us to the moſt Northerly Towns of the Cherokees.

What makes this the more credible, is the North Weſt Courſe, that our Traders take from the Catawbas for ſome hundred miles together, when they carry Goods that round-about way to the Cherokees.

It was a great Pity that the want of Bread, and the Weakneſs of our Horſes, hinder'd us from making the Diſcovery. Tho' the great Service of ſuch an Excurſion might have been to the Country wou'd certainly have made the attempt not only pardonable, but much to be commended.

Our Traders are now at the vaſt Charge and Fatigue of travelling above five hundred miles for the Benefit of that traffique which hardly quits coſt. Wou'd it not then be worth the Aſſembly's while to be at ſome charge to find a Shorter cut to carry on ſo profitable a Trade, with more advantage, and leſs hazard and Trouble, than they do at preſent? For I am perſuaded it will not then be half the Diſtance that our Traders make it now, nor half ſo far as Georgia lies from the Northern Clans of that Nation.

Such a Diſcovery would certainly prove an unſpeakable Advantage to this Colony, by facilitating a Trade with ſo conſiderable a nation of Indians, which have 62 Towns, and more than 4000 Fighting Men. Our Traders at that rate would be able to underſell thoſe ſent from the other Colonies ſo much, that the Indians muſt have reaſon to deal with them preferable to all others.

1729 Oct. Of late the new colony of Georgia has made an act obliging us to go 400 miles to take out a Licenſe to traffick with theſe Cherokees, tho' many of their Towns ly out of their Bounds, and we had carry'd on this Trade 80 years before that Colony was thought of.

30 In the Morning early the man who had gone aſtray the day before found his way to the Camp, by the Sound of the Bells that were upon the Horſes' Necks.

At nine a'clock we began our March back towards the riſing Sun; for tho' we had finiſht the Line, yet we had not yet near finiſht our Fatigue. We had after all 200 good miles at leaſt to our ſeveral Habitations, and the Horſes were brought ſo low, that we were oblig'd to travel on foot great part of the way, and that in our Boots, too, to ſave our Legs from being torn to pieces by the Buſhes and Briars. Had we not done this, we muſt have left all our Horſes behind, which cou'd now hardly drag their Legs after them, and with all the favour we cou'd ſhow the poor Animals, we were forc'd to ſet Seven of them free, not far from the foot of the Mountains.

Four men were deſpatcht early to clear the Road, that our Lame Commiſſioner's leg might be in leſs danger of being bruiſ'd, and that the Baggage Horſes might travel with leſs difficulty and more expedition.

As we paſt along, by favour of a Serene Sky, we had ſtill, from every Eminence, a perfect view of the Mountains, as well to the North as to the South. We could not forbear now and then facing about to ſurvey them, as if unwilling to part with a Proſpect, which at the ſame time, like ſome Rake's, was very wild and very Agreeable.

We encourag'd the Horſes to exert the little Strength they had, and being light, they made a ſhift to jog on about Eleven Miles. We Encampt on Crooked Creek, near a Thicket of Canes. In the front of our Camp roſe a very beautiful Hill,

that bounded our View at about a Mile's Diſtance, and all the Intermediate ſpace was cover'd with green canes. Tho', to our Sorrow, Fire-wood was Scarce, which was now the harder upon us, becauſe a north-weſter blew very cold from the Mountains. 1729 Oct.

The Indian kill'd a ſtately, fat Buck, & we pickt his Bones as clean as a ſcore of Turky-Buzzards cou'd have done.

By the advantage of a clear night, we made tryal once more of the Variation, and found it much the ſame as formerly.

This being his Majeſty's Birth-Day, we drank all the Loyal Healths in excellent Water, not for the ſake of the drink, (like many of our fellow ſubjects,) but purely for the Sake of the Toaſt. And becauſe all Public Mirth ſhou'd be a little noiſy, we fir'd ſeveral volleys of Canes, inſtead of Guns, which gave a loud report.

We threw them into the Fire, where the Air encloſed betwixt the Joints of the Canes, being expanded by the violent Heat, burſt its narrow Bounds with a conſiderable exploſion!

In the Evening one of the men knockt down an Opoſſum, which is a harmleſs little Beaſt, that will ſeldom go out of your way, and if you take hold of it, it will only grin, and hardly ever bite. The Fleſh was well taſted and Tender, approaching neareſt to Pig, which it alſo reſembles in Bigneſs. The colour of its Fur was a Gooſe Gray, with a Swine's Snout, and a Tail like a Rat, but at leaſt a foot long. By twiſting this Tail about the arm of a Tree, it will hang with all its weight, and ſwing to any thing it wants to take hold of.

It has five Claws on the fore Feet of equal length, but the hinder feet have only Four claws, and a ſort of Thumb ſtanding off at a proper Diſtance.

Their Feet being thus form'd, qualify them for climbing up Trees to catch little Birds, which they are very fond of.

But the greateſt Particularity of this creature, and which diſtinguiſhes it from moſt others that we are acquainted with, is

1729 Oct. the FALSE BELLY of the FEMALE, into which her Young retreat in time of Danger. She can draw the Slit, which is the Inlet into this Pouch, ſo cloſe, that you muſt look narrowly to find it, eſpecially if ſhe happen to be a Virgin.

Within the Falſe Belly may be ſeen ſeven or eight Teats, on which the young Ones grow from their firſt Formation till they are big enough to fall off, like ripe Fruit from a Tree. This is ſo odd a method of Generation, that I ſhould not have believed it without the Teſtimony of mine own Eyes. Beſides a knowing and credible Perſon has aſſur'd me he has more than once obſerv'd the Embryo Poſſums growing to the Teat before they were compleatly Shaped, and afterwards watcht their daily growth till they were big enough for Birth. And all this he could the more eaſily pry into, becauſe the Damm was ſo perfectly gentle and harmleſs, that he could handle her juſt as he pleaſ'd.

I cou'd hardly perſuade myſelf to publiſh a thing ſo contrary to the Courſe that Nature takes in the Production of other Animals, unleſs it were a Matter Commonly believ'd in all Countries where that Creature is produc'd, and has been often obſerved by Perſons of undoubted credit and underſtanding.

They ſay that the Leather-winged Bats produce their Young in the ſame uncommon Manner. And that young Sharks at Sea, and Young Vipers aſhoar, run down the Throats of their Damms when they are cloſely purſued.

The frequent croſſing of Crooked Creek, and mounting the Steep Banks of it, gave the finiſhing ſtroke to the foundering of our Horſes: and no leſs than than two of them made a full ſtop here, and would not advance a foot farther, either by fair means or foul.

We had a Dreamer of Dreams amongſt us, who warned me in the Morning to take care of myſelf, or I ſhou'd infallibly fall into the Creek; I thank'd him kindly, and uſed what Caution I

cou'd, but was not able it ſeems to avoid my Deſtiny, for my Horſe made a falſe ſtep and laid me down at my full Length in the water. 1729 Oct.

This was enough to bring dreaming into credit, and I think it much for the Honour of our expedition, that it was grac'd not only with PRIEST but alſo with a PROPHET.

We were ſo perplext with this Serpentine Creek, as well as in Paſſing the Branches of the Irvin, (which were ſwell'd ſince we ſaw them before,) that we could reach but 5 miles this whole day. In the Evening We pitched our Tent near Miry creek, (tho' an uncomfortable place to lodge in) purely for the advantage of the Canes.

Our Hunters killed a large Doe and two Bears, which made all other misfortunes eaſy. Certainly no Tartar ever lov'd Horſe-fleſh, or Hottentot Guts and Garbage, better than Woodſmen do Bear. The truth of it is, it may be proper food perhaps for ſuch as Work or Ride it off, but, with our Chaplain's Leave, who lov'd it much, I think it not a very proper dyet for ſaints, becauſe 'tis apt to make them a little too rampant.

And now, for the good of mankind, and for the better Peopling an Infant colony, which has no want but that of Inhabitants, I will venture to publiſh a Secret of Importance, which our Indian diſcloſ'd to me. I aſkt him the reaſon why few or none of his Countrywomen were barren? To which curious Queſtion he anſwered, with a Broad grin upon his Face, they had an infallible SECRET for that. Upon my being importunate to know what the ſecret might be, he informed me that, if any Indian woman did not prove with child at a decent time after Marriage, the Huſband, to ſave his Reputation with the women, forthwith entered into a Bear-dyet for Six Weeks, which in that time makes him ſo vigorous that he grows exceedingly impertinent to his poor wife and 'tis great odds but he makes her a mother in Nine Months.

1729 Oct. And thus much I am able to ſay, beſides, for the Reputation of the Bear Dyet, that all the Marryed men of our Company were joyful Fathers within forty weeks after they got Home, and moſt of the Single men had children ſworn to them within the ſame time, our chaplain always excepted, who, with much ado, made a ſhift to caſt out that importunate kind of Devil, by Dint of Faſting and Prayer.

Nov. 1 By the negligence of one of the Men in not hobbling his Horſe, he ſtraggled ſo far that he could not be found. This ſtopt us all the Morning long; Yet, becauſe our Time ſhould not be entirely loſt, we endeavoured to obſerve the Latitude at twelve a clock. Though our Obſervation was not perfect, by reaſon the Wind blew a little too freſh, however, by Such a One as we cou'd make, we found ourſelves in 36° 20′ only.

Notwithſtanding our being thus delay'd, and the unevenes of the Ground, over which we were oblig'd to walk, (for moſt of us ſerv'd now in the Infantry,) we travell'd no leſs than 6 miles, Tho' as merciful as we were to our poor Beaſts, another of 'em tired by the way, & was left behind for the Wolves & Panthers to feaſt upon.

As we marcht along, we had the fortune to kill a Brace of Bucks, as many Bears, and one wild Turkey. But this was carrying our Sport to wantonneſs, becauſe we butchered more than we were able to tranſport. We ordered the Deer to be quarter'd and divided among the Horſes for the lighter Carriage, and recommended the Bears to our dayly attendants, the Turkey-Buzzards.

We always choſe to carry Veniſon along with us rather than Bear, not only becauſe it was leſs cumberſome, but likewiſe becauſe the People cou'd eat it without Bread, which was now almoſt ſpent. Whereas the other, being richer food, lay too heavy upon the ſtomach, unleſs it were lightened by ſomething farinaceous. This is what I thought proper to remarque, for the

ſervice of all thoſe whoſe Buſineſs or Diverſion ſhall oblige them to live any time in the Woods. 1729 Nov.

And becauſe I am perſuaded that very uſefull Matters may be found out by Searching this great Wilderneſs, eſpecially the upper parts of it about the Mountains, I conceive it will help to engage able men in that good work, if I recommend a wholeſome kind of Food, of very ſmall Weight and very great Nouriſhment, that will ſecure them from Starving, in caſe they ſhou'd be ſo unlucky as to meet with no Game. The Chief diſcouragement at preſent from penetrating far into the Woods is the trouble of carrying a Load of Proviſions. I muſt own Famine is a frightful Monſter, and for that reaſon to be guarded againſt as well as we can. But the common precautions againſt it, are ſo burthenſome, that People can't tarry long out, and go far enough from home, to make any effectual Diſcovery.

The Portable Proviſions I would furniſh our Foreſters withal are Glue-Broth and rockahomini: one contains the Eſſence of Bread, the other of Meat.

The beſt way of making Glue-Broth is after the following method: Take a Leg of Beef, Veal, Veniſon, or any other Young Meat, becauſe Old Meat will not ſo eaſily Jelly. Pare off all the fat, in which there is no Nutriment, and of the Lean make a very ſtrong Broth, after the uſual Manner, by boiling the meat to Rags till all the Goodneſs be out. After Skimming off what fat remains, pour the Broth into a wide Stew-Pan, well tinn'd, & let it ſimmer over a gentle, even Fire, till it come to a thick Jelly. Then take it off and ſet it over Boiling Water, which is an Evener Heat, and not ſo apt to burn the Broth to the Veſſel. Over that let it evaporate, ſtirring it very often till it be reduc'd, when cold, into a Solid Subſtance like Glue. Then cut it into ſmall Pieces, laying them Single in the Cold, that they may dry the Sooner. When the Pieces are perfectly

1729 Nov. dry, put them into a Canniſter, and they will be good, if kept Dry, a whole Eaſt India Voyage.

This Glue is ſo Strong, that two or three Drams, diſſolv'd in boiling Water with a little Salt, will make half a pint of good Broth, & if you ſhou'd be faint with faſting or Fatigue, let a ſmall piece of this Glue melt in your Mouth, and you will find yourſelf ſurpriſingly refreſhed.

One Pound of this cookery wou'd keep a man in good heart above a Month, and is not only Nouriſhing, but likewiſe very wholeſome. Particularly it is good againſt Fluxes, which Woodſmen are very liable to, by lying too near the moiſt ground, and guzzling too much cold Water. But as it will be only uſ'd now and then, in times of Scarcity, when Game is wanting, two Pounds of it will be enough for a Journey of Six Months.

But this Broth will be ſtill more heartening, if you thicken every meſs with half a Spoonful of Rockahominy, which is nothing but Indian Corn parched without burning, and reduced to Powder. The Fire drives out all the Watery Parts of the Corn, leaving the Strength of it behind, and this being very dry, becomes much lighter for carriage and leſs liable to be Spoilt by the Moiſt Air.

Thus half a Dozen Pounds of this Sprightful Bread will ſuſtain a Man for as many Months, provided he huſband it well, and always Spare it when he meets with Veniſon, which, as I ſaid before, may be very Safely eaten without any Bread at all.

By what I have ſaid, a Man needs not encumber himſelf with more than 8 or 10 Pounds of Proviſions, tho' he continue half a year in the Woods.

Theſe and his Gun will ſupport him very well during that time, without the leaſt danger of keeping one Single Faſt. And tho' ſome of his days may be what the French call *Jours maigres*, yet there will happen no more of thoſe than will be neceſſary for his health, and to carry off the Exceſſes of the Days of Plenty,

when our Travellers will be apt to indulge their Lawleſs Appetites too much. 1729 Nov. 2

The Heavens frowned this Morning, and threaten'd abundance of Rain, but our Zeal for returning made us defy the Weather, and decamp a little before Noon. Yet we had not advanct two Miles, before a Soaking Shower made us glad to pitch our Tent as faſt as we could. We choſe for that purpoſe a riſing Ground, half a mile to the Eaſt of MATRIMONY CREEK. This was the firſt and only time we were caught in the Rain, during the whole Expedition. It uſ'd before to be ſo civil as to fall in the night, after we were ſafe in our Quarters, and had trencht ourſelves in; or elſe it came upon us on Sundays, when it was no Interruption to our Progreſs, nor any Inconvenience to our Perſons.

We had, however, been ſo lucky in this Particular before, that we had abundant Reaſon to take our preſent ſoaking patiently, and the Misfortune was the leſs, becauſe we had taken the Precaution to keep all our Baggage and Bedding perfectly dry.

This Rain was enliven'd with very loud Thunder, which was echo'd back by the Hills in the Neighbourhood in a frightful Manner. There is ſomething in the Woods that makes the Sound of this Meteor more awfull, and the Violence of the Lightening more Viſible. The Trees are frequently Shiver'd quite down to the Root, and ſometimes perfectly twiſted. But of all the Effects of Lightening that ever I heard of, the moſt amazing happen'd in this country, in the Year 1736.[1]

In the Summer of that year a Surgeon of a Ship, whoſe Name was Davis, came aſhoar at York to viſit a Patient. He was no ſooner got into the Houſe, but it began to rain with many terrible Claps of Thunder. When it was almoſt dark there came a dreadful Flaſh of Lightning, which Struck the Surgeon dead as

[1] See Note, *ante*, Page 1.

1729 Nov. he was walking about the Room, but hurt no other Perſon, tho' ſeveral were near him. At the ſame time it made a large Hole in the Trunk of a Pine Tree, which grew about Ten Feet from the Window. But what was moſt ſurpriſing in this Diſaſter was, that on the Breaſt of the unfortunate man that was kill'd was the Figure of a Pine Tree, as exactly delineated as any Limner in the World could draw it, nay, the Reſemblance went ſo far as to repreſent the coulour of the Pine, as well as the Figure. The Lightning muſt probably have paſſed thro' the the Tree firſt before it ſtruck the Man, and by that means have printed the Icon of it on his breaſt.

But whatever may have been the cauſe, the Effect was certain, and can be atteſted by a Cloud of Witneſſes who had the curioſity to go and ſee this Wonderful Phenomenon.

The worſt of it was, we were forced to Encamp in a barren place, where there was hardly a blade of Graſs to be ſeen, Even the wild Roſemary failed us here, which gave us but too juſt apprehenſions that we ſhould not only be oblig'd to trudge all the way home on foot, but alſo to lug our Baggage at our Backs into the Bargain.

Thus we learnt by our own Experience, that Horſes are very improper animals to uſe in a long Ramble into the Woods, and the better they have been uſed to be fed, they are ſtill the worſe. Such will fall away a great deal faſter, and fail much ſooner, than thoſe which are wont to be at their own keeping. Beſides, Horſes that have been accuſtom'd to a Plane and Champaign Country will founder preſently, when they come to clamber up Hills, and batter their Hoofs againſt continal Rocks.

We need Welſh Runts, and Highland Galloways to climb our Mountains withal; they are uſ'd to Precipices, and will bite as cloſe as Banſtead Down Sheep. But I ſhould much rather recommend Mules, if we had them, for theſe long and painful Expeditions; tho' till they can be bred, certainly Aſſes are the

fitteſt Beaſts of Burthen for the Mountains. They are ſure-footed, patient under the heavieſt Fatigue, and will ſubſiſt upon Moſs, or Browſing on Shrubs all the Winter. One of them will carry the Neceſſary Luggage of four Men, without any Difficulty, and upon a Pinch will take a Quarter of Bear or Veniſon upon their Backs into the Bargain. 1729 Nov.

Thus, when the Men are light and diſengaged from every thing but their Guns, they may go the whole Journey on foot with pleaſure. And tho' my Dear Countrymen have ſo great a Paſſion for riding, that they will often walk two miles to catch a Horſe, in Order to ride One, yet, if they'll pleaſe to take my Word for't, when they go into the Woods upon Diſcovery, I would adviſe them by all Means to march a-foot, for they will then be deliver'd from the great Care and Concern for their Horſes, which takes up too large a portion of their time.

Over Night we are now at the trouble of hobbling them out, and often of leading them a mile or two to a convenient place for Forrage, and then in the morning we are ſome Hours in finding them again, becauſe they are apt to ſtray a great way from the place where they were turn'd out. Now and then, too, they are loſt for a whole day together, and are frequently ſo weak and jaded, that the Company muſt ly ſtill Several days, near ſome Meadow, or High-land Pond, to recruit them. All theſe delays retard their Progreſs intolerably; whereas, if they had only a few Aſſes, they wou'd abide cloſe to the Camp, and find Sufficient food every where, and in all Seaſons of the Year. Men wou'd then be able to travel Safely over Hills and Dales, nor wou'd the Steepeſt Mountains obſtruct their Progreſs.

They might alſo ſearch more narrowly for Mines and other Productions of Nature, without being confin'd to level grounds, in Compliment to the jades they ride on. And one may foretell, without the Spirit of Divination, that ſo long as Woodſmen continue to range on Horſe-back, we ſhall be Strangers to our

1729 Nov. own Country, and a few or no valuable Diſcoveries will ever be made.

The FRENCH COURIERS *de Bois*, who have run from one one End of the Continent to the other, have performed it all on foot, or elſe in all probability muſt have continued as ignorant as we are.

Our Country has now been inhabited more than 130 years by the Engliſh, and ſtill we hardly know any thing of the Appallachian Mountains, that are no where above 250 miles from the ſea. Whereas the French, who are later comers, have rang'd from Quebec Southward as far as the Mouth of Miſſiſſippi, in the bay of Mexico, and to the Weſt almoſt as far as California, which is either way above 2000 miles.

3 A North-weſt Wind having clear'd the Sky, we were now tempted to travel on a Sunday, for the firſt time, for want of more plentiful Forage, though ſome of the more Scrupulous amongſt us we unwilling to do Evil, that good might come of it, and make our Cattle work a Good part of the Day in order to fill their Bellies at Night. However, the Chaplain put on his caſuiſtical Face, and offer'd to take the ſin upon Himſelf. We therefore conſented to move a Sabbath Day's Journey of 3 or 4 Miles, it appearing to be a Matter of ſome neceſſity.

On the way our unmerciful Indian kill'd no leſs than two Brace of Deer and a large Bear. We only prim'd the Deer, being unwilling to be encumbered with their whole Carcaſſes. The reſt we conſign'd to the Wolves, which in Return ſeranaded us great part of the Night. They are very clamorous in their Banquets, which we know is the way ſome other Brutes have, in the extravagance of their Jollity and Sprightlineſs, of expreſſing their thanks to Providence.

We came to our Old camp, in Sight of the River Irvin, whoſe Stream was Swell'd now near four feet with the Rain that fell the Day before. This made it impracticable for us to ford

it, nor could we gueſs when the water wou'd fall enough to let us go over. 1729 Nov.

This put our Mathematical Profeſſor, who ſhou'd have ſet a better Example, into the Vapours, fearing he ſhou'd be oblig'd to take up his Winter Quarters in that doleful Wilderneſs. But the reſt were not affected with his want of Faith, but preſerv'd a Firmneſs of Mind Superior to ſuch little Adverſe Accidents. They truſted that the ſame good Providence which had moſt remarkably proſper'd them hitherto, would continue his goodneſs and conduct them ſafe to the End of their Journey.

However, we found plainly that travelling on the Sunday, contrary to our conſtant Rule, had not thriven with us in the leaſt. We were not gainers of any diſtance by it, becauſe the river made us pay two days for Violating one.

Nevertheleſs, by making this Reflection, I would not be thought ſo rigid an obſerver of the Sabbath as to allow of no Work at all to be done, or Journeys to be taken upon it. I ſhould not care to ly ſtill and be knockt on the head, as the Jews were heretofore by Antiochus, becauſe I believ'd it unlawful to ſtand upon my Defenſe on this good day. Nor would I care, like a certain New England Magiſtrate, to order a Man to the Whipping Poſt, for daring to ride for a Midwife on the Lord's Day.

On the contrary, I am for doing all acts of Neceſſity, Charity, and Self-Preſervation, upon a Sunday as well as other days of the Week. But, as I think our preſent March cou'd not Strictly be juſtify'd by any of theſe Rules, it was but juſt we ſhould ſuffer a little for it.

I never could learn that the Indians ſet apart any day of the Week or the Year for the Service of God. They pray, as Philoſophers eat, only when they have a ſtomach, without having any ſet time for it. Indeed theſe Idle People have very little occaſion for a ſabbath to refreſh themſelves after hard Labour,

1729 Nov. becauſe very few of them ever Labour at all. Like the wild Iriſh, they would rather want than Work, and are all men of Pleaſure, to whom every day is a day of reſt.

Indeed, in their Hunting, they will take a little Pains; but this being only a Diverſion, their ſpirits are rather raiſ'd than depreſſ'd by it, and therefore need at moſt but a Night's Sleep to recruit them.

4 By ſome Stakes we had driven into the River yeſterday, we perceiv'd the Water began to fall, but fell ſo Slowly that we found we muſt have patience a day or two longer. And becauſe we were unwilling to ly altogether Idle, we ſent back ſome of the men to bring up the two Horſes that tir'd the Saturday before. They were found near the place where we had left them, but ſeemed too ſenſible of their Liberty to come to us. They were found Standing indeed, but as Motionleſs as the Equeſtrian ſtatue at CHARING-CROSS.

We had great reaſon to apprehend more Rain by the clouds that drove over our Heads. The boldeſt amongſt us were not without ſome Pangs of uneaſineſs at ſo very Sullen a Proſpect. However, God be praiſ'd! it all blew over in a few Hours.

If much Rain had fallen, we reſolv'd to make a Raft and bind it together with Grape Vines, to Ferry ourſelves and Baggage over the River. Tho', in that Caſe, we expected the Swiftneſs of the Stream wou'd have carry'd down our Raft a long way before we cou'd have tugg'd it to the oppoſite ſhoar.

One of the Young Fellows we had ſent to bring up the tired Horſes entertained us in the Evening with a remarkable adventure he had met with that day.

He had ſtraggled, it ſeems, from his Company in a miſt, and made a cub of a year old betake itſelf to a Tree. While he was new-priming his piece, with intent to fetch it down, the Old Gentlewoman appeared, and perceiving her Heir apparent in Diſtreſs, advanc'd open-mouth'd to his relief.

The man was ſo intent upon his Game, that ſhe had approacht very near him before he perceived her. But finding his Danger, he faced about upon the Enemy, which immediately rear'd upon her poſteriors, & put herſelf in Battle Array. 1729 Nov.

The Man, admiring at the Bear's aſſurance, endeavour'd to fire upon Her, but by the Dampneſs of the Priming, his Gun did not go off. He cockt it a ſecond time, and had the ſame misfortune. After miſſing Fire twice, he had the folly to punch the Beaſt with the muzzle of his Piece; but mother Bruin, being upon her Guard, ſeized the Weapon with her Paws, and by main ſtrength wrenched it out of the Fellow's Hands.

The Man being thus fairly diſarm'd, thought himſelf no longer a Match for the Enemy, and therefore retreated as faſt as his Legs could carry him.

The brute naturally grew bolder upon the flight of her Adverſary, and purſued him with all her heavy ſpeed. For ſome time it was doubtful whether fear made one run faſter, or Fury the other. But after an even courſe of about 50 yards, the Man had the Miſhap to Stumble over a Stump, and fell down at his full Length. He now wou'd have ſold his Life a Penny-worth; but the Bear, apprehending there might be ſome Trick in the Fall, inſtantly halted, and lookt with much attention on her Proſtrate Foe.

In the mean while, the Man had with great preſence of Mind reſolved to make the Bear believe he was dead, by lying Breathleſs on the Ground, in Hopes that the Beaſt would be too generous to kill him over again. To carry on the Farce, he acted the Corpſe for ſome time without dareing to raiſe his head, to ſee how near the Monſter was to him. But in about two Minutes, to his unſpeakable Comfort, he was raiſ'd from the Dead by the Barking of a Dog, belonging to one of his companions, who came Seaſonably to his Reſcue, and drove the Bear

1729 Nov. 5 from purſuing the Man to take care of her Cub, which ſhe fear'd might now fall into a ſecond Diſtreſs.

We Judg'd the Waters were aſſuag'd this morning to make the River fordable. Therefore about Ten we try'd the Experiment, and every Body got over Safe, except one man, whoſe Horſe Slipt from a Rock as he forded over, and threw him into the River. But being able to ſwim, he was not Carry'd down the Stream very far before he recover'd the North Shore.

At the Diſtance of about 6 miles we paſſt CASCADE CREEK, and 3 Miles farther we came upon the Banks of the Dan, which we croſt with much Difficulty, by reaſon the Water was riſen much higher than when we forded it before.

Here the ſame unlucky Perſon happen'd to be duckt a Second time, and was a Second time Sav'd by Swimming. My own Horſe too plunged in ſuch a Manner that his Head was more than once under Water, but with much ado recover'd his Feet, tho' he made ſo low an obeiſance, that the water ran fairly over my Saddle.

We continued our march as far as LOWLAND CREEK, where we took up our Lodging, for the benefit of the Canes and Winter Graſs that grew upon the rich Grounds thereabouts. On our way thither we had the Misfortune to drop another Horſe, though he carry'd nothing the whole day but his Saddle. We ſhowed the ſame favour to moſt of our Horſes, for fear, if we did not do it, we ſhould in a little time be turned into Beaſts of Burthen ourſelves.

Cuſtom had now made travelling on foot ſo familiar, that we were able to walk ten Miles with Pleaſure. This we cou'd do in our Boots, notwithſtanding our way lay over rough Woods and uneven Grounds.

Our learning to walk in heavy Boots was the ſame advantage to us that learning to Dance High Dances in Wooden Shoes is

to the French, it made us moſt exceedingly Nimble without them. 1729 Nov.

The Indians, who have no way of travelling but on the Hoof, make nothing of going 25 miles a day, and carrying their little Neceſſaries at their backs, and Sometimes a Stout Pack of Skins into the Bargain. And very often they laugh at the Engliſh, who can't Stir to Next Neighbour without a Horſe, and ſay that 2 Legs are too much for ſuch lazy people, who cannot viſit their next neighbour without ſix.

For their Parts, they were utter Strangers to all our Beaſts of Burthen or Carriage, before the Slothful Europeans came amongſt them. They had on no part of the American Continent, or in any of the Iſlands, either Horſes or Aſſes, Camels, Dromedaries or Elephants, to eaſe the Legs of the Original Inhabitants, or to lighten their Labour.

Indeed, in South America, and particularly in Chili, they have a uſeful animal call'd "paco." This creature reſembles a Sheep pretty much; only in the Length of the Neck, and figure of the Head, it is more like a Camel. It is very near as high as the aſs, and the Indians there make uſe of it for carrying moderate Burthens.

The Fleece that grows upon it is very Valuable for the fineneſs, length and Gloſſineſs of the Wool. It has one remarkable Singularity, that the Hoofs of its fore-feet have three Clefts, and thoſe behind no more than one. The Fleſh of this Animal is ſomething drier than our Mutton, but altogether as well taſted.

When it is Angry, it has no way of reſenting its wrongs, but by ſpitting in the Face of thoſe that provoke it: and if the Spawl happen to light on the bare Skin of any Perſon, it firſt creates an Itching, and afterwards a Scab, if no Remedy be applied. The way to manage theſe pacos, and make them tractable, is, to bore a hole in their ears, through which they put a Rope, and then guide them juſt as they pleaſe.

1729 Nov. In Chili, they wear a beautiful kind of Stuff, with thread made of this Creature's Wool, which has a Gloſs Superior to any Camlet, and is ſold very dear in that country.

6 The Difficulty of finding the Horſes among the tall Canes made it late before we decampt. We traverſed very hilly Grounds, but to make amends it was pretty clear of Underwood.

We avoided croſſing the Dan twice by taking a Compaſs round the bent of it. There was no paſſing by the angle of the River without halting a moment to entertain our Eyes again with that Charming Proſpect. When that pleaſure was over we proceeded to Sable Creek, and encamped a little to the Eaſt of it.

The River thereabouts had a charming effect, its Banks being adorn'd with green canes, ſixteen feet high, which make a Spring all the year, as well as plenty of Forage all the Winter.

One of the Men wounded an Old Buck, that was gray with years, and ſeem'd by the Reverend Marks he bore upon him, to confirm the current Opinion of that animal's Longevity. The Smart of his Wounds made him not only turn upon the Dogs, but likewiſe purſue them to ſome Diſtance with great Fury.

However he got away at laſt, though by the blood that iſſued from his Wound he could not run far before he fell, and without doubt made a comfortable repaſt for the wolves. However the Indian had better Fortune, and ſupply'd us with a fat Doe, and a young Bear two years old. At that Age they are in their Prime, and, if they be fat withal, they are a Morſel for a Cardinal.

All the Land we Travell'd over this day, and the day before, that is to ſay from the river Irvin to Sable Creek, is exceedingly rich, both on the Virginia Side of the Line, and that of Carolina. Beſides whole Foreſts of Canes, that adorn the Banks of the River and Creeks thereabouts, the fertility of the Soil throws out ſuch a Quantity of Winter Graſs, that Horſes and Cattle might keep themſelves in Heart all the cold Seaſon without the

help of any Fodder. Nor have the low Grounds only this advantage, but likewiſe the Higher Land, and particularly that which we call the Highland Pond, which is two miles broad, and of a length unknown. 1729 Nov.

I queſtion not but there are 30,000 Acres at leaſt, lying Altogether, as fertile as the Lands were ſaid to be about Babylon, which yielded, if Herodotus tells us right, an Increaſe of no leſs than 2 or 300 for one. But this hath the Advantage of being a higher, and conſequently a much healthier, Situation than that. So that a Colony of 1000 families might, with the help of Moderate Induſtry, paſs their time very happily there.

Beſides grazing and Tillage, which would abundantly compenſate their Labour, they might plant Vineyards upon the Hills, in which Situation the richeſt Wines are always produc'd.

They might alſo propagate white Mulberry Trees, which thrive exceedingly in this climate, in order to the feeding of ſilkworms, and making of Raw Silk.

They might too produce Hemp, Flax and Cotton, in what quantity they pleaſ'd, not only for their own uſe, but likewiſe for Sale. Then they might raiſe very plentiful Orchards, of both Peaches and Apples, which contribute as much as any Fruit to the Luxury of Life. There is no Soil or Climate will yield better Rice than this, which is a Grain of prodigious Increaſe, and of very wholeſome Nouriſhment. In ſhort every thing will grow plentifully here to ſupply either the Wants or Wantonneſs of Man.

Nor can I ſo much as wiſh that the more tender Vegetables might grow here, ſuch as Orange, Lemon, and Olive Trees, becauſe then we ſhou'd loſe the much greater benefit of the briſk North-Weſt Winds, which purge the Air, and ſweep away all the Malignant Fevers, which hover over countries that are always warm.

The Soil wou'd alſo want the advantages of Froſt, and Snow,

1729 Nov. which by their Nitrous Particles contribute not a little to its Fertility. Beſides the Inhabitants wou'd be depriv'd of the Variety and Sweet Viciſſitude of the Seaſon, which is much more delightful than one dull and Conſtant Succeſſion of Warm Weather, diverſify'd only by Rain and Sun Shine.

There is alſo another convenience, that happens to this country by cold weather—it deſtroys a great Number of Snakes, and other Venomous Reptiles, and troubleſome Inſects, or at leaſt lays them to Sleep for Several Months, which otherwiſe would annoy us the whole year round, & multiply beyond all Enduring.

Though Oranges and Lemons are deſirable Fruits, and Uſefull enough in many Caſes, yet, when the Want of them is Supply'd by others more uſeful, we have no cauſe to complain.

There is no climate that produces every thing, ſince the Deluge Wrencht the Poles of the World out of their Place, nor is it fit it ſhou'd be ſo, becauſe it is the Mutual Supply one country receives from another, which creates a mutual Traffic and Intercourſe amongſt men. And in Truth, were it not for the correſpondence, in order to make up each other's Wants, the Wars betwixt Bordering Nations, like thoſe of the Indians and other barbarous People, wou'd be perpetual and irreconcileable.

As to Olive Trees, I know by Experience they will never ſtand the Sharpneſs of our Winters, but their Place may be Supply'd by the Plant call'd Seſſamun, which yields an infinite quantity of large Seed, from whence a Sweet Oyl is preſt, that is very wholeſome and in uſe amongſt the People of Leſſer Aſia. Likewiſe it is uſ'd in Egypt, preferably to oyl olive, being not ſo apt to make thoſe that eat it Conſtantly break out into Scabs, as they do in many parts of Italy. This would grow very kindly here, and has already been planted with good Succeſs in North Carolina, by way of Experiment.

7 After croſſing the Dan, we made a march of 8 miles, over

Hills and Dales as far as the next Ford of that River. And now we were by Practice become ſuch very able Footmen, that we eaſily outwalkt our Horſes, and cou'd have marcht much farther, had it not been in pity to their Weakneſs. Beſides here was plenty of Canes, which was reaſon enough to make us Shorten our Journey. Our Gunners did great Execution as they went along, killing no leſs than two Brace of Deer, and as many Wild Turkeys. 1729 Nov.

Though Practice will ſoon make a man of tolerable Vigour an able Footman, yet, as a Help to bear Fatigue I uſ'd to chew a Root of Ginſeng as I Walk't along. This kept up my Spirits, and made me trip away as nimbly in my half Jack-Boots as younger men cou'd in their Shoes. This Plant is in high Eſteem in China, where it ſells for its Weight in Silver. Indeed it does not grow there, but in the Mountains of Tartary, to which Place the emperor of China Sends 10,000 Men every Year on purpoſe to gather it. But it grows ſo ſcattering there, that even ſo many hands can bring home no great Quantity. Indeed it is a Vegetable of ſo many vertues, that Providence has planted it very thin in every Country that has the happineſs to produce it. Nor indeed is Mankind worthy of ſo great a Bleſſing, ſince Health and long Life are commonly Abuſ'd to ill Purpoſes. This noble Plant grows likewiſe at the Cape of Good Hope, where it is Call'd kanna, and is in wonderful Eſteem among the Hottentots. It grows alſo on the northern continent of America, near the Mountains, but as Sparingly as Truth & Public Spirit. It anſwers exactly both to the Figure and vertues of that which grows in Tartary, ſo that there can be no doubt of its being the Same.

Its vertues are, that it gives an uncommon Warmth and Vigour to the Blood, and friſks the Spirits, beyond any other Cordial. It chears the Heart even of a Man that has a bad Wife, and makes him look down with great Compoſure on the

1729 Nov. croſſes of the World. It promotes inſenſible Perſpiration, diſſolves all Phlegmatick and Viſcous Humours, that are apt to obſtruct the Narrow channels of the Nerves. It helps the Memory, and would quicken even Helvetian dulneſs. 'Tis friendly to the Lungs, much more than Scolding itſelf. It comforts the Stomach, and Strengthens the Bowels, preventing all Colicks and Fluxes. In one Word, it will make a Man live a great while, and very well while he does live. And what is more, it will even make Old Age amiable, by rendering it lively, chearful, and good-humour'd. However 'tis of little uſe in the Feats of Love, as a great prince once found, who hearing of its invigorating Quality, ſent as far as China for ſome of it, though his ladys could not boaſt of any Advantage thereby.

We gave the Indian the Skins of all the Deer that he Shot himſelf, and the Men the Skins of what they Kill'd. And every Evening after the Fires were made, they ſtretcht them very tight upon Sticks, and dry'd them. This, by a Nocturnal Fire, appear'd at firſt a very odd Spectacle, every thing being dark and gloomy round about. After they are Dry'd in this manner they may be folded up without Damage, till they come to be dreſſ'd according to Art.

The Indians dreſs them with Deer's Brains, and ſo do the Engliſh here by their example. For Expedition's Sake they often Stretch their Skins over Smoak in order to dry them, which makes them ſmell ſo diſagreeably that a Rat muſt have a good Stomach to gnaw them in that condition; nay, 'tis ſaid, while that Perfume continues in a Pair of Leather Breeches, the Perſon that wears them will be in no Danger of that Villainous little inſect the French call Morpion. And now I am upon the ſubject of Inſects, it may not be improper to mention ſome few Remedies againſt thoſe that are moſt Vexatious in this Climate. There are two Sorts without Doors, that are great Nuiſances, the Tikes, and the Horſe Flies. The Tikes are either Deer-

tikes, or thoſe that annoy the Cattle. The firſt kind are long, and take a very Strong Gripe, being moſt in remote Woods, above the Inhabitants. 1729 Nov.

The other are round, and more gently inſinuate themſelves into the Fleſh, being in all places where Cattle are frequent. Both theſe Sorts are apt to be troubleſome during the Warm Seaſon, but have ſuch an Averſion to Penny Royal, that they will attaque no Part that is rubb'd with the Juice of that fragrant Vegetable. And a Strong Decoction of this is likewiſe the moſt effectual Remedy againſt Seed-tikes, which bury themſelves in your Legs, when they are ſo ſmall you can hardly diſcern them without a MICROSCOPE.

The Horſe Flies are not only a great Grievance to Horſes, but likewiſe to thoſe that ride them. Theſe little Vixons confine themſelves chiefly to the Woods, and are moſt in moiſt Places. Tho' this Inſect be no bigger than an Ordinary Fly, it bites very Smartly, darting its little Proboſcis into the Skin the inſtant it lights upon it. Theſe are offenſive only in the hot months, and in the Day time, when they are a great Nuiſance to Travellers; inſomuch that it is no Wonder they were formerly employed for one of the Plagues of Egypt. But Dittany, which is to be had in the Woods all the while thoſe Inſects remain in Vigor, is a Sure Defenſe againſt them. For this purpoſe, if you ſtick a Bunch of it on the Head-Stall of your Bridle, they will be ſure to keep a reſpectful Diſtance.

Thus, in what part of the Woods ſoever any thing miſchievous or troubleſome is found, kind Providence is ſure to provide a Remedy. And 'tis probably one great Reaſon why God was pleaſ'd to create theſe, and many other Vexatious Animals, that Men ſho'd exerciſe their Wits and Induſtry, to guard themſelves againſt them.

Bears' Oyl is uſed by the Indians as a General Defence, againſt every Species of Vermin. Among the reſt, they ſay it

1729 Nov. keeps both Bugs and Muſquetas from aſſaulting their Perſons, which wou'd otherwiſe devour Such uncleanly People. Yet Bears' Greaſe has no ſtrong Smell, as that Plant had which the Egyptians formerly uſ'd againſt muſquetas, reſembling our palma Chriſti, the Juice of which ſmelled ſo diſagreeably, that the Remedy was worſe than the Diſeaſe.

Againſt muſquetas, in Egypt, the Richer Sort uſ'd to build lofty Towers, with Bed-chambers in the Tops of them, that they might reſt undiſturbed. 'Tis certain that theſe Inſects are no High Fliers, becauſe their Wings are weak and their Bodies ſo light, that if they mount never ſo little, the wind blows them quite away from their Courſe, and they become an eaſy prey to the Martins, Eaſt India Bats, and other Birds that fly about in continual Queſt of them.

8 As we had twice more to croſs the Dan over two fords, that lay no more than 7 miles from each other, we judg'd the Diſtance wou'd not be much greater to go round the Bent of it. Accordingly we ſent the Indian and two white Men that way, who came up with us in the Evening, after fetching a compaſs of about 12 Miles.

They told us that, about a mile from our laſt Camp, they paſſed a creek fortify'd with Steep Cliffs, which therefore gain'd the name of Cliff Creek. Near 3 miles beyond that they forded a Second Creek, on the Margin of which grew abundance of Tall canes and this was call'd Hix's creek, from one of the Diſcoverers. Between theſe two creeks lies a level of exceeding rich Land, full of large Trees, and cover'd with black Mould, as fruitful, if we believe them, as that which is yearly overflow'd by the Nile.

We who marched the neareſt way upon the Line found the Ground riſing and falling between the two Fords of the Dan, which almoſt broke our own Wind, and the Hearts of our Jaded Palfreys. When we had paſſed the laſt Ford, it was a Senſible

Joy to find ourſelves Safe over all the Waters that might cut off our Retreat. And we had the greater Reaſon to be Thankfull, becauſe ſo late in the Year it was very unuſual to find the rivers ſo fordable. 1729 Nov.

We catcht a large Tarapin in the River, which is one kind of Turtle. The fleſh of it is wholeſome, and good for Conſumptive People. It lays a great Number of Eggs, not larger but rounder than thoſe of Pigeons. Theſe are Soft, but withal ſo tough that 'tis difficult to break them, yet are very Sweet and invigorating, ſo that ſome Wives recommend them earneſtly to their Huſbands.

One of the Men, by an Overſtrain, had unhappily got a Running of the Reins, for which I gave him every Morning a Little Sweet Gumm diſſolv'd in Water, with good ſucceſs. This gumm diſtils from a large Tree, call'd the Sweet-Gum Tree, very Common in Virginia, and is as healing in its Virtue as Balm of Gilead, or the Balſams of Tolu and of Peru. It is likewiſe a moſt Agreeable parfume, very little inferior to Ambergris.

And now I have mention'd Ambergris, I hope it will not be thought an unprofitable digreſſion, to give a faithful Account how it is produced, in Order to reconcile the various Opinions concerning it. It is now certainly found to be the Dung of the Sper Maceti Whale, which is at firſt very black and unſavoury. But after having been waſht for ſome Months in the Sea, and blanch'd in the Sun, it comes at length to be of a Gray colour, and from a moſt offenſive Smell, contracts the fineſt fragrancy in the World.

Beſides the Fragrancy of this Animal Subſtance, 'tis a very rich and innocent Cordial, which raiſes the ſpirits without Stupifying them afterwards, like Opium, or intoxicating them like Wine. The Animal Spirits are amazingly refreſhed by this Cordial, without the Danger of any ill conſequence, and if Huſ-

1729 Nov. bands were now and then to diſſolve a little of it in their Broth, their Conſorts might be the better for it, as well as themſelves. In the Bahama iſlands (where a great Quantity is found, by reaſon the Sperma Ceti Whales reſort thither continually,) it is uſ'd as an Antidote againſt the Venomous Fiſh which abound thereabouts, wherewith the People are apt to Poiſon themſelves.

We are not only oblig'd to that Whale for this rich parfume, but alſo for the Sper Maceti itſelf, which is the Fat of that Fiſh's Head boil'd and purg'd from all its impuritys. What remains is of a balſamick and deterſive Quality, very friendly to the Lungs, and uſefull in many other Caſes.

The Indian had kill'd a fat Doe in the compaſs he took round the Elbow of the River, but was content to Prime it only, by reaſon it was too far off to lug the whole Carcaſs upon his Back. This, and a Brace of Wild Turkeys which our Men had Shot, made up all our Bill of Fare this Evening, but could only afford a Philoſophical Meal to ſo many craving Stomachs.

The Horſes were now ſo lean that any thing would gall thoſe that carry'd the leaſt Burthen; no wonder then if Several of them had ſore Backs, eſpecially now the Pads of the Saddles and Packs were preſſ'd flat with long and conſtant Uſe. This would have been another Misfortune, had we not been provided with an eaſy Remedy for it.

One of the Commiſſioners, believing that Such Accidents might happen in a far Journey, had furniſht himſelf with Plaſters of Strong Glue ſpread pretty thick. We laid on theſe, after making them running hot, which, Sticking faſt, never fell off till the Sore was perfectly heal'd. In the mean time it defended the part ſo well, that the Saddle might bear upon it without Danger of further Injury.

9 We reckon'd our Selves now pretty well out of the Latitude of Bears, to the great Grief of moſt of the company. There

was Still Maſt enough left in the Woods to keep the Bears from drawing ſo near to the Inhabitants. They like not the neighbourhood of Mercileſs Man, till Famine compels them to it. 1729 Nov. They are all Black in this part of the World, and ſo is their Dung, but it will make Linnen white, being tolerably good Soap, without any Preparation but only drying.

Theſe Bears are of a Moderate Size, whereas within the Polar Circles they are white, and much larger. Thoſe of the Southern Parts of Muſcovy are of a Ruſſet Colour, but among the SAMOEIDS, as well as in GREENLAND and NOVA ZEMBLA, they are as white as the ſnow they converſe with, and by ſome Accounts are as large as a Moderate Ox.

The Exceſſive Cold of that Climate ſets their Appetites ſo Sharp, that they will Attack a Man without Ceremony, and even climb up a Ship's Side to come at him. They range about and are very Miſchievous all the time the Sun is above the Horizon, which is ſomething more than Five Months; but after the Sun is Set for the reſt of the Year, they retire into Holes, or bury themſelves under the Snow, and Sleep away the Dark Seaſon without any Suſtenance at all. 'Tis pitty our Beggars and Pickpockets Cou'd not do the Same.

Our Journey this day was above 12 Miles, and more than half the way terribly hamper'd with Buſhes. We tir'd another Horſe, which we were oblig'd to leave two miles ſhort of where we Encampt, and indeed Several others were upon the Careen almoſt every Step. Now we wanted one of thoſe celebrated Muſicians of Antiquity, who, they tell us, among many other Wonders of their Art, cou'd play an air which, by its Animateing Briſkneſs wou'd make a Jaded Horſe caper and curvet much better than any Whip, Spur, or even than Swearing. Tho' I fear our poor Beaſts were ſo haraſt that it wou'd have been beyond the Skill of Orpheus himſelf ſo much as to make them prick up their ears.

1729 Nov. For Proof of the Marvellous Power of Muſic among the Ancients, ſome Hiſtorians ſay, that one of thoſe Skilful Maſters took upon him to make the great Alexander ſtart up from his Seat, and handle his Javelin, whether he would or not, by the force of a ſprightly Tune, which he knew how to play to Him. The King ordered the man to bring his Inſtrument, and then fixing himſelf firmly in his chair, and determining not to Stir, he bade him to Strike up as ſoon as he pleaſ'd. The Muſician obey'd, and preſently rouſ'd the Hero's Spirits with ſuch War-like Notes, that he was conſtrain'd, in Spite of all his Reſolution, to ſpring up and fly to his Javelin with great martial Fury.

We can the eaſier credit theſe Prophane Stories by what we find recorded in the Oracles of Truth, where we are told the Wonders David performed by Sweetly touching his Harp. He made nothing of driving the Evil Spirit out of Saul, tho' a certain rabbi aſſures us he could not do ſo much by his Wife, MICHAL, when ſhe happen'd to be in her Ayrs.

The greateſt Inſtance we have of the Power of Modern Muſic is that which cures thoſe who in Italy are bitten by the little Spider called the Tarantula. The whole method of which is perform'd in the following manner.

In Apulia it is a common Misfortune for People to be bitten by the Tarantula, and moſt about Taranto and Gallipoli. This is a gray ſpider, not very large, with a narrow Streak of white along the Back. It is no wonder there are many of theſe Villainous Inſects, becauſe, by a Ridiculous Superſtition 'tis accounted great Inhumanity to kill them. They believe, it ſeems, that if the Spider come to a Violent Death, all thoſe who had been bitten by it will certainly have a Return of their Frenzy every Year as long as they live. But if it dye a Natural Death, the Patient will have a chance to recover in two or three Years.

The Bite of the tarantula gives no more pain than the Bite of a muſqueta, and makes little or no inflammation on the Part,

eſpecially when the Diſaſter happens in April or May; but, its Venom encreaſing with the Heat of the Seaſon, has more fatal Conſequences in July and Auguſt. The Perſons who are ſo unhappy as to be bitten in thoſe Warm Months, fall down on the Place in a few Minutes, and lye ſenſeleſs for a conſiderable time, and when they come to themſelves feel horrible Pains, are very Sick at their Stomachs, and in a Short time break out into foul Sores; but thoſe who are bitten in the Milder Months have much gentler Symptoms. They are longer before the Diſtemper Shows itſelf, and then they have a ſmall Diſorder in their Senſes, are a little ſick, and perhaps have ſome Moderate Breakings-out. 1729 Nov.

However, in both caſes, the Patient keeps upon the Bed, not caring to ſtir, till he is rouſ'd by a Tune, proper for his particular caſe. Therefore, as ſoon as the Symptoms diſcover themſelves, a Tarantula Doctor is ſent for, who, after viewing carefully the condition of the Perſon, firſt tries one Tune and then another, until he is ſo fortunate as to hit the Phrenetic turn of the Patient. No ſooner does this happen but he begins to Wag a finger, then a Hand, and afterwards a Foot, till at laſt he ſprings up and dances Round the Room, with a Surpriſing Agility, rolling his Eyes and looking wild the whole time. This dancing-Fit laſts commonly about 25 minutes, by which time he will be all in a Lather. Then he ſits down, falls a laughing, and returns to his Senſes. So Plentiful a Perſpiration diſcharges ſo much of the Venom as will keep off the Return of the Diſtemper for a whole Year. Then it will Viſit Him again, and muſt be remov'd in the Same Merry Manner. But three dancing Bouts will do the Buſineſs, unleſs, peradventure, the Spider, according to the Vulgar Notion, has been put to a Violent Death.

The Tunes play'd to expell this Whimſicall Diſorder, are of the Jigg-kind, and exceed not 15 in number. The Apulians are frequently dancing off the Effects of this Poiſon, and no Remedy is more commonly apply'd to any other Diſtemper elſe-

1729 Nov. where, than thoſe Sprightly Tunes are to the Bite of the Tarantula in that part of Italy.

It is remarkable that theſe Spiders have a greater Spight to the Natives of the Place than they have to Strangers, and Women are oftener bitten than Men. Tho' there may be a Reaſon for the laſt, becauſe Women are more confin'd to the Houſe, where theſe Spyders keep, and their coats make them liable to Attacks unſeen, whereas the Men can more eaſily diſcover, and bruſh them off their Legs. Nevertheleſs, both Sexes are cur'd the Same way, and thereby Show the Wonderful Effects of Muſic.

Conſidering how far we had walkt, and conſequently how hungry we were, we found but Short commons when we came to our Quarters. One Brace of Turkeys was all the Game we cou'd meet with, which almoſt needed a Miracle to enable them to Suffice ſo many Voracious Appetites. However, they juſt made a Shift to keep Famine, and conſequently Mutiny, out of the Camp. At Night we lodg'd upon the Banks of Buffalo Creek, where none of us cou'd complain of loſs of Reſt, for having eaten too heavy and Luxurious a Supper.

10 In a Dearth of Proviſions our Chaplain pronounc'd it lawful to make bold with the Sabbath, and ſend a Party out a-Hunting. They fired the Dry Leaves in a Ring of five Miles' circumference, which, burning inwards, drove all the Game to the Centre, where they were eaſily killed.

It is really a pitiful Sight to ſee the extreme Diſtreſs the poor deer are in, when they find themſelves Surrounded with this Circle of Fire; they weep and Groan like a Human Creature, yet can't move the compaſſion of thoſe hard-hearted People, who are about to murder them. This unmerciful Sport is called Fire Hunting, and is much practic'd by the Indians and Frontier Inhabitants, who ſometimes, in the Eagerneſs of their Diverſion, are Puniſh't for their cruelty, and are hurt by one another when they Shoot acroſs at the Deer which are in the Middle.

What the Indians do now by a Circle of Fire, the ancient Perſians performed formerly by a circle of Men: and the ſame is practiſ'd at this day in Germany upon extraordinary Occaſions, when any of the Princes of the Empire have a Mind to make a General Hunt, as they call it. At ſuch times they order a vaſt Number of People to Surround a whole Territory. Then Marching inwards in cloſe Order, they at laſt force all the Wild Beaſts into a Narrow Compaſs, that the Prince and his Company may have the Diverſion of Slaughtering as many as they pleaſe with their own hands. 1729 Nov.

Our Hunters maſſacred two Brace of Deer after this unfair way, of which they brought us one Brace whole, and only the Primings of the reſt. So many were abſent on this Occaſion, that we who remained excuſ'd the Chaplain from the Trouble of ſpending his Spirits by Preaching to ſo thin a Congregation. One of the men, who had been an old Indian Trader, brought me a Stem of Silk Graſs, which was about as big as my little Finger. But, being ſo late in the Year that the Leaf was fallen off, I am not able to deſcribe the Plant.

The Indians uſe it in all their little Manufactures, twiſting a Thread of it that is prodigiouſly Strong. Of this they make their Baſkets and the Aprons which their Women wear about their Middles, for Decency's Sake. Theſe are long enough to wrap quite round them and reach down to their Knees, with a Fringe on the under part by way of Ornament.

They put on this modeſt covering with ſo much art, that the moſt impertinent curioſity can't in the Negligenteſt of their Motions or Poſtures make the leaſt diſcovery. As this ſpecies of Silk Graſs is much Stronger than Hemp, I make no doubt but Sail Cloth and Cordage might be made of it with conſiderable Improvement.

We had all been ſo refreſht by our day of reſt, that we decamp'd earlier than Ordinary, and paſſed the Several Fords of 11

1729 Nov. Hico River. The Woods were thick great Part of this Day's Journey, ſo that we were forced to ſcuffle hard to advance 7 miles, being equal in fatigue to double that diſtance of Clear and Open Grounds.

We took up our Quarters upon Sugar-tree Creek, in the ſame camp we had lain in when we came up, and happen'd to be entertained at Supper with a Rarity we had never had the fortune to meet with before, during the whole Expedition.

A little wide of this creek, one of the men had the Luck to meet with a Young Buffalo of two Years Old. It was a Bull, which, notwithſtanding he was no older, was as big as an ordinary Ox. His Legs are very thick and very Short, and his Hoofs exceeding broad. His Back roſe into a kind of Bunch a little above the Shoulders, which I believe contributes not a little to that creature's enormous Strength. His Body is vaſtly deep from the ſhoulders to the Briſket, ſometimes 6 feet in thoſe that that are full grown. The portly figure of this Animal is diſgrac'd by a Shabby little Tail, not above 12 Inches long. This he cocks up on end whenever he's in a Paſſion, and, inſtead of lowing or bellowing, grunts with no better grace than a Hog.

The Hair growing on his Head and Neck is long and Shagged, and ſo Soft that it will Spin into Thread not unlike Mohair, which might be wove into a Sort of Camlet. Some People have Stockings knit of it, that would have ſerv'd an Iſraelite during his forty Years' march thro' the Wilderneſs.

Its horns are ſhort and Strong, of which the Indians make large Spoons, which they ſay will Split and fall to Pieces whenever Poiſon is put into them. Its Colour is a dirty Brown, and its hide ſo thick that it is Scarce penetrable. However, it makes very Spongy Sole Leather by the ordinary method of Tanning, tho' this fault might by good Contrivance be mended.

As thick as this poor Beaſt's Hide was, a Bullet made Shift

to enter it and fetch him down. It was found all alone, tho' Buf- 1729
faloes Seldom are. They uſually range about in Herds, like other Nov.
cattle, and, tho' they differ ſomething in figure, are certainly of the Same Species. There are two Reaſons for this Opinion: the Fleſh of both has exactly the ſame taſte, and the mixed Breed betwixt both, they ſay, will generate. All the Difference I could perceive between the Fleſh of Buffalo and Common Beef was, that the Fleſh of the firſt was much Yellower than that of the other, and the Lean ſomething tougher.

The Men were ſo delighted with this new dyet, that the Gridiron and Frying-Pan had no more reſt all night, than a poor Huſband Subject to Curtain Lectures. Buffaloes may be eaſily tamed when they are taken Young. The beſt way to catch them is to carry a Milch Mare into the Woods, and when you find a Cow and Calf, to kill the Cow, and then having catch'd the Calf, to Suckle it upon the Mare. After once or twice Sucking Her, it will follow her Home, and become as gentle as another calf.

If we cou'd get into a breed of them, they might be made very uſefull, not only for the Dairy, by giving an Ocean of Milk, but alſo for drawing vaſt and cumberſome Weights by their prodigious Strength. Theſe, with the other Advantages I mention'd before, wou'd make this ſort of Cattle more profitable to the owner, than any other we are acquainted with, though they would need a world of Provender.

Before we marcht this Morning, every man took care to pack 12
up ſome Buffalo Steaks in his Wallet, beſides what he crammed into his Belly. When Proviſions were Plenty, we always found it Difficult to get out early, being too much Embarraſt with a long-winded Breakfaſt.

However, by the Strength of our Beef, we made a ſhift to walk about 12 Miles, croſſing Blewing and Tewaw-homini Creeks.

1729 Nov. And becauſe this laſt Stream receiv'd its Appellation from the Diſaſter of a Tuſcarora Indian, it will not be Straggling much out of the way to ſay ſomething of that Particular Nation.

Theſe Indians were heretofore very numerous and powerful, making, within time of Memory, at leaſt a Thouſand Fighting Men. Their Habitation, before the War with Carolina, was on the North Branch of Neuſe River, commonly call'd Conecta Creek, in a pleaſant and fruitful Country. But now the few that are left of that Nation live on the North Side of Moratuck, which is all that Part of Roanok below the great Falls, towards Albemarle Sound.

Formerly there were Seven Towns of theſe Savages, lying not far from each other, but now their Number is greatly reduc'd.

The Trade they have had the Misfortune to drive with the Engliſh has furniſht them conſtantly with Rum, which they have uſed ſo immoderately, that, what with the Diſtempers, and what with the Quarrels it begat amongſt them, it has proved a double Deſtruction.

But the greateſt Conſumption of theſe ſavages happen'd by the war about Twenty-Five years ago, on Account of ſome Injuſtice the Inhabitants of that Province had done them about their Lands.

It was on that Provocation they reſented their wrongs a little too ſeverely upon Mr. Lawſon, who, under Colour of being Surveyor gen'l, had encroacht too much upon their Territories, at which they were ſo enrag'd, that they waylaid him, and cut his Throat from Ear to Ear, but at the ſame time releaſ'd the Baron de Graffenried, whom they had Seized for Company, becauſe it appear'd plainly he had done them no Wrong.

This Blow was followed by ſome other Bloody Actions on the Part of the Indians, which brought on the War, wherein many of them were but off, and many were oblig'd to flee for Refuge to the Senecas, ſo that now there remain ſo few, that

they are in Danger of bing quite exterminated by the Catawbas, their mortal Enemies. 1729 Nov.

Theſe Indians have a very odd Tradition amongſt them, that many years ago, their Nation was grown ſo diſhoneſt, that no man cou'd keep any Goods, or ſo much as his loving Wife to himſelf. That, however, their God, being unwilling to root them out for their crimes, did them the honour to ſend a Meſſenger from Heaven to inſtruct them, and ſet Them a perfect Example of Integrity and kind Behavior towards one another.

But this holy Perſon, with all his Eloquence and Sanctity of Life, was able to make very little Reformation amongſt them. Some few Old Men did liſten a little to his Wholeſome Advice, but all the Young fellows were quite incorrigible. They not only Neglected his Precepts, but derided and Evil Entreated his Perſon. At laſt, taking upon Him to reprove ſome Young Rakes of the Conechta Clan very ſharply for their impiety, they were ſo provok'd at the Freedom of his Rebukes, that they tied him to a Tree, and ſhot him with Arrows through the Heart. But their God took inſtant Vengeance on all who had a hand in that Monſtrous Act, by Lightning from Heaven, & has ever ſince viſited their Nation with a continued Train of Calamities, nor will he ever leave off puniſhing, and waſting their People, till he ſhall have blotted every living Soul of them out of the World.

Our Hunters ſhot nothing this whole day but a ſtraggling Bear, which happen'd to fall by the Hand of the very Perſon who had been lately diſarm'd and put to flight, for which he declar'd War againſt the whole Species.

We purſued our Journey with all Diligence, and forded 13
Ohimpamony Creek about Noon, and from thence proceeded to Yatapſco, which we cou'd not croſs without difficulty. The Beavers had dammed up the Water much higher than we found

1729 Nov. it at our going up, ſo that we were oblig'd to lay a Bridge over a part that was ſhallower than the reſt, to facilitate our paſſage.

Beavers have more of Inſtinct, that Half-Brother of Reaſon, than any other Animal, eſpecially in matters of Self-Preſervation. In their Houſes they always contrive a Sally-Port, both towards the Land and towards the Water, that ſo they may eſcape by One, if their Retreat ſhou'd happen to be cut off at the other.

They perform all their Works in the Dead of Night, to avoid Diſcovery, and are kept diligently to it by the Maſter Beaver, which by his age or ſtrength has gain'd to himſelf an Authority over the reſt. If any of the Gang happen to be lazy, or will not exert himſelf to the utmoſt in felling of Trees, or dragging them the place where they are made uſe of, this Superintendent will not fail to chaſtiſe him with the Flat of the Tail, wherewith he is able to give unmerciful ſtrokes.

They lie Snug in their Houſes all day, unleſs ſome unneighbourly Miller chance to diſturb their repoſe, by demoliſhing their Dams for ſupplying his Mill with Water.

It is rare to ſee one of them, and the Indians for that Reaſon have hardly any way to take them, but by laying Snares near the place where they dam up the Water. But the Engliſh Hunters have found out a more effectual Method, by uſing the following receipt. Take the Large Pride of the Beaver, Squeeze all the Juice out of it, then take the ſmall Pride, and Squeeze out about 5 or 6 Drops. Take the inſide of Saſſafras Bark, Powder it, and mix it with the Liquor, and place this Bait conveniently for your Steel Trap.

The Story of their biting off their Teſticles to compound for their Lives, when they are purſued, is a ſtory taken upon truſt by Pliny, like many others. Nor is it the Beavers' Teſticles that carry the Perfume, but they have a Pair of Glands juſt within the Fundament, as Sweet as Muſk, that perfume their Dung,

and communicate a ſtrong ſcent to their Teſticles, by being plac'd near them. 1729 Nov.

It is true Several creatures have Strange inſtincts for their Preſervation, as the Egyptian Frog, we are told by Elian, will carry a whole Joint of a Reed acroſs its Mouth, that it may not be ſwallow'd by the ibis.

And this Long-neckt fowl will give itſelf a elyſter with its Beak, whenever it finds itſelf too coſtive or feveriſh. The Dogs of that Country lap the Water of the Nile in a full Trot, that they may not be Snapped by the Crocodiles. Both Beavers and Wolves, we know, when one of their Legs is caught in a Steel Trap, will bite it off, that they may eſcape with the reſt. The Fleſh of the Beavers is tough and dry, all but the Tail, which, like the Parrot's Tongue, was one of the far-fetched Rarities with which Heliogabalus uſed to furniſh his Luxurious Table.

The Fur of theſe creatures is very valuable, eſpecially in the more Northern Countries, where it is longer and finer. This the Dutch have lately contriv'd to mix with their Wool, and Weave into a Sort of Drugget, that is not only warm, but wonderfully light and Soft. They alſo make Gloves and Stockings of it, that keep out the Cold almoſt as well as the Fur itſelf, and do not look quite ſo Savage.

There is a deal of Rich low Ground on Yapatſco Creek, but I believe liable to be overflow'd in a freſh. However, it might be proper enough for Rice, which receives but little Injury from Water.

We encampt on the Banks of Maſſamony Creek, after a Journey of more than 11 Miles. By the way we Shot a fat Doe and a wild Turkey, which fed us all plentifully. And we have reaſon to ſay, by our own happy Experience, that no man need to deſpair of his daily Bread in the Woods, whoſe faith is but half ſo large as his Stomach.

1729 Nov. 14 Being at length happily arriv'd within 20 Miles of the uppermoſt Inhabitants, we deſpacht two Men who had the ableſt Horſes, to go before, and get a Beef kill'd and ſome Bread bak'd to refreſh their Fellow Travellers, upon their arrival. They had likewiſe Orders to hire an expreſs to carry a Letter to the Governor, giving an Account that we were all returned in Safety. This was the more neceſſary, becauſe we had been ſo long abſent that many now began to fear we were, by this time, Scalpt and barbacu'd by the Indians.

We decampt with the reſt of the People about ten a clock, and marched near 12 Miles. In our way we Croſt Nutbuſh Creek, and 4 Miles farther we came upon a beautiful Branch of Great Creek, where we took up our Quarters. The Tent was pitched upon an Eminence, which overlookt a wide Piece of low Grounds, cover'd with Reeds and watered by a Cryſtal Stream, gliding thro' the Middle of it. On the Other Side of this delightful Valley, which was about half a Mile wide, roſe a Hill that terminated the View, and in the figure of a Semicircle cloſed in upon the oppoſite Side of the Valley. This had a moſt agreeable Effect upon the Eye, and wanted nothing but Cattle grazing in the Meadow, and Sheep and Goats feeding on the Hill, to make it a Compleat Rural LANDSCAPE.

The Indian kill'd a Fawn, which, being upon its growth, was not fat, but made ſome amends by being tender. He alſo Shot an Otter, but our People were now better fed than to eat ſuch Coarſe Food. The truth of it is, the Fleſh of this Creature has a rank Fiſhy taſte, and for that reaſon might be a proper Regale for the Samoeids, who drink the CZAR OF MUSCOVY'S health and toaſt their Miſtreſſes in a Bumper of Train Oil.

The Carthuſians, to ſave their Vow of eating no Fleſh, pronounce this Amphibious Animal to be a Fiſh, and feed upon it as ſuch, without Wounding their Conſciences.

The Skin of the Otter is very Soft, and the Swedes make

Caps and Socks of it, not only for Warmth, but alſo becauſe they fancy it Strengthens the Nerves, and is good againſt all Diſtempers of the Brain. 1729 Nov.

The otter is a great Devourer of Fiſh, which are its Natural Food, and whenever it betakes itſelf to a Vegetable Dyet, it is as ſome high-Spirited Wives obey their Huſbands, by pure Neceſſity. They dive after their Prey, tho' they can't continue long under Water, but thruſt their Noſes up to the Surface now and then for Breath. They are great Enemies to Weirs Set up in the Rivers to catch Fiſh, devouring or biting to pieces all they find there. Nor is it either eaſy to fright them from this kind of Robbery, or to deſtroy them. The beſt way I cou'd ever find was to float an Old Wheel juſt by the Weir, and ſo ſoon as the Otter has taken a large Fiſh, he will get upon the Wheel to eat it more at his eaſe, which may give you an Opportunity of firing upon him from the Shoar.

One of our People Shot a large Gray Squirrel with a very Buſhy Tail, a ſingular uſe of which our merry Indian diſcover'd to us. He ſaid whenever this little Animal has occaſion to croſs a run of Water, he launches a Chip or Piece of Bark into the Water, on which he embarks, and, holding up his Tail to the wind, he Sails over very Safely. If This be true, it is probable men learnt at firſt the uſe of Sails from theſe ingenious little Animals, as the Hottentots learnt the Phyſical uſe of moſt of their Plants from the Baboons.

About three Miles from our Camp we paſſed GREAT CREEK, 15 and then, after traverſing very barren grounds for 5 Miles together, we croſt the Tradeing Path, and ſoon after had the pleaſure of reaching the uppermoſt Inhabitant. This was a Plantation belonging to colonel Mumford, where our Men almoſt burſt themſelves with Potatoes and Milk. Yet as great a Curioſity as a Houſe was to us Foreſters, ſtill we choſe to lie in the Tent, as being much the cleaner and ſweeter Lodging.

1729 Nov. The Tradeing Path above-mention'd receives its Name from being the Route the Traders take with their Caravans, when they go to traffick with the Catawbas and other Southern Indians. The Catawbas live about 250 Miles beyond Roanoke River, and yet our Traders find their Account in tranſporting Goods from Virginia to trade with them at their own Towne.

The Common Method of carrying on this Indian Commerce is as follows: Gentlemen ſend for Goods proper for ſuch a Trade from England, and then either Venture them out at their own Riſk to the Indian Towns, or elſe credit ſome Traders with them of Subſtance and Reputation, to be paid in Skins at a certain Price agreed betwixt them.

The Goods for the Indian Trade conſiſt chiefly in Guns, Powder, Shot, Hatchets, (which the Indians call Tomahawks,) Kettles, red & blue Planes, Duffields, Stroudwater blankets, and ſome Cutlary Wares, Braſs Rings and other Trinkets.

Theſe Wares are made up into Packs and Carry'd upon Horſes, each Load being from 150 to 200 Pounds, with which they are able to travel about 20 Miles a day, if Forage happen to be plentiful.

Formerly a Hundred Horſes have been employ'd in one of theſe Indian Caravans, under the Conduct of 15 or 16 Perſons only, but now the Trade is much impair'd, inſomuch that they ſeldom go with half that Number.

The Courſe from Roanoke to the Catawbas is laid down neareſt South-weſt, and lies thro' a fine Country, that is Water'd by Several beautiful Rivers.

Thoſe of the greateſt Note are, firſt, Tar river, which is the uppear Part of Pamptico, Flat river, Little river and Eno river, all three Branches of Neuſe.

Between Eno and Saxapahaw rivers are the Haw old fields, which have the Reputation of containing the moſt fertile high land in this part of the World, lying in a Body of about 50,000 acres.

This Saxapahaw is the upper Part of Cape Fair River, the falls of which lye many Miles below the Trading Path. 1729 Nov.

Some Mountains overlook this Rich Spot of Land, from whence all the Soil waſhes down into the Plane, and is the Cauſe of its exceeding Fertility. Not far from thence the Path croſſes ARAMANCHY River, a branch of Saxapahaw, and about 40 Miles beyond that, Deep River, which is the N Branch of Pedee. Then 40 miles beyond that, the Path interſects the Yadkin, which is there half a Mile over, and is ſuppoſed to be the South Branch of the ſame Pedee.

The Soil is exceedingly rich on both ſides the Yadkin, abounding in rank Graſs and prodigiouſly large Trees; and for plenty of Fiſh, Fowl and Veniſon, is inferior to No Part of the Northern Continent. There the Traders commonly lie Still for ſome days, to recruit their Horſes' Fleſh as well as to recover their own Spirits. Six Miles further is Crane Creek, ſo nam'd from its being the Rendezvous of great Armies of Cranes, which wage a more cruel War at this day, with the Frogs and the Fiſh, than they uſ'd to do with the Pigmies in the Days of Homer.

About three-ſcore Miles more bring you to the firſt Town of the Catawbas, call'd Nauvaſa, ſituated on the banks of Santee river. Beſides this Town there are five Others belonging to the ſame Nation, lying all on the ſame Stream, within the Diſtance of 20 Miles.

Theſe Indians were all call'd formerly by the general Name of the Uſherees, and were a very Numerous and Powerful People. But the frequent Slaughters made upon them by the Northern Indians, and, what has been ſtill more deſtructive by far, the Intemperance and Foul Diſtempers introduc'd amongſt them by the Carolina Traders, have now reduc'd their Numbers to little More than 400 Fighting Men, beſides Women & Children. It is a charming Place where they live, the Air very Wholeſome, the Soil fertile, and the Winters ever mild and Serene.

1729 Nov. In Santee river, as in Several others of Carolina, a Small Kind of allegator is frequently ſeen, which perfumes the Water with a Muſky Smell. They Seldom exceed Eight Feet in Length in theſe parts, whereas, near the Equinoctial, they come up to twelve or Fourteen. And the heat of the Climate don't only make them bigger, but more Fierce and Voracious. They watch the Cattle there when they come to drink and Cool themſelves in the River; and becauſe they are not able to drag them into the Deep Water, they make up by Stratagem what they want in Force. They Swallow great Stones, the Weight of which being added to their Strength, enables them to tug a Moderate Cow under Water, and as ſoon as they have drown'd her, they diſcharge the Stones out of their Maw and then feaſt upon the Carcaſs. However, as Fierce and as Strong as theſe Monſters are, the Indians will Surpriſe them Napping as they float upon the Surface, get aſtride upon their Necks, then whip a ſhort piece of wood like a Truncheon into their Jaws, & holding the Ends with their two hands, hinder them from diving by keeping their mouths open, and when they are almoſt Spent, they will make to the ſhoar, where their Riders knock them on the Head and Eat them. This Amphibious Animal is a Smaller kind of Crocodile, having the Same Shape exactly, only the Crocodile of the Nile is twice as long, being when full grown from 20 to Thirty Feet. This Enormous Length is the more to be wonder'd at, becauſe the Crocodile is hatcht from an Egg very little larger than that of a Gooſe. It has a long Head, which it can open very wide, with very Sharp & Strong teeth. Their Eyes are Small, their Legs Short, with Claws upon their Feet. Their Tail makes half the Length of their Body, and the whole is guarded with hard impenetrable Scales, except the Belly, which is much Softer and Smoother. They keep much upon the Land in the day time, but towards the Evening retire into the Water to avoid the Cold Dews of the Night. They run pretty

faſt right forward, but are very awkward and Slow in turning, by reaſon of their unwieldy Length. It is an Error that they have no Tongue, without which they cou'd hardly Swallow their Food; but in eating they move the upper Jaw only, Contrary to all other Animals. The way of catching them in Egypt is, with a Strong Hook fixt to the End of a chain and baited with a joynt of Pork, which they are very fond of. But a live Hog is generally tyed near, the Cry of which allures them to the Hook. This Account of the Crocodile will agree in moſt particulars with the Alligator, only the Bigneſs of the laſt cannot entitle it to the Name of "Leviathan," which Job gave formerly to the crocodile, and not to the Whale, as ſome Interpreters wou'd make us believe. 1729 Nov.

So Soon as the Catawba Indians are inform'd of the Approach of the Virginia Caravans, they ſend a Detachment of their Warriors to bid them Welcome, and eſcort them Safe to their Town, where they are receiv'd with great Marks of Diſtinction. And their Courteſys to the VIRGINIA Traders, I dare ſay, are very Sincere, becauſe they ſell them better Goods and better Pennyworths than the Traders of Carolina. They commonly reſide among the Indians till they have barter'd their Goods away for Skins, with which they load their Horſes and come back by the Same Path they went.

There are generally ſome Carolina Traders that conſtantly live among the Catawbas, and pretend to Exerciſe a dictatorial Authority over them. Theſe petty Rulers don't only teach the honeſter Savages all ſorts of Debauchery, but are unfair in their dealings, and uſe them with all kinds of Oppreſſion. Nor has their Behaviour been at all better to the reſt of the Indian Nations, among whom they reſide, by abuſing their Women and Evil-entreating their Men; and, by the way, this was the true Reaſon of the fatal War which the Nations roundabout made upon Carolina in the year 1713.

1729 Nov. Then it was that all the Neighbouring Indians, grown weary of the Tyranny and Injuſtice with which they had been abuſ'd for many Years, reſolv'd to endure their bondage no longer, but enter'd into General Confederacy againſt their Oppreſſors of Carolina.

The Indians open'd the War by knocking moſt of thoſe little Tyrants on the Head that dwelt amongſt them, under pretence of regulating their Commerce, and from thence Carry'd their Reſentment ſo far as to endanger both NORTH and SOUTH CAROLINA.

16 We gave Orders that the Horſes ſhou'd paſs Roanoak River at Moniſep Ford, while moſt of the Baggage was tranſported in a Canoe.

We landed at the Plantation of cornelius Keith, where I beheld the wretchedeſt Scene of Poverty I had ever met with in this happy Part of the World. The Man, his Wife and Six Small Children, liv'd in a Penn, like ſo many Cattle, without any Roof over their Heads but that of Heaven. And this was their airy Reſidence in the Day time, but then there was a Fodder Stack not far from this Incloſure, in which the whole Family ſhelter'd themſelves a night's and in bad weather.

However, 'twas almoſt worth while to be as poor as this Man was, to be as perfectly contented. All his Wants proceeded from Indolence, and not from Misfortune. He had good Land, as well as good Health and good Limbs to work it, and, beſides, had a Trade very uſeful to all the Inhabitants round about. He cou'd make and ſet up Quern Stones very well, and had proper Materials for that purpoſe juſt at Hand, if he cou'd have taken the pains to fetch them.

There is no other kind of Mills in thoſe remote parts, and, therefore, if the Man wou'd have Workt at his Trade, he might have liv'd very comfortably. The poor woman had a little

more Induſtry, and Spun Cotton enough to make a thin cover- 1729
ing for her own and her children's Nakedneſs. Nov.

I am ſorry to ſay it, but Idleneſs is the general character of the Men in the Southern Parts of this Colony as well as in North Carolina. The Air is ſo mild, and the ſoil ſo fruitful, that very little Labour is requir'd to fill their Bellies, eſpecially where the Woods afford ſuch Plenty of Game. Theſe advantages diſcharge the Men from the Neceſſity of killing themſelves with Work, and then for the other Article of Raiment, a very little of that will ſuffice in ſo temperate a Climate. But ſo much as is abſolutely Neceſſary falls to the good women's Share to provide. They all Spin, weave and knit, whereby they make a good Shift to cloath the whole Family; and to their credit be it recorded, many of them do it very completely, and thereby reproach their Huſbands' Lazineſs in the moſt inoffenſive way, that is to ſay, by diſcovering a better Spirit of Induſtry in themſelves.

From thence we mov'd forward to Colo Mumford's other Plantation, under the Care of Miles Riley, where, by that Gentleman's Directions, we were again Supply'd with many good things. Here it was we diſcharg'd our Worthy Friend and Fellow Travellaur, Mr. Bearſkin, who had ſo plentifully Supplyed us with Proviſions during our long Expedition. We rewarded Him to his Heart's content, ſo that he return'd to his Town loaden, both with Riches and the Reputation of haveing been a great Diſcoverer.

This being Sunday, we were Seaſonably put in mind how 17
much we were oblig'd to be thankfull for our happy return to the Inhabitants. Indeed, we had great reaſon to reflect with Gratitude on the Signal Mercies we had receiv'd. Firſt, that we had, day by day, been fed by the Bountifull hand of Providence in the deſolate Wilderneſs, Inſomuch that if any of our

1729 Nov. People wanted one Single Meal during the whole Expedition, it was intirely owing to their own imprudent Management.

Secondly, that not one Man of our whole Company, had any Violent Diſtemper or bad Accident Befall him, from One End of the Line to the other. The very worſt that happen'd was, that One of them gave himſelf a Smart cut on the Pan of his knee with a Tomahawk, which we had the good Fortune to cure in a Short time, without the help of a Surgeon.

As for the Miſadventures of Sticking in the Mire and falling into Rivers and Creeks, they were rather Subjects of Mirth than complaint, and ſerv'd only to diverſify our Travels with a little farcicall Variety. And, laſtly, that many uncommon Incidents have concurr'd to proſper our Undertaking. We had not only a dry Spring before we went out, but the preceding Winter, and even a Year or two before, had been much dryer than Ordinary. This made not only the Diſmal, but likewiſe moſt of the Sunken Grounds near the Sea-Side, juſt hard enough to bear us, which otherwiſe had been quite unpaſſible.

And the whole time we were upon the Buſineſs, which was in all about Sixteen Weeks, we were never catch't in the Rain except once, Nor was our Progreſs Interrupted by bad Weather above 3 or 4 days at moſt. Beſides all this, we were Surpriz'd by no Indian Enemy, but all of us brought our Scalps back Safe upon our Heads.

This cruel Method of Scalping of Enemies is practiſ'd by all the Savages in America, and perhaps is not the leaſt proof of their Original from the Northern Inhabitants of Aſia. Among the Ancient Scythians it was conſtantly uſ'd, who carry'd about theſe hairy Scalps as Trophies of Victory. They ſerv'd them too as Towels at home, and Trappings for their Horſes abroad. But theſe were not content with the Skin of their Enemies' Heads, but alſo made uſe of their Sculls for cups to drink out of

upon high Feſtival days, & made greater Oſtentation of them than if they had been made of Gold or the pureſt cryſtal. 1729 Nov.

Beſides the Duties of the Day, we chriſten'd one of our Men who had been bred a Quaker. The Man deſir'd this of his own mere Motion, without being tamper'd with by the Parſon, who was willing every one ſhou'd go to Heaven his own way. But whether he did it by the Conviction of his Own Reaſon, or to get rid of ſome Troubleſome Forms and Reſtraints, to which the Saints of that Perſwaſion are Subject, I can't Poſitively ſay.

We proceeded over a Levil Road 12 Miles, as far as George 18 Hixe's Plantation, on the South Side Meherrin River, Our Courſe being for the moſt part North-Eaſt. By the way we hired a Cart to tranſport our Baggage, that we might the better befriend our Jaded Horſes.

Within 2 Miles of our Journey's End this day, we met the Expreſs We had ſent the Saturday before to give Notice of our Arrival. He had been almoſt as Expeditious as a carrier Pigeon, rideing in 2 Days no leſs than 200 Miles.

All the Grandees of the Sappony Nation did us the Honour to repair hither to meet us, and our worthy Friend and Fellow Traveller, Bearſkin, appear'd among the graveſt of them in his Robes of ceremony. Four Young Ladies of the firſt Quality came with them, who had more the Air of cleanlineſs than any copper-Colour'd Beauties I had ever ſeen; Yet we reſiſted all their Charms, Notwithſtanding the long Faſt we had kept from the Sex, and the Bear Dyet we had been ſo long engag'd in. Nor can I ſay the Price they ſat upon their Charms was at all Exorbitant. A Princeſs for a Pair of Red Stockings can't, ſurely, be thought buying Repentance much too dear.

The Men had ſomething great and Venerable in their countenances, beyond the common Mien of Savages; and indeed they ever had the Reputation of being the Honeſteſt, as well as the braveſt Indians we have ever been acquainted with.

1729 Nov. This People is now made up of the Remnant of Several other Nations, of which the moſt conſiderable are the Sapponys, the Occaneches, and Steukenhocks, who not finding themſelves Separately Numerous enough for their Defence, have agreed to unite into one Body, and all of them now go under the Name of the Sapponys.

Each of theſe was formerly a diſtinct Nation, or rather a Several clan or Canton of the Same Nation, Speaking the Same Language, and uſing the ſame Cuſtoms. But their perpetual Wars againſt all other Indians, in time, reduc'd them ſo low as as to make it Neceſſary to join their Forces together.

They dwelt formerly not far below the Mountains, upon Yadkin River, about 200 Miles Weſt and by South from the Falls of Roanoak. But about 25 Years ago they took Refuge in Virginia, being no longer in condition to make Head not only againſt the Northern Indians, who are their Implacable enemies, but alſo againſt moſt of thoſe to the South. All the Nations round about, bearing in mind the Havock theſe Indians uſ'd formerly to make among their Anceſtors in the Inſolence of their Power, did at length avenge it Home upon them, and made them glad to apply to this Government for protection.

Colo Spotſwood, our then lieut. governor, having a good Opinion of their Fidelity & Courage, Settled them at Chriſtanna, ten Miles north of Roanoak, upon the belief that they wou'd be a good Barrier on that Side of the Country, againſt the Incurſion of all Foreign Indians. And in Earneſt they wou'd have Serv'd well enough for that Purpoſe, if the White People in the Neighbourhood had not debauch't their Morals, and ruin'd their Health with Rum, which was the Cauſe of many diſorders, and ended at laſt in a barbarous Murder committed by one of theſe Indians when he was drunk, for which the poor Wretch was executed when he was ſober.

It was matter of great Concern to them, however, that one of

their Grandees ſhould be put to ſo ignominious a Death. All Indians have as great an Averſion to hanging as the Muſcovites, tho' perhaps not for the ſame cleanly reaſon: Theſe laſt believing that the Soul of one that dies in this manner, being forc'd to Sally out of the Body at the Poſtern, muſt needs be defiled. The Sapponys took this Execution ſo much to Heart, that they ſoon after quitted their Settlement and remov'd in a Body to the Cataubas. 1729 Nov.

The Daughter of the TETERO KING went away with the Sapponys, but being the laſt of her Nation, and fearing ſhe Shou'd not be treated according to her Rank, poiſon'd herſelf, like an Old Roman, with the Root of the Trumpet-Plant. Her Father dy'd 2 Years before, who was the moſt intrepid Indian we have been acquainted with. He had made himſelf terrible to all other Indians by His Exploits, and had eſcaped ſo many Dangers that he was eſteem'd invulnerable. But at laſt he dy'd of a Pleuriſy, the laſt Man of his Race and Nation, leaving only that unhappy Daughter behind him, who would not long ſurvive Him.

The moſt uncommon Circumſtance in this Indian viſit Was, that they all came on Horſe-back, which was certainly intended for a Piece of State, becauſe the Diſtance was but 3 Miles, and 'tis likely they had walk't a foot twice as far to catch their Horſes. The Men rode more awkwardly than any Dutch Sailor, and the Ladies beſtrode their Palfreys a la mode de France, but were ſo baſhful about it, that there was no perſuading them to Mount till they were quite out of our Sight.

The French Women uſe to ride a-ſtraddle, not ſo much to make them ſit firmer in the Saddle, as from the hopes the ſame thing might peradventure befall them that once happen'd to the Nun of ORLEANS, who eſcaping out of a Nunnery, took Poſt en CAVALIER, and in ten Miles' hard rideing had the good Fortune to have all the Tokens of a Man break out upon her.

1729 Nov. This Piece of Hiſtory ought to be the more credible, becauſe it leans upon much the ſame Degree of Proof as the Tale of Biſhop Burnet's Two Italian NUNS, who, according to his Lordſhip's Account, underwent the Same happy Metamorphoſis, probably by ſome other Violent Exerciſe.

19 From hence we deſpatch't the Cart with our Baggage under a Guard, and croſſt MEHERRIN River, which was not 30 Yards wide in that Place. By the help of Freſh Horſes that had been ſent us, we now began to mend our Pace, which was alſo quicken'd by the Strong Inclinations we had to get Home.

In the Diſtance of 5 Miles we forded MEHERRIN creek, which was very near as broad as the River. About 8 Miles farther we came to STURGEON-Creek, ſo call'd from the Dexterity an OCCAANECHY Indian ſhewed there in Catching one of thoſe Royal Fiſh, which was perform'd after the following Manner.

In the Summer time 'tis no unuſual thing for Sturgeons to Sleep on the Surface of the Water, and one of them having wander'd up into this Creek in the Spring, was floating in that drowſy condition.

The Indian, above mention'd, ran up to the Neck into the Creek a little below the Place where he diſcover'd the Fiſh, expecting the Stream wou'd ſoon bring his Game down to Him. He judg'd the Matter right, and as Soon as it came within his Reach, he whip't a running Nooſe over his Jole. This waked the Sturgeon, which being Strong in its own Element darted immediately under Water and dragg'd the Indian after Him. The Man made it a Point of Honour to keep his Hold, which he did to the Apparent Danger of being drown'd. Sometimes both the Indian and the Fiſh diſappear'd for a Quarter of a Minute, & then roſe at ſome Diſtance from where they dived. At this rate they continued flouncing about, Sometimes above and ſometimes

under Water, for a conſiderable time, till at laſt the Hero Suffocated his Adverſary, and haled his Body aſhoar in Triumph. 1729 Nov.

About Six Miles beyond that, we paſſed over Wicco-quoi creek, Named ſo from the Multitude of Rocks over which the Water tumbles in a Freſh, with a bellowing Noiſe. Not far from where we went over, is a Rock much higher than the reſt, that Strikes the Eye with agreeable Horror, and near it a very Talkative Eccho, that, like a fluent Help-meet, will return her good Man Seven Words for one, & after all, be Sure to have the Laſt. It ſpeaks not only the Language of Men, but alſo of Birds & Beaſts, and often a Single Wild Gooſe is cheated into the Belief that Some of his Company are not far off, by hearing his own cry multiply'd; & 'tis pleaſant to ſee in what a flutter the Poor Bird is, when he finds himſelf diſappointed.

On the Banks of this creek are very broad low-Grounds in many Places, and abundance of good high-Land, tho' a little Subject to Floods.

We had but two Miles more to Capt. EMBRY's, where we found the Houſekeeping much better than the Houſe. Our Bountifull Landlady had ſet her Oven and all her Spits, Pots, Gridirons and Saucepans to work, to diverſify our Entertainment, tho' after all it prov'd but a Mahommetan Feaſt, there being Nothing to drink but Water. The worſt of it was, we had unluckily outrid the Baggage, and for that Reaſon were oblig'd to Lodge very Sociably in the Same Apartment with the Family, where, reckoning Women and Children, we muſter'd in all no leſs than Nine Perſons, who all pigg'd loveingly together.

In the Morning colo Bolling, who had been Surveying in the Neighbourhood, and Mr. Walker, who dwelt not far off, came to viſit us; And the laſt of theſe Worthy Gentlemen, fearing that our drinking ſo much Water might incline us to Pleuriſys, brought us a kind Supply both of Wine and cyder.

1729 Nov. It was Noon before we cou'd diſengage Ourſelves from the Courteſies of this Place, and then the two Gentlemen above-mention'd were ſo good as to accompany us that day's Journey, tho' they cou'd by no means approve of our LITHUANIAN Faſhion or Diſmounting now and then, in order to walk part of the way on foot.

We croſ't Nottoway River not far from our Landlord's Houſe, where it ſeem'd to be about 25 Yards over. This River divides the County of Prince George from that of BRUNSWICK. We had not gone 8 Miles farther before our Eyes were bleſſ'd with the Sight of Sapponi chappel, which was the firſt Houſe of Prayer we had ſeen for more than two calendar Months.

About 3 Miles beyond that, we paſſed over Stony Creek, where One of thoſe that Guarded the Baggage kill'd a Polcat, upon which he made a Comfortable Repaſt. Thoſe of his company were ſo SQUEAMISH they cou'd not be perſuaded at firſt to taſt, as they ſaid, of ſo unſavoury an Animal; but ſeeing the Man Smack his Lips with more pleaſure than uſual, they ventur'd at laſt to be of his Meſs, and inſtead of finding the Fleſh rank and high-taſted, they own'd it to be the Sweeteſt Morſel they had ever eat in their Lives.

The ill Savour of this little Beaſt lys altogether in its Urine, which Nature has made ſo deteſtably ill-ſcented on purpoſe to furniſh a helpleſs Creature with Something to defend itſelf. For as ſome Brutes have Horns and Hoofs, and others are arm'd with Claws, Teeth and Tuſhes for their Defence; and as Some Spit a Sort of Poiſon at their Adverſaries, like the Paco; and others dart Quills at their Purſuers, like the Porcupine; and as ſome have no Weapons to help themſelves but their Tongue, and others none but their Tails; ſo the poor Polcat's ſafety lies altogether in the irreſiſtible Stench of its Water; inſomuch that when it finds itſelf in Danger from an Enemy, it Moiſtens its buſhy Tail plentifully with this Liquid Ammunition, and, then

with great fury, Sprinkles it like a Shower of Rain full into the Eyes of its Aſſailant, by which it gains time to make its Eſcape. 1729 Nov.

Nor is the Polcat the only Animal that defends itſelf by a Stink. At the CAPE OF GOOD HOPE is a little Beaſt, call'd a Stinker, as big as a Fox, and Shap't like a Ferret, which being purſued has no way to ſave himſelf but by farting and Squittering. And then such a Stench enſues that None of its Purſuers can Poſſibly stand it.

At the End of 30 good Miles, we arriv'd in the Evening at colo Bolling's, where firſt, from a Primitive Courſe of Life, we began to relapſe into Luxury. This Gentleman lives within Hearing of the Falls of Appamatuck River, which are very Noiſy whenever a Flood happens to roll a greater ſtream than ordinary over the Rocks.

The River is Navigable for Small Craft as high as the Falls, and at Some diſtance from thence fetches a compaſs, and runs nearly parallel with James River almoſt as high as the Mountains.

While the commiſſioners fared Sumptuouſly here, the poor Chaplain and two Surveyors, ſtoppt Ten Miles Short at a poor Planter's Houſe, in Pity to their Horſes, made a Saint ANTHONY's Meal, that is, they Supp't upon the Pickings of what Stuck in their Teeth ever ſince Breakfaſt. But to make them amends, the good Man laid them in his own Bed, where they all three neſtled together in one cotton Sheet and one of Brown Oznabrugs, made Still Something Browner by two Months' Copious Perſpiration.

But thoſe worthy Gentlemen were ſo alert in the Morning 21 after their light Supper, that they came up with us before Breakfaſt, & honeſtly paid their Stomachs all they ow'd them.

We made no more than a Sabbath day's Journey from this to the next Hoſpitable Houſe, namely, that of our great Benefactor, Colo Mumford. We had already been much befriended by this

1729 Nov. Gentleman, who, beſides ſending Orders to his Overſeers at ROANOAK to let us want for nothing, had, in the Beginning of our Buſineſs, been ſo kind as to recommend moſt of the Men to us who were the faithfull Partners of our Fatigue.

Altho' in moſt other ATCHIEVEMENTS thoſe who command are apt to take all the HONOUR to themſelves of what perhaps was more owing to the Vigour of those who were under them, Yet I muſt be more juſt, and allow theſe brave Fellows their full Share of credit for the Service we perform'd, & muſt declare, that it was in a great Meaſure owing to their Spirit and indefatigable Induſtry that we overcame many Obſtacles in the Courſe of our Line, which till then had been eſteem'd unſurmountable.

Nor muſt I at the Same time omit to do Juſtice to the Surveyors, and particularly to Mr. Mayo, who, beſides an eminent degree of Skill, encounter'd the ſame Hardſhips and underwent the Same Fatigue that the forwardeſt of the Men did, and that with as much Chearfulneſs as if Pain had been his Pleaſure, and Difficulty his real Diverſion.

Here we diſcharg'd the few Men we had left, who were all as Ragged as the GIBEONITE AMBASSADORS, tho', at the Same time, their Rags were very honourable, by the Service they had ſo Vigorouſly performed in making them ſo.

22 A little before Noon we all took leave and diſperſ't to our Several Habitations, where we were ſo happy as to find all our Familys well. This crown'd all our other Bleſſings, and made our Journey as proſperous as it had been painfull.

Thus ended our Second Expedition, in which we extended the Line within the Shadow of the Chariky Mountains, where we were oblig'd to Set up our Pillars, like Hercules, and return Home.

We had now, upon the whole, been out Sixteen Weeks, including going and returning, and had travell'd at leaſt Six

Hundred Miles, and no Small part of that Diſtance on foot. Below, towards the Sea Side, our Courſe lay through MARSHES, SWAMPS, and great Waters; and above, over Steep HILLS, Craggy ROCKS, and Thickets, hardly penetrable. Notwithſtanding this variety of Hardſhips, we may ſay, without Vanity, that we faithfully obey'd the King's Orders, and perform'd the Buſineſs effectually, in which we had the Honour to be employ'd. 1729 Nov.

Nor can we by any Means reproach Ourſelves of having put the Crown to any exorbitant Expenſe in this difficult affair, the whole Charge, from Beginning to End, amounting to no more that One Thouſand Pounds. But let no one concern'd in this painful Expedition complain of the Scantineſs of his Pay, ſo long as His Majeſty has been Graciouſly pleaſ'd to add to our Reward the HONOUR of his ROYAL approbation, and to declare, notwithſtanding the Deſertion of the CAROLINA COMMISSIONERS, that the Line by us run ſhall hereafter Stand as the true Boundary betwixt the GOVERNMENTS OF VIRGINIA AND NORTH CAROLINA.

APPENDIX

To the Foregoing Journal, containing the second Charter to the Proprietors of CAROLINA, confirming and enlarging the firſt, and alſo ſeveral other acts to which it refers. Theſe are plac'd by themſelves at the End of the Book, that they may not interrupt the Thread of the Story, and the Reader will be more at liberty whether he will pleaſe to read them or not, being ſomething dry and unpleaſant.

The Second CHARTER granted by KING CHARLES 2d to the Proprietors of CAROLINA.

CHARLES, by the GRACE of GOD, &c.: WHEREAS, by our LETTERS PATENT, bearing date the four and twentieth day of march, in the fifteenth year of our Reign, we were graciouſly pleaſ'd to grant unto our right truſty and right well beloved couſin and councellor, Edward, Earl of Clarendon, our high Chancellor of England, Our right truſty and right intirely beloved Couſin and Counſellor, George, Duke of Albemarle, Maſter of our Horſe, our right truſty and well beloved William, now Earl of Craven, our Right truſty and well beloved Counſellor, Anthony, Lord Aſhley, Chancellor of our Exchequer, our right truſty and well beloved Counſellor, Sir George Carterett, Knight and Baronet, vice Chamberlain of our houſehold, our right truſty and well beloved, Sir John Colleton, Knight and Baronet, and Sir William Berkley, Knight, all that Province, Territory, or Tract of Ground, called Carolina, ſituate, lying and being within our Dominions of America, extending from the North End of the Iſland called Luke Iſland, which lys in the Southern Virginia Seas, and within Six and thirty Degrees of the Northern Latitude; and to the Weſt as far as the South Seas; & ſo reſpectively as far as the River of Mathias, which

bordereth upon the Coaſt of Florida, & within one and thirty Degrees of the Northern Latitude, and ſo weſt in a direct Line as far as the South Seas aforeſaid. Now know ye, that, at the humbleſt requeſt of the ſaid Grantees in the aforeſaid Letters Patent named, and as a further mark of our eſpecial favour towards them, we are graciouſly pleaſ'd to enlarge our ſaid Grant unto them according to the Bounds & limits hereafter Specify'd & in favour to the pious and noble purpoſe of the ſaid Edward, Earl of Clarendon, George, Duke of Albemarle, William, Earl of Craven, John, Lord Berkley, Anthony, Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton and Sir William Berkley, we do give and grant to them, their Heirs and Aſſigns, all that Province, Territory, or tract of Ground, Situate, lying and being within our Dominions of America aforeſaid, extending North and Eaſtward as far as the North end of Carahtuke River or Inlet, upon a Streight weſterly line to Wyonoake Creek, which lys withjn or about the Degrees of thirty-ſix and thirty Minutes Northern Latitude, and ſo Weſt in a Direct line as far as the South Seas; & ſouth and weſtward as far as the Degrees of twenty-nine incluſive Northern Latitude, & ſo weſt in a direct line as far as the South ſeas; together with all and Singular ports, harbours, Bays, rivers & inlets belonging unto the Province or Territory aforeſaid. And alſo, all the Soil, lands, fields, Woods, Mountains, ferms, Lakes, Rivers, Bays and Inlets, ſituate, or being within the Bounds or limits laſt before mention'd: with the fiſhing of all Sorts of fiſh, Whales, Sturgeons, and all other Royal fiſhes in the Sea, Bays, Inlets, and Rivers, within the Premiſes, and the fiſh therein taken; together with the royalty of the Sea, upon the Coaſt within the limits aforeſaid. And Moreover, all Veins, Mines and Quarries, as well diſcover'd as not diſcover'd, of Gold, Silver, Gems & precious Stones, and all other whatſoever; be it of Stones, Metals or any other thing found or to be found within the Province, Territory, Inlets and limits aforeſaid. And furthermore. the Patronage & Avowſons of all the Churches & Chappels, which as the Chriſtian Religion ſhall encreaſe within the Province Territory Iſles and limits aforeſaid, Shall happen hereafter to be erected; together with Licence and. Power to build & found Churches & Chappels & Oratories in fit and convenient places, within the ſaid Bound's and Limits; and to Cauſe them to be dedicated and Conſecrated, according to the Eccleſiaſtical Laws of our Kingdom of England; together with all and

Singular the like, and as ample Rights, Iuriſdictions. Privilidges; Prerogatives, Royalties, Liberties, Immunities and Franchiſes of what kind Soever, within the Territory. Iſle's Inlets & Limits aforeſaid. To have. hold, uſe. exerciſe & enjoy the Same as amply, fully and in as ample. a Manner. as any Biſhop of Durham in our Kingdom of England, ever heretofore had. held. uſed. or enjoy'd, or. of right, ought, or could have, uſe. or enjoy; and then the Said Edward Earl of Clarendon: George. Duke of. Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord. Berkley, Anthony Lord. Aſhley, Sir. George Carterett, Sir John Colleton and Sir William Berkley. their. Heirs and Aſſigns; We do by theſe Preſents; for us. our Heirs and. Succeſſor's, make. create. and conſtitute the true and abſolute. Lords and Proprietors of the Said Province, or Territory, and of all other, the Premiſes, ſaveing alway's the Faith, Allegiance and Sovereign. Dominion, due to us, our Heirs, and Succeſſors. for the ſame; to have, hold; poſſeſs and enjoy. the ſaid Province, Territory, Inlets and all. and ſingular, other the Premiſes; to them the ſaid Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley. Anthony Lord Aſhley Sir. George. Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley. their Heirs and Aſſigns for ever. to be holden of Us. Our Heirs & Sueceſſor's as of. Our Manner of Eaſt. Greenwich in Kent in free & common Soccage & not in Capite or by Knights. Service yeelding and paying yearly to us. Our. Heirs. & Succeſſors for the Same. the fourth part of all. Gold. & Silver. Oar which within the Limits hereby granted ſhall. from time to time happen to be found over and beſides the yearly. Rent of twenty Marks and the fourth part of the. Gold & Silver. Oar. in and by the ſaid recited Letters. Patents reſerv'd and Payable.

And that the Province or Territory hereby granted and deſcribed may be dignify'd with as large Titles and. Priviledges as any other Parts of our Dominions and Territories. in that Region. Know. ye that we of our further Grace certain knowledge & mere Motion have thought fit to annex the ſame Tract of Ground and Territory unto the ſame Province of Carolina and out. of the fulneſs of our. Royal Power & Prerogative. We do. for Us. Our. Heirs And Succeſſor's annex & unite the Same to the ſaid Province of Carolina. And for as much as we have made and ordain'd the aforeſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven.

John Lord Berkley. Anthony Lord Aſhley. Sir George Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley their Heirs and Aſſigns the true. Lord's and Proprietors of all the Province or. Territory aforeſaid Know. ye therefore moreover the we. repoſing eſpecial truſt & confidence in. their fidelity Wiſdom. Juſtice and Provident. Circumſpection for Uş Our Heirs and Succeſſor's do grant full and absolute Power by Vertue of theſe Preſents to them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle. William Earl of Craven. John Lord Berkley Anthony Lord Aſhly Sir George. Carteret. Sir John. Colleton and Sir Wiliam Berkley and their Heir's & Aſſigns for the good & happy Government of the ſaid whole Province or Territory full Power and Authority to erect. conſtitute & make ſeveral Counties. Baronies. & Colonies of & within the ſaid Provinces. Territories. Land's and Hereditaments in and by ſaid recited Letters Patents. & theſe Preſents granted or. mention'd to be granted as aforeſaid with ſeveral and diſtinct Juriſdictions Power's. Liberties and Priviledges. And alſo to Ordain. make and enact and under their Seals. to Publiſh any Law's and Conſtitutions whatſoever. either appertaining to the Publick State of the ſaid whole Provinee or Territory. or of any diſtinct or. Particular County, Barony. and. Colony of or within the Same. or to the Private utility of Particular Perſons. according to their beſt diſcretion, by & with the advice. Aſſent & Approbation of the Freemen of the Said Province or Territory or of the Freemen of County. Barony or Colony. for which ſuch Law or Conſtitution ſhall be made or the greater Part of them or of their Delegates or Deputies. whom for the enacting of the ſaid Law's when as often as need ſhall require We will that the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George. Duke of Albemarle William Earl of Craven John Lord. Berkley Anthony Lord Aſhley Sir George Carterett, Sir John. Colleton & Sir William Berkley. their Heirs or Aſſigns. Shall from time to time, aſſemble in Such Manner and form as to them ſhall ſeem beſt, and the ſame Law's duly to Execute upon all People within the ſaid Provinces or. Territory. County Colony. or. Barony the Limits thereof for the time being. which ſhall be Conſtituted under the Power & Government of them. or any of them. either Sailing towards the ſaid Province or Territory of Carolina, or returning from thence towards. England, or any other of Our, or foreign Dominions, by Impoſition of Penalties, Impriſonment, or any other Puniſhment: Yea. if it ſhall. be needfull, and the Quality

of the offence require it. by takeing away Member & Life, either by them the Said Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle. William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley. Anthony Lord Aſhley Sir George Carterett. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley. and their Heirs or by them or their Deputies Lieutenants. Judges. Juſtices. Magiſtrates. or. Officers whatſoever as within the Said Province as at Sea, in ſuch. Manner & form as unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle. William Earl of Craven, John. Lord Berkley. Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley. and their Heirs. ſhall ſeem moſt. convenient, Alſo, to remit. releaſe, pardon and aboliſh, whether before Judgement. or after, all Crimes and offences whatſoever. Againſt the ſaid Law's; and to do all and every other thing and things, which unto the Compleat eſtabliſhment of Juſtice, unto Courts, Seſſions & forms of Judicature and Manners of proceedings therein. do belong altho in theſe Preſents, expreſs mention is not. made thereof. & by Judges to him or them delegated to award proceſs. hold pleas. & determine in all the ſaid Courts, & places of Judicature. all Actions, Suits, and — Cauſes whatſoever, as well Criminal as. Civil, real, mix't perſonal. or of any other kind or. Nature whatſoever, which Law's So as aforeſaid to, be publiſh'd, Our. Pleaſure is & we do enjoyn, require and. Command, ſhall. be abſolutely firm & available in Law; and that all the leige People of Us. our Heirs and Succeſſors, within the ſaid Provinee or Territory, do obſerve & keep the ſame inviolably in thoſe Parts. So far as they concern them, under the Pains & Penalties therein expreſſ'd or to be expreſſ'd provided nevertheleſs, that the ſaid Law's be conſonant to Reaſon, and as near as may be conveniently, agreeable to the Law's & Cuſtoms of this our Realm of England.

And. becauſe ſuch Aſſemblies of freeholder's cannot be ſo ſuddenly call'd as there may be Occaſion to require the Same. we do therefore by theſe Preſents, give & Grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon George. Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carterett. Sir John Colleton. and Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, by themſelves or their Magiſtrates. in that Behalf, lawfully Authorized, full Power and Authority from time to time, to make & ordain fit and wholeſome Orders & Ordinances, within the Province or. Territory aforeſaid or any County, Barony or. Province of or within the ſame,

to be kep't and obſerv'd, as well for the keeping of the Peace, as for the better Government of the People there abiding. & to publiſh the ſame to all to whom it may concern. which ordinances we do, by theſe Preſents. ſtreightly charge and command to be inviolably obſerv'd within the ſame Province. Counties, Territory's, Barony's & Provinces under the Penalties therein expreſſ'd: So as Such Ordinances be reaſonable & not repugnant or contrary, but as near as may be agreeable to the Laws & Statutes of this our Kingdom, of England; and ſo as the ſame Ordinances do not extend to the binding, charging or taking away of the right or Intereſt of any Perſon or. Perſons in their freehold, Goods or. Chattels whatſoever,

And to the end the ſaid Province or Territory, may be more happily encreaſ'd by the Multitude of People reſorting thither & may likewiſe be the more Strongly defended from the Incurſions of Savages and other Enemies, Pirates & Robbers, Therefore, We for Us, Our Heirs and Succeſſor's, do give and grant. by theſe Preſents, Power. Licence and Liberty unto all the Leige People of Us, Our Heirs and Succeſſor's in our Kingdom of England & elſewhere, Within any other our Dominions, Iſlands, Colonies or. Plantations, (excepting thoſe who ſhall be eſpecially forbidden) to tranſport themſelves & Families into the ſaid Province or Territory, with Convenient. Shipping & fitting Proviſions & there to Settle themſelves, dwell and Inhabit, any Law, Act. Statute, Ordinance. or other thing to the contrary. in any wiſe notwithſtanding.

And we will alſo, and of our eſpecial Grace, for us, Our Heirs, & Succeſſor's, do Streightly enjoyn, ordain conſtitute and command, that the Said Province or Territory, ſhall be of our Allegiance; & that all And Singular, the Subjects and. Leige People of Us. Our. Heirs & Succeſſor's, tranſported or to be tranſported, into the ſaid Province, & the Children of them. and ſuch as ſhall decend from them, there born, or hereafter to be born, be, and ſhall be, Denizens & Leige People. of Us. our Heirs, and, Succeſſor's. of this our Kingdom of England, & be in all things, held, treated, and reputed as the Leige faithfull People. of Us, our Heirs and Succeſſors. born within this our Said Kingdom, or any other of our Dominions, and may inherit, or otherwiſe purchaſe & receive, take, hold, buy, & poſſeſs. any Land's, Land's, Tenements, or Hereditaments, within the Said Places, & them may occupy, & enjoy, ſell, alien, and bequeath, as likewiſe all Liberties, Franchiſes & Priviledges of this our Kingdom, and of

other our Dominions aforeſaid, may freely and quietly have, Poſſeſs, and enjoy as our Leige People born within the Same, without the Moleſtation, vexation. grievance or. Trouble. of Us. our Heirs and Succeſſors, any Act. Statute, Ordinance or Proviſion to the contrary notwithſtanding.

And furthermore, that our Subjects of this our ſaid Kingdom of England, & other our Dominions, may be the rather encouraged to undertake this Expedition, with ready & cheerfull Means. Know, Ye, that We, of our eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, & mere Motion, do give & Grant by Vertue of the Preſents. as well to the ſaid. Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir. John Colleton & Sir William Berkley and their Heirs, as unto all others as ſhall, from time to time, repair unto the ſaid Province or, Territory. with a purpoſe to inhabit, there or to trade with the Natives thereof, Full Liberty and Licence to trade & Freight in every Part whatſoever of Us, our. Heirs & Succeſſor's, and into the ſaid Province of Carolina, by them, their Servants & Aſſigns, to tranſport all & Singular, their good's, Wares, and Merchandizes, as likewiſe all Sort of Grain whatſoever, & any other thing whatſoever, neceſſary for their food & cloathing, not prohibited by the Law's and Statutes of our Kingdom & Dominions, to be carried out of the ſame, without any let or Moleſtation of Us our Heirs, & Succeſſors, or of any other our Officers or Miniſters whatſoever, Saving alſo to Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſor's, the Cuſtoms & other Duties & Payments due for the ſaid Wares & Merchandizes, according to the ſeveral Rates of the Places from whence the ſame ſhall be tranſported.

We will alſo & by theſe Preſents for. Us. our Heirs Succeſſors, do give and grant Licence by this our Charter, unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle William Earl of Craven. John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord. Aſhley, Sir George Carteret Sir John Colleton and Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, and to all the Inhabitants & Dwellers in the Province or Territory aforeſaid, both Preſent and to come, full Power & abſolute Authority to import or unlade, by themſelves or their Servants. Factors or Aſſigns all Merchandizes & Goods whatſoever, that ſhall arriſe of the Fruits & Commodities of the ſaid Province, or Territory, either by Land or Sea, into any of the Parts of us, our Heirs & Suc-

ceſſor's, in our Kingdom of England, Scotland, or Ireland, or otherwiſe, to diſpoſe of the ſaid goods, in the ſaid Parts. and if need be, within one year next after the unlading, to lade the ſaid Merchandizes & Good's again into the ſame, or other Ships & to export the ſame into any other Country's, either of our Dominions or. forreign, being in Amity with Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, ſo as the reſt of the Cuſtomes, Subſidies & other Duties for the ſame to Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, as the reſt of Our Subjects, of this our Kingdom for the time being, ſhall be bound to pay, Beyond which we will not that the Inhabitants of the ſaid Province or Territory, ſhall be any way Charged, Provided, Nevertheleſs, and Our Will & Pleaſure is, and We have further, for the Conſiderations aforeſaid, of our eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge & Mere. Motion, given & Granted, & by theſe Preſents, for Us. our Heirs and Succeſſor's, do give & grant. unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord. Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full & free Licence, Liberty, Power, & Authority. at any time or times from & after the feaſt. of St. Micheal the Arch. Angel, which ſhall be in the Year of our Lord Chriſt, one Thouſand Six Hundred, ſixty & Seven.; as well to import and bring into any our Dominions from the ſaid Province of Carolina, or any part thereof, the ſeveral goods & Commodities herein after mention'd; that is to ſay, Silks; Wines, Currants, Rayſons, Capers, Wax, Almonds, Oyl and Olives without paying or anſwering to us our Heirs & Succeſſors, any Cuſtom, Impoſt or other Duty. for, or in reſpect thereof, for and during the time and ſpace of ſeven Years, to Commence & be accompted from, and after the firſt importation of four Tons of any the ſaid Goods in any one Bottom Ship or Veſſel, from the ſaid Province or Territory, into any of our Dominions, as alſo to export and carry out of any of our Dominions into the ſaid Province or Territory, Cuſtom free, all Sorts of Tools, which be uſeful or neceſſary for the Planters there, in the Accommodation & Improvement of the Premiſes, anything before in theſe Preſents, contain'd, or any Law, Act, Statute, Prohibition, or any other Matter or Thing, heretofore had, made, enacted or provided in any, wiſe notwithſtanding.

And. furthermore of our mere ample & eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge and mere motion, We do for Us, our Heirs, and Suc-

ceſſors, grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full & abſolute Power and Authority to make erect and Conſtitute within the Said Province or Territory, & the Iſles & Inlets aforeſaid, Such & ſo Many Sea Parts, Harbours, Creeks and other Places, for diſcharge and unladeing of Goods & Merchandizes out of Ships, Boats and other Veſſels, and for lading of them in ſuch and ſo many places & with ſuch Juriſdictions, Priviledges & Franchiſes, unto the Said Ports belonging, as to them ſhall ſeem moſt expedient; & that all and Singular, the Ships, Boats, & other Veſſels, which ſhall come for Merchandizes and Trade into the ſaid Province or Territory, or ſhall depart out of the ſame, ſhall be laden and unladen at Such Ports only. as ſhall be erected & conſtituted by the ſaid Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony, Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns & not elſewhere, any uſe, Cuſtom, or anything to the contrary in any wiſe notwithſtanding,

And we do furthermore will Appoint & Ordain, & by theſe Preſents, for Us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, do grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley their Heirs & Aſſigns, that they the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, may from time to time forever, have and enjoy the Cuſtoms and Subſidies in the Ports, Harbours, Creeks & other places within the Province aforeſaid, payable for the Goods, Merchandizes, & Wares there Laded, or to be Laded or unladed, the ſaid Cuſtoms to be reaſonably Aſſeſſ'd to upon any Occaſion by themſelves & by & with the conſent of the free people, or the greater part of them, as aforeſaid; to whom we give Power by theſe Preſents, for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, upon juſt cause & in due proportion to aſſeſs & impoſe the ſame.

And further, of our eſpecial Grace certain Knowledge & mere Motion, we have given, granted & confirm'd & by theſe Preſents for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, do give, Grant & con-

firm unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven John Lord. Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carteret, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs and Aſſigns, full & abſolute Licence, Power & Authority, that they the ſaid Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, from time to time, hereafter for ever, at his and their Will & pleaſure, may Aſſign, alien, grant demiſe or enfeoff. the Premiſes or any part or Parcell thereof to him or them, that ſhall be willing to purchaſe the ſame; and to Such perſon or perſons as they ſhall think fit, to have and to hold to them the ſaid Perſon or Perſons, their Heirs & Aſſigns in Fee Simple or in fee Sayle or for the Term of Life or Lives, or Years to be held of them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſ ſigns, by ſuch rents, & Services, and Cuſtoms as ſhall ſeem fit to them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord, Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns & not of Us, our Heirs & Succeſſor's; and to the ſame Perſon and Perſons, & to all & every one of them, We do give & grant, by theſe preſents, for Us our Heirs and Succeſſors, Licence, Authority, & Power that ſuch Perſon or Perſons may have and take the Premiſes, or any Parcell thereof, of the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs and Aſſigns, & the ſame to hold to themſelves their Heirs or Aſſigns, in what Eſtate of Inheritance ſoever, in Fee Simple, or in Fee Sayle or otherwiſe, as to them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George, Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, ſhall ſeem expedient. The Statute in the Parliament of Edward, Son of King Henry, heretofore King of. England. our Predeceſſor, commonly call'd the Statute of Quia Emtores Terrar; or any other Statute, Act, Ordinance, Uſe,

Law, Cuſtom, or any other Matter, Cauſe or thing heretofore publiſhed or provided to• the contrary in any wiſe notwithſtanding

And becauſe many perſons born & Inhabiting in the ſaid Province, for their Deſerts & Services may expect, & be capable. of Marks of Honour & Favour, which in reſpect of the great Diſtance cannot conveniently be conferred by us, our Will & Pleaſure therefore is & We do by theſe Preſents, give and grant unto the ſaid, Edward, Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carterett, Sir John Colleton. & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full Power & Authority to give & Confer unto & upon ſuch of the Inhabitants of the ſaid Province or Territory, as they ſhall think, do or ſhall merit the ſame ſuch Marks of Favour, & Titles of Honour, as they ſhall think fit, ſo as their Titles or Honours be not the ſame as are enjoy'd by, or conferr'd upon any of the Subjects of this our Kingdom of England.

And further alſo, we do by theſe preſents, for us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, give and grant, Licence to them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full Power & Authority, Liberty and Licence to erect. raiſe & Build within the ſaid Province or Places aforeſaid or any Part or Parts thereof, ſuch & ſo many Forts, Fortreſſes, Caſtles, Cities, Burroughs, Towns, Villages, or any other Fortifications whatſoever; & the ſame or any of them to fortify & furniſh with Ordnance Powder, Shott, Armour, & all other Weapons, Ammunition & Habiliments of War, both defenſive & Offenſive, as ſhall be thought fit and convenient for the ſafety & Welfare of the ſaid Province, & Places, or any part. thereof, and the ſame, or any of them, from time to time, as occaſion ſhall require, to Diſmantle, Diſfurniſh, Demoliſh & pull down; And alſo to Place. Conſtitute & Appoint in, or over all, or any of the ſaid Caſtles, forts, fortifications, Cities Towns, & Places aforeſaid, Governors, Deputy Governors, Magiſtrates, Sheriffs, & other Officers, Civil and Military as to them ſhall ſeem meet: and to the ſaid Cities, Burroughs, Towns, Villages, or any other place or places within the ſaid Province or Territory, to grant Letters, or Charters of Incorporations with all Liberties. Franchiſes & Pri-

vileges requiſite, or uſual, or to, or within this our Kingdom of England granted, or belonging: And in the ſame Cities, Burroughs, Towns & other Places. to conſtitute, erect & Appoint, Such & So many Markets, Marts, & Fairs, as ſhall in that behalf be thought fit and neceſſary; and further alſo, to Erect & make in the Province or Territory aforeſaid; or any part thereof, So many Mannors with ſuch Signories as to them ſhall Seem Meet, & Convenient, & in every of the ſaid Mannors to have & to hold a Court-Baron with all things whatſoever, which to a Court-Baron do belong, & to have & to hold views of franck pledge, & Courts-Leet, for the conſervation of the Peace, and better Government of thoſe Parts, with ſuch Limits, Juriſdiction & Precincts, as by the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, or their Heirs, ſhall be appointed for that purpoſe, with all things whatſoever, which to a Court-leet or view of Franck Pledge; do belong, the ſame Courts to be holden by Stewards, to be deputed, & authorized by the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord. Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, or their Heirs, by the Lords of the Mannors & leets, for the time being, when the ſame ſhall be Erected,

And becauſe that in ſo remote a Country & ſcituate amongſt ſo many barbarous Nations. the Invaſions as well of Salvages, as other Enemies. Pirates & Robbers may probably be fear'd; Therefore we have given & for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors do give power by theſe preſents, unto the Said Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord. Aſhley, Sir George. Carterett, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs or Aſſigns, by themſelves, or their Captains, or other Officers to Levy, Muſter, & Train up all Sorts of Men, of what Condition ſoever, or whereſoever born, whether in the ſaid Province, or elſewhere, for the time being, And to make War & purſue the Enemies aforeſaid, as well by Sea, as by Land; Yea even without the Limits of the ſaid Province, and by God's Aſſiſtance, to Vanquiſh, and take them & being taken, to put them to Death by the Law of War, & to ſave them at their pleaſure; and to do all & every other thing which to the Charge & Office

of a Captain General of an Army do belong, or hath accuſtom'd to belong, as fully & freely as any Captain General of an Army hath had the ſame.

Alſo our Will & pleaſure is, & by this our Charter, We do give & grant unto the ſaid. Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs and Aſſigns, full power & Liberty & Authority in caſe of Rebellion; Tumult, or Sedition (if any ſhould happen which God forbid) either upon the Land within the Province aforeſaid, or upon the main Sea, in makeing a Voyage thither, or returning from thence, by him & themſelves, their Captains, Deputies, or Officers. to be Authorized under his or their Seals for that purpoſe, To whom alſo for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, we do give & grant by theſe preſents, full power & Authority to exerciſe Martial Law, againſt Mutinous & Seditious perſons of thoſe parts, Such as ſhall refuſe to ſubmit themſelves to their Government, or ſhall refuſe to ſerve in the Wars, or ſhall fly to the Enemy, or forſake their Colours or Enſigns or be Loyterers or Stragglers, or otherwiſe howſoever offending againſt law, Cuſtom, or Military Diſcipline, as freely & in as ample Manner & form as any Captain General of an Army, by Vertue of his Office, might, or hath accuſtom'd to uſe the ſame.

And our further pleaſure is & by theſe preſents, for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, We do grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley. Sir George Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, & to the Tenants & Inhabitants of the Said Province, or Territory, both preſent & to come & to every of them, that the Said Province or Territory, & the Tenants, & Inhabitants thereof, ſhall not from henceforth, be held or reputed any member or part of any Colony Whatſoever, in America or elſewhere; Now tranſported or made; nor ſhall be depending on or Subject to their Government in any thing. but be abſolutely ſeperated & divided from the ſame. And our pleaſure is, by theſe preſents, that they be Seperated, and that they be Subject immediately to our Crown of England, as depending thereof for ever, And that the Inhabitants of the ſaid Province or Territory, nor any of them, ſhall at any time hereafter be, Compell'd or compellable, or be any way's Subject, or liable to

appear or anſwer to any Matter, ſuit, cauſe, or Plaint whatſoever, out of the Province or Territory aforeſaid, in any other of our Iſlands Collony's or Dominions, in America. or elſewhere other than in our Realm of England and Dominion of Wales. And becauſe it may happen, that ſome of the People and Inhabitants of the ſaid Province, cannot in their private opinions conform to the publick exerciſe of Religion according to the Liturgy, Forms & Ceremonies of the Church of England, or Subſcribe the Oaths & Articles, made & eſtabliſhed in that behalf, and for that the ſame, by reaſon of the remote diſtances of thoſe Places will as we hope, be no Breach of the unity and conformity, eſtabliſhhed in this nation. Our Will & Pleaſure therefore is, & we do by theſe preſents for us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, give & grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George. Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George, Carterett, Sir John. Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full & free Licence, Liberty, & Authority, by ſuch ways & Means as they ſhall think fit, to give and grant unto ſuch Perſon and Perſons, Inhabiting, & being within the ſaid Province or Territory, hereby or by the ſaid recited Letters Patents, mention'd to be granted as aforeſaid, or any Part thereof, ſuch Indulgencies & Diſpenſations in that behalf, for & during ſuch time & times, & with ſuch Limitations and Reſtrictions as they the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord, Aſhley, Sir George Carterett Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, ſhall in their diſcretion think fit & reaſonable, And that no Perſon or Perſons, unto whom ſuch Liberty ſhall be given, ſhall be any way moleſted, puniſhed, diſquieted, or called in queſtion for any differences in Opinion or Practice, in Matters of Religious Concernment, who do not actually diſturb the civil Peace of the Province, County or Colony, that they ſhall make their abode in. But all & every ſuch Perſon & Perſons, may from time to time, & at all times, freely & Quietly have & enjoy his & their Judgments, & Conſciences in Matters of Religion throughout all the ſaid Province, or Colony, they behaveing themſelves peaceably, & not uſeing this Liberty to Licentiouſneſs, nor to the Civil Injury, or outward diſturbance of others, any Law, Statute, or Clauſe contain'd, or to be con-

tain'd, Uſage or Cuſtoms of our Realm of England to the contrary hereof in any wiſe notwithſtanding

And in caſe it ſhall happen, that any doubts or queſtions ſhou'd ariſe concerning the true ſence & underſtanding of any word, clauſe, or Sentence, contain'd in this our Preſent, Charter, We will, Ordain, and command, that at all times, & in all things ſuch Interpretations be made thereof, & allow'd in all & every of our Courts whatſoever, as lawfully may be adjudged moſt advantageous & favourable to the ſaid Edward, Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, although Expreſs. mention &c

Witneſs our ſelf at Weſtminſter, the thirtieth day of June, in the Seventeenth Year of our Reign

Per. ipſum Regem

At the Court of St. James's the 1ſt day of March, 1710.—
Preſent, The Queen's moſt Excellent Majeſty in Council.

Upon reading this day at the Board a Repreſentation from the Rt Honble the Lords Commiſſioners for trade & Plantations, in the Words following: In purſuance of your Majeſty's Pleaſure, Commiſſioners have been appointed on the Part of your Majeſty's Colony of Virginia, as likewiſe on the Part of the Province of Carolina, for the ſettling the Bounds between thoſe Governments; And they have met ſeveral times for that purpoſe, but have not agreed upon any one Point thereof, by reaſon of the trifleing delays of the Carolina Commiſſioners, & of the many difficulties by them raiſ'd in relation to the proper Obſervations & ſurvey they were to make. However, the Commiſſioners for Virginia have deliver'd to your Majeſty's Lieut Governor of that Colony an Account of their proceedings, which Account has been under the Conſideration of your Majeſty's Council of Virginia, &c they have made a Report thereon to the ſaid Lieut Governor, who haveing lately tranſmitted unto us a Copy of that Report, we take leave humbly to lay the Subſtance thereof before your Majeſty, which is as follows:

That the Commiſſioners of Carolina are both of them Perſons engag'd in Intereſt to obſtruct the Settling the Boundarys between that Province and the Colony of Virginia; for one of

them has for ſeveral Years been Surveyor General of Carolina, has acquired to himſelf great Profit by ſurveying Lands within the controverted Bounds, & has taken up ſeveral Tracts of Land in his own Name, & ſold the ſame to others, for which he ſtands ſtill oblig'd obtain Patents from the Government of Carolina. The other of them is at this time Surveyor General, & hath the ſame Proſpect of advantage by making future ſurveys within the ſaid Bounds. That the Behavior of the Carolina Commiſſioners has tended viſibly to no other End than to protract and defeat the Settling this Affair: and particularly Mr. Moſeley has uſ'd ſo many Shifts & Excuſes to diſappoint all Conferences with the Commiſſioners of Virginia, as plainly ſhew his Averſion to proceed in a Buſineſs that tends ſo manifeſtly to his diſadvantage. His prevaricating on this occaſion has been ſo undiſcreet and ſo unguarded, as to be diſcover'd in the preſence of the Lieut Governor of Virginia. He ſtarted ſo many objections to the Powers granted to the Commiſſioners of that Colony, with deſign to render their conferences ineffectual, that his Joint Commiſſioner cou'd hardly find an excuſe for him. And when the Lieut Governor had with much adoe prevail'd with the ſaid Mr. Moſeley to appoint a time for meeting the Commiſſioners of Virginia, & for bringing the neceſſary Inſtruments to take the Latitude of the Bounds in diſpute, which Inſtruments he owned were ready in Carolina, he not only fail'd to comply with his own appointment, but after the Commiſſioners of Virginia had made a Journey to his Houſe, and had attended him to the Places proper for obſerving the Latitude, he wou'd not take the trouble of carrying his own Inſtrument, but contented himſelf to find fault with the Quadrant produc'd by the virginia Commiſſioners, tho that Inſtrument had been approv'd by the beſt Mathematicians, and is of univerſal Uſe. From all which it is evident how little hopes there are of Settling the Boundarys above-mention'd, in concert with the preſent Commiſſioners for Carolina. That tho the Bounds of the Carolina Charter are in expreſs words limitted to Weyanoak Creek, lying in or about 36° 30′ of Northern Latitude, yet the Commiſſioners for Carolina have not by any of their Evidences pretended to prove any ſuch Place as Weyanoak Creek, the amount of their Evidence reaching no further than to prove which is Weyanoak River, & even that is contradicted by affidavit taken on the part of Virginia; by which affidavits it appears that, before the Date of the Carolina Charter to this day, the place they pretend to be

Weyanoak River was, & is ſtill, called Nottoway River. But ſuppoſing the ſame had been called Weyanoak River, it can be nothing to their purpoſe, there being a great difference between a River & a Creek. Beſides, in that Country there are divers Rivers & Creeks of the ſame Name, as Potomeck River & Potomeck Creek, Rappahannock River, & Rappahannock Creek, & Several others, tho there are many Miles' diſtance between the mouths of theſe Rivers and the mouths of theſe Creeks. It is alſo obſervable, that the Witneſſes on the Part of Carolina are all very Ignorant perſons, & moſt of them of ill fame & Reputation, on which Account they had been forced to remove from Virginia to Carolina. Further, there appeared to be many contradictions in their Teſtimonys, whereas, on the other hand, the witneſſes to prove that the Right to thoſe Lands is in the Government of Virginia are Perſons of good Credit, their knowledge of the Lands in queſtion is more ancient than any of the Witneſſes for Carolina, & their Evidence fully corroborated by the concurrent Teſtimony of the Tributary Indians. And that right is farther confirm'd by the Obſervations lately taken of the Latitude in thoſe parts, by which tis plain, that the Creek proved to be Weyanoak Creek by the Virginia Evidences, & ſometimes call'd Wicocon, anſwers beſt to the Latitude deſcribed in the Carolina Charter, for it lys in 36° 40′, which is ten Minutes to the Northward of the Limits deſcribed in the Carolina grant, Whereas Nottoway River, lys exactly in the Latitude of 37°, and can by no conſtruction be ſuppoſ'd to be the Boundary deſcribed in their Charter; So that upon the whole Matter, if the Commiſſioners of Carolina had no other view than to clear the juſt right of the Proprietors, ſuch undeniable Demonſtrations wou'd be Sufficient to convince them; but the ſaid Commiſſioners gave too much Cauſe to ſuſpect that they mix their own private Intereſt with the Claim of the Proprietors, & for that reaſon endeavor to gain time in order to obtain Grants for the Land already taken up, and alſo to ſecure the reſt on this occaſion, we take notice, that they proceed to ſurvey the Land in diſpute, notwithſtanding the aſſurance given by the Government of Carolina to the Contrary by their letter of the 17th of June, 1707, to the Government of Virginia, by which letter they promiſed that no lands ſhou'd be taken up within the controverted bounds till the ſame were ſettled.

Whereupon we humbly propoſe, that the Lords Proprietors be acquainted with the foregoing Complaint of the trifleing

delays of their Commiſſioners, which delays tis reaſonable to believe have proceeded from the ſelf-Intereſt of thoſe Commiſſioners, and that therefore your Majeſty's pleaſure be ſignify'd to the ſaid Lords Proprietors, that by the firſt Opportunity they ſend Orders to their Governour or Commander in Chief of Carolina for the time being, to iſſue forth a new Commiſſion, to the purport of that lately iſſued, thereby conſtituting two other Perſons, not having any perſonal Intereſt in, or claim to, any of the Land lying within the Boundary's in the room of Edward Moſeley & John Lawſon. The Carolina Commiſſioners to be appointed being ſtrictly required to finiſh their Survey, & to make a return thereof in conjunction with the Virginia Commiſſioners, within ſix months, to be computed from the time, that due notice ſhall be given by your Majeſty's Lieut Governor of Virginia to the Governor or Commander in Chief of Carolina, of the time & place, which your Majeſty's ſaid Lieut Governor ſhall appoint for the firſt meeting of the Commiſſioners on one part & the other. In order whereunto we humbly offer, that directions be ſent to the ſaid Lieut Governor, to give ſuch Notice accordingly; & if after Notice ſo given, the Carolina Commiſſioners ſhall refuſe or neglect to Join with thoſe on the part of Virginia, in making ſuch ſurvey, as likewiſe a Return thereof within the time before mention'd; that then and in ſuch Caſe the Commiſſioners on the part of Virginia be directed to draw up an Account of the proper obſervations and Survey which they ſhall have made for aſcertaining the Bounds between Virginia & Carolina, and to deliver the ſame in Writing under their Hands and Seals to the Lieut Governor and Council of Virginia, to the end the ſame may be laid before your Majeſty, for your Majeſty's final Determination therein, within, with regard to the Settling of thoſe Boundarys; the Lords Proprietors haveing, by an Inſtrument under their Hands, ſubmitted the ſame to Your Majeſty's royal determination, which inſtrument, dated in March, 1708, is lying in this Office.

And laſtly, we humbly propoſe, that your Majeſty's further pleaſure be ſignifyd to the ſaid Lords Proprietors, and in like manner to the Lieut Governor of Virginia, that no Grants be paſſ'd by either of thoſe Governments of any of the Lands lying within the controverted Bounds, until ſuch Bounds ſhall be aſcertain'd and ſettled as aforeſaid, whereby it may appear whether thoſe Lands do of Right belong to your Majeſty, or to the Lords Proprietors of Carolina.

Her Majeſty in Council, approveing of the ſaid Repreſentation, is pleaſ'd to order, as it is hereby ordered, that the Rt Honble the Lords Commiſſioners for Trade & Plantations Do ſignifye her Majeſty's pleaſure herein to her Majeſty's Lieut Governor or Commander in Chief of Virginia for the time being, and to all Perſons to whom it may belong, as is propoſ'd by their Lordſhips in the ſaid Repreſentation, and the Rt Honble the Lords Proprietors of Carolina are to do what on their part does appertain.

EDW SOUTHWELL.

PROPOSALS for determining the Controverſy relating to the Bounds between the Governments of Virginia and North Carolina, moſt humbly offered for his Majeſty's Royal Approbation, and for the Conſent of the Rt Honble the Lords Proprietors of Carolina.

Foraſmuch as the diſpute between the ſaid two Governments about their true Limits continues ſtill, notwithſtanding the ſeveral meetings of the Commiſſioners, and all the proceedings of many Years paſt, in order to adjuſt that affair, & ſeeing no ſpeedy Determination is likely to enſue, unleſs ſome Medium be found out, in which both Partys may incline to acquieſce, wherefore both the underwritten Governors having met, and conſider'd the prejudice both to the King & the Lords Proprietors' Intereſt, by the continuance of this conteſt, and truly endeavouring a Deciſion, which they Judge comes neareſt the Intention of Royal Charter granted to the Lords Proprietors, do, with the advice & conſent of their reſpective Councils, propoſe as follows.

That from the mouth of Corotuck River or Inlet, & ſetting the Compaſs on the North Shoar, thereof a due Weſt Line be run & fairly mark'd, & if it happen to cut Chowan River, between the mouths of Nottoway River and Wicocon Creek, then ſhall the ſame direct Courſe be continued towards the Mountains, and be ever deem'd the Sole divideing line between Virginia & Carolina.

That if the ſaid Weſt Line cuts Chowan River to the Southward of Wicocon Creek, then from point of Interſection the Bounds ſhall be allow'd to continue up the middle of the ſaid

Chowan River to the middle of the Enterance into the ſaid Wicocon Creek, and from thence a due Weſt Line ſhall divide the ſaid two Governments.

That if a due Weſt Line ſhall be found to paſs through Iſlands or to cut out ſmall Slips of Land, which might much more conveniently be included in one Province or the other by Natural Water Bounds, In ſuch Caſes the Perſons appointed for runing the Line ſhall have power to ſettle Natural Bounds, provided the Commiſſioners of both Sides agree thereto, and that all ſuch Variations from the Weſt Line, be particularly Noted in the Maps or Plats, which they ſhall return, to be put upon the Records of both Governments, all which is Humbly ſubmitted by

CHALES EDEN.
A. SPOTSWOOD.

Order of the King and Council upon the foregoing Propoſals, At the Court of St. James's the 28th day of March, 1729. Preſent, the King's moſt Excellent Majeſty in Council.

WHEREAS it has been repreſented to his Majeſty at the Board, that for adjuſting the diſputes, which have Subſiſted for many Years paſt, between the Colonys of Virginia and North Carolina, concerning their true Boundarys, the late Governors of the ſaid colonys did ſome time ſince agree upon certain Propoſals for regulating the ſaid Boundarys for the future, to which Propoſals the Lords Proprietors of Carolina have given their aſſent; And whereas the ſaid Propoſals were this day preſented to his Majeſty as proper for his Royal Approbation,

His Majeſty is thereupon pleaſ'd, with the Advice of his Privy Council, to approve of the ſaid Propoſals, a copy whereof is hereunto annex't, and to order, as it is hereby order'd, that the Governor or Commander in Chief of the Colony of Virginia, do ſettle the ſaid Boundarys, in conjunction with the Governor of North Carolina, agreeable to the ſaid Propoſals.

EDWARD SOUTHWELL.

The Lieut Governor of Virginia's Commiſſion in obedience to His Majeſty's Order.

GEORGE the ſecond, by the Grace of God, of great Britain, France and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, to our truſty and well beloved William Byrd, Richard Fitz-William, and William Dandridge, Eſqrs., members of our council of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia, Greeting: Whereas our late Royal Father of Bleſſed memory was graciouſly pleaſ'd, by Order in his Privy Council, bearing date the 28 day of March 1727, to approve of certain Propoſals agreed upon by Alexander Spotſwood, Eſqr. late Lieut Governor of Virginia, on the one part, and Charles Eden Eſqr. late Governoor of the Province of North Carolina, for determining the Controverſy relating to the Bounds between the ſaid two Governments, and was farther pleaſed to direct and Order, that the ſaid Boundarys ſhoud be laid out & ſettled agreeable to the ſaid Propoſals. Know ye, therefore, that repoſing ſpecial truſt and confidence in your Ability & Provident circumſpection, have aſſign'd, conſtituted & appointed, & by theſe preſents do aſſign, conſtitute & appoint you & every of you jointly & ſeverally, our Commiſſioners for & on behalf of our Colony & Dominion of Virginia, to meet the commiſſioners appointed or to be appointed on the part of the Province of North Carolina, and in conjunction with them to cauſe a Line or Lines of Diviſion to be run and markt, to divide the ſaid two Governments according to the propoſals above-mention'd, & the order of our late Royal Father, Copies of both which you will herewith receive. and we do further give and grant unto you, and in caſe of the Death or abſence of any of you, ſuch of you as ſhall be preſent, full power and Authority to treat & agree with the ſaid Commiſſioners of the Province of North Carolina on ſuch rules and Methods as you ſhall Judge moſt expedient for the adjuſting and finally determining all diſputes or controverſies which may ariſe, touching any Iſlands or other ſmall Slips of Land which may happen to be interſected or cut off by the dividing Line aforeſaid, and which may with more conveniency be included in the One Province or the other by natural water bounds, agreeable to the propoſals aforemention'd, and generally to do and perform all matters and things requiſite for the final determination and Settlement of the ſaid Boundarys, according to the ſaid Propoſals.

And to the end our Service herein may not be diſappointed through the refuſal or delay of the Commiſſioners for the Province of North Carolina, to act in Conjunction with you in ſettling the Boundarys aforeſaid, we do hereby give & grant unto you, or ſuch of you as ſhall be preſent at the time and place appointed for running the dividing Line aforeſaid, full power and Authority to cauſe the ſaid Line to be run and mark'd out, conformable to the ſaid propoſals, having due regard to the doing equal Juſtice to Us, and to the Lords Proprietors of Carolina, any refuſal, diſagreement, or oppoſition of the ſaid Commiſſioners of North Carolina notwithſtanding. And in that caſe we do hereby require you to make a true report of your proceedings to our Lieut Governor, or Commander in Chief of Virginia, in order to be laid before us for our approbation, and final determination herein. And in caſe any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever ſhall preſume to diſturb, Moleſt or reſiſt you, or any of the Officers or Perſons by your direction, in running the ſaid Line, and executing the Powers herein given you, we do by theſe preſents Give and Grant unto you, or ſuch of you as ſhall be attending the ſervice aforeſaid, full power & Authority by Warrant under your or any of your hands and Seals, to order and command all and every the Militia Officers in our counties of Princeſs Anne, Norfolk, Nanſemond, & Iſle of Wight, or other the adjacent Counties, together with the Sheriff of each of the ſaid Counties, or either of them, to raiſe the Militia & poſſe of the ſaid Several Counties, for the removing all force and oppoſition, which ſhall or may be made to you in the due Execution of this our Commiſſion, & we do hereby will and require, as well the Officers of the ſaid militia, as all other our Officers & loving Subjects within the ſaid Counties, & all others whom it may concern, to be obedient, aiding & aſſiſting unto you in all & Singular the Premiſes. And we do in like manner command & require you, to cauſe fair Maps & deſcriptions of the ſaid Dividing Line, and the remarkable places through which it ſhall paſs, to be made and return'd to our Lieut Governor or Commander in Chief of our ſaid Colony for the time being, in order to be entered on Record in the proper Offices within our ſaid Colony. Provided that you do not, by colour of this our Commiſſion, take upon you or determine any Private man's property, in or to the Lands which ſhall by the ſaid dividing Line be included within the Limits of Virginia, nor of any other matter or thing that doth not relate

immediately to the adjuſting, ſettling & final Determination of the Boundary aforeſaid, conformable to the Propoſals hereinbefore mention'd, and not otherwiſe. In Witneſs whereof we have cauſed theſe preſents to be made. Witneſs our truſty and well beloved William Gooch, Eſqr. our Lieut Governor & Commander in Chief of our Colony & Dominion of Virginia, under the ſeal of our ſaid Colony, at Williamſburgh the 14th day of December, 1727, in the firſt Year of our Reign.

WILLIAM GOOCH.

The Governour of N. Carolina's Commiſſion in Obedience to His Majeſty's Order.

Sir Richard Everard, Baronet, Governor, Captain General, Admiral, and Commander in Chief of the ſaid Province: To Chriſtopher Gale Eſqr. Chief Juſtice, John Lovick, Eſqr., Secretary, Edward Moſeley, Eſqr., Surveyor General & William Little, Eſqr., Attorney General, Greeting: Whereas many diſputes & differences have formerly been between the Inhabitants of this province and thoſe of his Majeſty's Colony of Virginia, concerning the Boundarys and Limits between the ſaid two Governments, which having been duly conſidered by Charles Eden, Eſqr., late Governor of this Province, and Alexander Spotſwood, Eſqr., late Governor of Virginia, they agreed to certain propoſals for determining the ſaid controverſy, & humbly offer'd the ſame for his Majeſty's Royal Approbation, and the conſent of the true & abſolute Lords Proprietors of Carolina. and his Majeſty having been pleaſ'd to ſignify his Royal approbation of thoſe propoſals (conſent'd unto by the true and abſolute Lords Proprietors of Carolina) and given directions for adjuſting & ſettling the Boundarys as near as may be to the ſaid Propoſals:

I, therefore, repoſing eſpecial truſt and confidence in you, the ſaid Chriſtopher Gale, John Lovick, Edward Moſeley and William Little, to be Commiſſioners, on the part of the true and abſolute Lords Proprietors, and that you in conjunction with ſuch Commiſſioners as ſhall be nominated for Virginia, uſe your utmoſt Endeavours, and take all neceſſary care in adjuſting and ſettling the ſaid boundarys, by drawing ſuch a diſtinct Line or Lines of Diviſion between the ſaid two Provinces, as near

as reaſonable you can to the Propoſals made by the two former Governours, and the Inſtructions herewith given you. Given at the Council Chamber in Edenton, under my hand, and the Seal of the Colony, the 21ſt day of February, anno Dom 1727, and in the firſt year of the Reign of our ſovereign Lord, King George the Second.

RICHARD EVERARD.

The Proteſt of the Carolina Commiſſioners, againſt our Proceeding on the Line without them.

We the Underwritten Commiſſioners for the Government of N. Carolina, in conjunction with the Commiſſioners on the part of Virginia, having run the Line for the diviſion of the two Colonys from Corotuck Inlet, to the South Branch of Roanoak River; being in the whole about 170 Miles, and near 50 Miles without the Inhabitants, being of Opinion we had run the Line as far as would be requiſite for a long time, Judged the carrying it farther would be a needleſs charge and trouble. And the Grand Debate which had ſo long Subſiſted between the two Governments, about Wyanoke River or Creek, being ſettled at our former meeting in the Spring, when we were ready on our parts to have gone with the Line to the utmoſt Inhabitants, which if it had been done, the Line at any time after might have been continued at an eaſy expenſe by a Surveyor on each ſide; and if at any time hereafter there ſhou'd be occaſion to carry the Line on further than we have now run it, which we think will not be in an Age or two, it may be done in the ſame eaſy manner, without the great Expence that now attends it. And on a Conference of all the Commiſſioners, we have communicated our ſentiments thereon, and declar'd our Opinion, that we had gone as far as the Service required, and thought proper to proceed no farther; to which it was anſwered by the Commiſſioners for Virginia, that they Should not regard what we did, but if we deſiſted, they wou'd proceed without us. But we, conceiving by his Majeſty's Order in Council they were directed to Act in conjunction with the Commiſſioners appointed for Carolina, & having accordingly run the Line jointly ſo far, and Exchanged Plans, thought they cou'd not carry on the Bounds ſingly; but that their proceedings without

us wou'd be irregular & invalid, and that it wou'd be no Boundary, and thought proper to enter our Diſſent thereto. Wherefore, for the reaſons aforeſaid, in the name of His Excellency the Lord Palatine, and the reſt of the true and abſolute Lords proprietors of Carolina, we do hereby diſſent and Diſallow of any farther proceedings with the Bounds without our Concurrence, and purſuant to our Inſtructions do give this our DISSENT in Writing.

EDWARD MOSELY.
WILL LITTLE.
C. GALE.
October 7th, 1728. J. LOVICK.

The Anſwer of the Virginia Commiſſioners to the foregoing proteſt.

WHEREAS, on the 7th of October laſt, a paper was deliver'd to us by the Commiſſioners of N. Carolina, in the Stile of a Proteſt, againſt our carrying any farther, without them, the dividing Line between the 2 Governments, we, the underwritten Commiſſioners on the part of Virginia, having maturely conſidered the reaſons offer'd in the ſaid PROTEST, why thoſe Gentlemen retir'd ſo ſoon from that Service, beg leave to return the following anſwer:

They are pleaſ'd in the firſt place to alledge, by way of Reaſon, that having run the Line near 50 Miles beyond the Inhabitants, it was Sufficient for a long time, in their Opinion for an Age or two. To this we anſwer that, by breaking off ſo ſoon, they did but imperfectly obey his Majeſty's Order, aſſented to by the Lords Proprietors. The plain meaning of that Order was, to aſcertain the Bounds betwixt the two Governments as far towards the Mountains as we cou'd, that neither the King's Grants may hereafter encroach on the Lords Proprietors', nor theirs on the Right of his Majeſty. And tho the diſtance towards the great Mountains be not preciſely determin'd, yet ſurely the Weſt line ſhou'd be carry'd as near them as may be, that both the King's Lands and thoſe of their Lordſhips, may be taken up the faſter, and that his Majeſty's Subjects may as ſoon as poſſible extend themſelves to that Natural Barrier. This they will certainly do in a few Years, when they know diſtinctly in which Government they may enter for the Land, as they

have already done in the more northern Parts of Virginia. So that 'tis Strange the Carolina Commiſſioners ſhould affirm, that the diſtance only of 50 miles above the Inhabitants wou'd be ſufficient to carry the Line for an Age or two, eſpecially conſidering that, two or three days before the date of their Proteſt, Mr. Mayo had enter'd with them for 2000 Acres of Land, within 5 Miles of the Place where they left off. Beſides, if we reflect on the richneſs of the Soil in thoſe parts, & the convenience for Stock, we may foretell, without the Spirit of Divination, that there will be many Settlements higher than thoſe Gentlemen went, in leſs than ten Years, and Perhaps in half that time.

Another reaſon mention'd in the Proteſt for their retiring ſo ſoon from the Service is, that their going farther wou'd be a needleſs charge and Trouble. And they alledge that the reſt may be done by one Surveyor on a ſide, in an eaſy manner, whenever it ſhall be thought neceſſary.

To this we anſwer, that Frugality for the Public is a rare virtue, but when the public Service muſt Suffer by it, it degenerates into a Vice. And this will ever be the Caſe when Gentlemen Execute the orders of their Superiors by halves. but had the Carolina Commiſſioners been ſincerely frugal for their Government, why did they carry out Proviſions Sufficient to ſupport them and their Men for ten Weeks, when they intended not to tarry half that time? This they muſt own to be true, ſince they brought 1000 lbs. of Proviſions along with them. Now, after ſo great an Expence in their preparations, it had been no mighty Addition to their Charge, had they endured the Fatigue 5 or 6 Weeks longer. It wou'd at moſt have been no more than they muſt be at, whenever they finiſh their Work, even tho they ſhou'd fancy it proper to truſt a matter of that conſequence to the Management of one Surveyor. Such a one muſt have a Number of Men along with him, both for his aſſiſtance and Defenſe, and thoſe Men muſt have Proviſions to Support them.

Theſe are all the reaſons theſe Gentlemen think fit to mention in their proteſt, tho they had in truth a more Powerful argument for retiring ſo abruptly, which, becauſe they forgot, it will be neighbourly to help them out. The proviſions they intended to bring along with them, for want of Horſes to carry them, were partly droppt by the way, & what they cou'd bring was huſbanded ſo ill, that after 18 days, (which was the whole time we

had them in our Company,) they had no more left, by their own confeſſion, than two Pounds of Biſcuit for each Man, to carry them home. However, tho this was an unanſwerable Reaſon for Gentlemen for leaving the Buſineſs unfiniſht, it was none at all for us, who had at that time Bread Sufficient for 7 Weeks longer. Therefore, leſt their want of Management might put a ſtop to his Majeſty's Service, & fruſtrate his Royal intentions, we judg'd it our Duty to proceed without them, and have extended the Dividing Line ſo far Weſt as to leave the great Mountains on each hand to the Eaſtward of us. And this we have done with the ſame fidelity & exactneſs as if the Gentlemen had continued with us. Our ſurveyors (whoſe Integrity I am perſwaded they will not call in Queſtion) continued to Act under the ſame Oath, which they had done from the beginning. Yet, notwithſtanding all this, if the Government of N. Carolina ſhou'd not hold itſelf bound by that part of the Line which we made without the Aſſiſtance of the Commiſſioners, yet we ſhall have this benefit in it at leaſt, that his Majeſty will know how far his Lands reach towards the South, & conſequently where his Subjects may take it up, & how far they may be granted without Injuſtice to the Lords Proprietors. To this we may alſo add, that having the Authority of our Commiſſion, to act without the Commiſſioners of Carolina, in Caſe of their diſagreement or refuſal, we thought ourſelves bound upon their Retreat to finiſh the Line without them, leſt his Majeſty's Service might Suffer by any honour or neglect on their part.

WILLIAM DANDRIDGE.
W. BYRD.

The Names of the Commiſſioners to direct the running of the Line between Virginia and North Carolina.

WILLIAM BYRD,
RICH'D FITZ-WILLIAM,
WILLIAM DANDRIDGE,
Eſqrs, } Commiſſioners for Virginia.

CHRISTOPHER GALE,
JOHN LOVEWICK.
EDWARD MOSELEY,
W'M LITTLE,
Eſqrs, } Commiſſioners for Carolina.

ALEX'R IRVIN, WILLIAM MAYO, } Surveyors for Virginia.

EDW'D MOSELEY, SAM'LL SWAN, } Surveyors for N. Carolina.

THE REV'D PETER FOUNTAIN, Chaplain.

Names of the Men employ'd on the part of Virginia to run the Line between that Colony and N. Carolina.

ON THE FIRST EXPEDITION.

1. Peter Jones,
2. Thomas Jones,
3. Thomas Short,
4. Robert Hix,
5. John Evans,
6. Stephen Evans,
7. John Ellis,
8. John Ellis, Jr.
9. Thomas Wilſon,
10. George Tilman,
11. Charles Kimbal,
12. George Hamilton,
13. Robert Allen,
14. Thomas Jones, Jun^{r}
15. James Petillo,
16. Richard Smith,
17. John Rice.

ON THE 2D EXPEDITION.

Peter Jones,
Thomas Jones,
Thomas Short,
Robert Hix,
John Evans,
Stephen Evans,
John Ellis,
John Ellis, Jr.
Thomas Wilſon,
George Tilman,
Charles Kimbal,
George Hamilton,
Thomas Jones, Jun^{r}
James Petillo,
Rich'd Smith,
Abraham Jones,
Edward Powell,
William Pool,
William Calvert,
James Whitlock,
Thomas Page.

Account of the Expence of running the Line between Virginia and N. Carolina.

To the Men's Wages in Currant Money - -	227	10	0
To Sundry Diſburſments for Proviſions, &c. -	174	01	6
To Paid the Men for 7 Horſes loſt - - -	44	0	0
	£495	11	6

The Sum of £495 11 6 Current Money reduc't at 15 p cent. Sterling amounts to	430	8	10
To paid to colo Byrd	142	5	7
To paid to colo Dandridge	142	5	7
To paid Mr. Fitz-William	94	0	0
To paid to the Chaplain, Mr. Fountain	20	0	0
To paid to Mr. William Mayo	75	0	0
To paid to Mr. Alex Irvin	75	0	0
To paid for a Tent and Marquis	20	0	0
	£1000	0	0

This Summ was diſcharg'd by a Warrant out of His Maeſty's Quitrents from the Lands in Virginia.

INDEX.

ADVENTURERS' Viſit, America, 3.
Albemarle, Duke of, 197-211
Albemarle Sound, 54, 59.
Alexander, Sir William, 9.
Allen, Col., 18.
Allen, Robert, 224.
Allen, Widow, 18.
Alligators, 182.
Ambergris, 165.
Amidas, ſails for Virginia, 2.
Anderſon, Charles, 69.
Andros, Sir Edmond, 9.
Angelica Plant, 99.
Anſwer to Proteſt of Carolina Commiſſioners, 221.
Antidotes to Poiſon, 82, 84, 89, 90.
Appalachian Mountain, 152.
Appamattock River, 86, 137-193.
Appendix, 197.
Aprons, Indian, 171.
Aramanchy River, 181.
Argall, Samuel, 10.
Arms of England, erected in Virginia, 92.
Arrows, Obſolete, 73.
Aſhley, Lord, 197-211.

BABOONS, Mode of Robbing Orchards, 100.
Back Bay, 29.
Badges adopted, 135.
Bainton, Epaphroditus, 86.
Ballance, Mr., 35.
Baltimore, Lord, Grant to, 11.
Barlow, ſails for Virginia, 2.
Bears, 89, 98, 113, 117, 120, 125, 126, 127, 128, 130, 135, 140, 145, 158, 167, 175; Deſcription of, 167; Fiſhing by, 112; Meat, Effects of, 145, 187; Oil, 163; Story, 127-155; Tracks, 128.
Beaſts of Burden, unknown to Indians, 157.
Bearſkin, 185-187; Theology of, 106.
Beaver Creek, 91; Dams, 91; Mode of taking, 91.
Beavers, 175-177; how taken, 176.
Beaver Pond, 83.
Bell's Iſland, 23.
Berkley, Lord, Grant to, 11.
Berkley, Sir William, 14, 197-211.
Birth Day of His Majeſty, 143.
Bladen, Colonel, 31.
Blewing Creek, 93, 173.
Bolling, Colonel, 191, 193.
Bolton's Ferry, 70.
Bombo, a Drink, deſcribed, 57.
Boſton founded, 8.
Boundaries of Carolina, 15.
Boundary Commiſſion formed, 17; aſſemble, 23; Survey began, 25, 27; Curioſity occaſioned by, 30, 46; Diſmal Swamp paſſed, 61; adjourn till Autumn, 70; Survey reſumed, 78; abandoned by Carolina Commiſſioners, 95; continued by Virginia Commiſſioners, 96; Survey ſuſpended, 133; returns to Settlement, 186; concluding Remarks, 194; royal

Approbation of, 211; Appointment of, 217; Names of, 223.
Boyle, Mr., 74.
Brandy, Effects of, 79; loſt, 80.
Brinkley, Peter, 52, 54.
Brunſwick County, 83.
Buckingham County, 13.
Buffalo Creek, 97, 170.
Buffalo, 172; how tamed, 173; ſeek, 94, 172; Tracks, 92.
Byrd, William, 217, 223.

CABINS, Indian, 71.
Cabin Branch, 84.
Cabot, Sebaſtian, 9.
Calvert, William, 224.
Canal propoſed, 54.
Candleberry, Myrtle, 19.
Canes, Manner of Growth, 102.
Cane Creek, 102.
Canoe Landing, 86.
Cape Fear River, 181.
Carolina Charter, 197; granted, 14, 15.
Carolina Tea, 24.
Carr, Sir Robert, 10.
Cart for Proviſions, 80, 85, 87.
Carteret, Sir George, 197-211.
Caſquade Creek, 114, 115, 156.
Catawbas, 67, 120, 141, 175, 180, 181, 183, 188.
Cattle, how kept, 32, 46.
Cedar Iſland, 28.
Cenſure of Carolina Commiſſioners, 211.
Chaplain to Boundary Commiſſion, 17, 22, 30, 43, 44, 49, 57, 63, 77, 79, 80, 83, 95, 135, 145, 146, 152, 170, 171, 193; Name of, 224.
Charibbe Iſlands, Route by Way of, 4.
Charity Mountains, 194.
Charming of Serpents, 87.
Charter of Carolina, 197.
Chaſtity, Indian, 187.
Cherokees, 141.
Cheſter County, 13.
Cheſapeak Bay, entered by Coloniſts, 4.
Chowan River, 66, 215, 216.
Chriſtenings, 44, 46, 57, 63, 64, 69, 70, 71, 80, 83, 87, 188.
Church firſt erected, 5; none in North Carolina, 65; none at Edenton, 59.
Churches' Iſland, 23.
Cider, Fondneſs for, 69.
Clarendon, Earl of, 197-211.
Cliff Creek, 164.
Climate, Remarks on, 159, 160.
Cocquade Creek, 101.
Cohungaroota, 137.
Cohunks, 112.
Cold, Benefits of, 160.
Colleton, Sir John, 197-211.
Colleton Iſland, 2, 14.
Colonization of Virginia began, 2.
Colt's-foot, Plant, 97.
Commiſſion of Lieut. Governor of Virginia, 217; Governor of North Carolina, 219.
Confirmation of Boundary, 211.
Connecta Creek, 174.
Connecticut ſettled, 8.
Conſciences troubled, 95.
Corn raiſed, 63.
Coropeak, 45, 52.
Corotuck Inlet, 18, 21, 23, 25, 26, 36, 67; Magiſtrate, 65; River, 215, 220.
Cotton, 41-63.
Couriers de Bois, 152.
Crane Creek, 181.
Cranes, Flight of, 69.
Craford, Mr., 19.
Craven, Earl of, 197-211.
Crocodile, 182.
Cromwell, Oliver, 8.
Crooked Creek, 128, 129, 130, 144.
Cub, Adventure with, 154.
Cuſtard Complexion explained, 32.
Cypreſs Swamp, 45.

DALICARLIA, 12.
Dances, Indian, 72.
Dandridge, William, 217, 223.
Dan River, 86, 101, 111, 112, 114, 116, 156, 160, 164.
Deep River, 181.
Deer, 91, 93, 97, 98, 113, 117, 126, 143, 145, 146, 152, 158, 161, 166, 177; hunting, 109, 170; Skins, 162.
Deſpairing Lover's Leap, 131.
Diſmal Swamp, 19, 37, 38, 41-45, 47, 53; Line through, finiſhed, 61.
Dittany, a Remedy, 163.
Dividing Line, Beginning of, 26, 27.
Dogwood Bark as a Medicine, 80.
Doſier's Iſland, 27.
Dreams, 144.
Duke of York, Grant to, 11.
Dutch ſettle New York, 10.

ECHO, remarkable, 45, 191.
Eden, Charles, 17, 216, 217.
Edenton, N. C., 57-60, 63.
Elizabeth, Queen, grants Virginia, 1.
Elizabeth River, 19, 20, 41, 53.
Elk, 134.
Ellis, John, 224.
Ellis, John, Jr., 224.
Embry, Captain, 191.
Emigration began, 3.
Eno River, 180.
Epigram, 76.
Evans, John, 224.
Evans, Stephen, 224.
Everard, Sir Richard, 17, 219, 220.
Expenſes of Survey, 224.
Eyland, Mr., 30.

FECUNDITY, Secret of, 145.
Fences, how made, 59.
Fern Root, an Antidote to Rattleſnake Bite, 88.
Fires, 120, 128, 129.
Fire hunting, 170.
Fire-arms among Indians, 73, 74.
Fiſh, poiſonous, 166.
Fitzwilliam, Richard, 95, 96, 217, 223.
Flat River, 180.
Flax, 41.
Foxes, 58.
Fort, Indian, 71.
Fountain, Rev. Peter, 224.
Fountain's Creek, 80, 81, 83, 84.
French in Canada, 6; ſettle Nova Scotia, 9; Territory of the, 138.
Frog, Egyptian, 177.
Froſt, 89.
Fugitive Slaves, 34.
Future Life, Indian Belief of, 106.

GALE, Chriſtopher, 49, 219, 221, 223.
Gall-buſh, 19, 36.
Geeſe, wild, 87, 111, 112.
Georgia, Trade with, 142.
Gibbs, Governor, 31.
Ginſeng, 161.
Glue Broth, 147.
Gluttony, 139.
Godwin, Mr., 19.
Gooch, William, 17, 219.
Gooſe, cheated by an Echo, 191.
Gout, Treatment of, 135, 138.
Graffenried, Baron de, 174.
Grapes, 98.
Great Creek, 89, 90, 178, 179.
Great Spirit, 97, 106.
Green Sea, 53.
Griffin, Charles, 75.
Gunpowder Plot, 11.

HAMILTON, George, 224.
Hampden viſits New England, 8.
Harding, William, 27.
Harriſon, Henry, 77.

Haw old Fields, 180.
Haw Tree Creek, 89.
Heath, John, 29, 30.
Hennepin, Father, Alluſion to, 63.
Hermit, Reſidence of, 26.
Hickory Trees, 113.
Hicootomony River, 94.
Hico River, 93, 94, 96, 172.
Highland Ponds, 116, 159.
Hill, John, 80.
Hix, Robert, 224.
Hix's Creek, 164.
Hixe, George, 187.
Horſes for Wood Service, 150; Sores on, 166; left or loſt, 125, 126, 142, 149, 154, 156, 167.
Horſe Flies, 163.
Hoſpitality, Indian, 73.
Hoſtages, Indian, 75.
Hudſon, Henry, 10.
Hunter hired, 88.
Hunting in a Ring, 140, 171.
Hurricane, Effects of, 18.

IBIS, Egyptian, 177.
Indian Chaſtity, 73; Religion, 106; Superſtition, 103; Trade, 2, 141, 180, 183; Wars, 120, 184.
Indians as Horſemen, 188; Failure to civilize, 74, 76; have no Sabbath, 153; Marches of, 157; met, 66; Nottoway, 71; Saponi, 88.
Indolence of Settlers, 56, 184, 185.
Inſects, 162.
Inſtructions of Surveyors, 25.
Inundations, 68.
Ipocoacanna, 85.
Irvin, Mr., 54, 158.
Irvin River, 116, 118, 126, 128, 135, 145, 152.
Irwin, Alexander, 17, 145, 224.
Iſle of Wight County, 68.
Ives, Timothy, 41.

JAMES River, 136, 137, 193.
Jameſtown, 5.
Japon, a Plant, 24.
Jones, Abraham, 224.
Jones, Peter, 224.
Jones, Thomas, 224.
Jones, Thomas, Jr., 224.
Jumping Creek, 91.
Juſtice in Corrotuck Precinct, 65.

KEITH, Cornelius, 184.
Kent County, 13.
Kiawan Mountain, 140.
Kimbal, Charles, 224.
Kinchin, Mr., 69, 70, 78, 79.
Kindred, Mr., 70.
Kinquotan, 5.
Knot's Iſland, 23, 27, 28, 29.

LATITUDES obſerved, 25, 146.
Lawſon, John, 66, 174, 214.
Licences to Traders, 142.
Light, Meteoric, 115.
Lightning, Effects of, 67, 149, 150; Philoſophy of, 110.
Liquors, Scent of, 49; ſpent, 96.
Little, William, 57, 219, 221, 223.
Little River, 53, 180.
Lizzard's Creek, 84.
Locuſt Thicket, 129.
Log Houſes, 59.
Louſe, to pilot North, 40.
Lovers' Leap, 140.
Lovick, John, 219, 221, 223.
Lowland Creek, 112, 156.
Lubberland, 56.
Luke Iſland, 197.

MAGNETIC Variation, 24, 27, 67, 90, 143.
Maidenhair, Plant, 97.
Man loſt, 124, 140, 142.
Mandeville, Sir John, 105.
Maps of Boundary, 70, 95, 96.
Marble, 114.

Marriages, 44, 46; with Indians, 76, 77.
Marſton, Mr., 21.
Martha's Vineyard ſettled, 7.
Martyrdom of Nuns, 79.
Maryland taken from Virginia, 11.
Maſſamony Creek, 7, 177.
Maſſachuſetts Charter, 9; Colony, 7.
Mathias, River of, 197.
Matrimony Creek, 149.
Mayo, Joſeph, 63.
Mayo, William, 17, 54, 222, 224.
Mayo River, 126, 127.
Mead, Andrew, 42, 49.
Medicines furniſhed Surveyors, 38.
Meherin Indians, 66.
Meherin River, 67, 70, 80, 81, 187, 190.
Men employed on Survey, Names, 224.
Merchant, Mr., 31.
Militia Training, 70.
Milk, Scarcity of, 32.
Mines, Proſpect of finding, 138.
Miry Creek, 126.
Miſſionaries, 60.
Moni-ſeep Ford, 86.
Moratuck River, 174.
Moſeley, Edward, 16, 18, 63, 79, 85, 212, 214, 219, 223, 224.
Mountains, 103, 128, 131, 136, 140; as a Barrier, 138.
Mules, 150.
Mumford, Colonel, 87, 179, 185, 193.
Muſic, Power of, 167, 168.
Muſkeetos, 28, 30, 46, 59, 164.

NANSEMOND River, 19, 42, 50, 53, 54, 69.
Nauvaſa, 181.
Neuſe River, 174.
Newcaſtle County, 13.
New England, ſet apart from Virginia, 6; Preachers, chance for, 43; Traders, 23.
New Hampſhire ſettled, 8.
New Haven ſettled, 8.
New Inlet, 23.
New Scotland, 9.
New Jerſey ſettled, 12.
New Plymouth ſettled, 7.
New York ſettled, 10.
Nicholſon, General, 10.
Norfolk, 19.
North Carolina, Settlement of Boundaries of, 15; in Reference for, 65; no Churches in, 65; lawleſs, 65.
Northern's Creek, 33.
North River, 28, 30, 53.
North Weſt River, 21, 22, 31, 33, 53.
Norway Mice, 62.
Noſes affected by Diſeaſe, 33.
Nottoway River, 16, 66, 67, 70, 192, 213, 215.
Nottoway Town, 71.
Nuns, Story of, 189, 190.
Nut-Buſh Creek, 90, 178.
Nut Oil, 113.

OCCAANECHY Indian, 188, 190.
Ohimpamony Creek, 91, 175.
Olive Trees, 160.
Opoſſum, 143.
Orchards, 58, 69.
Order of King and Council upon Propoſals, 216.
Otters, 178.

PACO, a Beaſt of Burthen, 157.
Page, Thomas, 224.
Paint-Creek, 90.
Pamptico River, 180.
Panthers, 117.
Paradiſe, Notions of, 106.
Paraquets injure Orchards, 58.
Parker, Richard, 64, 70.

Partridge, Mountain, 100.
Paſquetunk, 53.
Pea Creek, 84.
Peak, [Peague,] 72.
Pedee River, 181.
Penn, William, 13.
Pennſylvania granted, 13.
Penny Royal, a Remedy, 163.
Pequimons, 53.
Petillo, James, 224.
Philadelphia, 13.
Phipps, Sir William, 9.
Phylarrea, 24.
Pigeons, 119.
Pidgeon-Rooſt Creek, 85, 87.
Pines, 55.
Plymouth Grant, 6.
Pocoſon, 30, 31, 33, 35, 66.
Pochoon, 77.
Point Comfort, 4.
Poiſoned Fields, 89.
Polecats, 192.
Pool, William, 224.
Pork, Effects of, 32, 33.
Port Royal taken, 9.
Poſts to mark Boundary, 63, 64.
Potomac River, 137, 213.
Poverty, wretched Scene of, 184.
Powhatan River, 4.
Preſcot Landing, 21.
Preſents from Indians, 77.
Priſoners taken by Indians, 122.
Propoſals for determining Controverſy, 215.
Proteſt of Carolina Commiſſioners, 96, 220.
Proviſions, Amount of, 78, 79.
Pym viſits New England, 8.

QUAKERS, 12, 13; Quaker Meeting-houſes, 42.
Quern Stones, 184.

RACCOON, 130.
Raft, 154.
Rappahannock, 213.
Rattle-ſnakes, 70, 82-84, 87; Mode of catching Prey, 87; Oil, 139.
Rattle-ſnake Root, 82, 83, 90.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, 1, 2, 3.
Religion of Indians, 106.
Rhode Iſland ſettled, 7.
Rice, John, 224.
Riley, Miles, 185.
Roanoke River, 81, 84-87, 94, 101, 137, 184, 188, 194, 220.
Roanoke Inlet, 2, 3.
Rockahominy, 109, 121, 146, 148.
Roſemary, wild, 110.
Rum, known as "Kill Devil," 57; Indians fond of, 74.

SABBATH-Breaking, 153, 170.
Sable Creek, 111, 158.
St. Andrew's Croſs, 84.
Santee River, 181, 182.
Sapponi Indians, 75, 86, 187, 188.
Sapponi Chappel, 192.
Sawros, 113.
Saxapahaw River, 180, 181.
Scalping, 122, 186.
Senecas, 174.
Seneca Rattle-ſnake Root, 88, 139.
Sharantow River, 137.
Sheep, raiſing of, 81.
Shells, 24.
Short, Thomas, 224.
Silk Graſs, 171.
Sleeping, Manner of, 131.
Smith, Capt. John, 4.
Smith, Richard, 224.
Smoking introduced at Court, 3.
Snakes, 160.
Somerton Creek, 66.
Sommerton Chapel, 65.
South Virginia, how defined, 1.
Southwell, Edw., 215, 216.
Spermaceti, 166.
Spice Trees, 93.
Spired Leaf Silk Graſs, 24.
Spight, Thomas, 45.
Spight, William, 65.

Spotſwood, Col. A., 17, 75, 76, 188, 216, 217, 219.
Squirrels, 132, 179.
Star Graſs, 82.
Staunton River, 86.
Steukenhocks, 188.
Stinker, 193.
Stony Creek, 192.
Sturgeon Creek, 190.
Sturgeon Fiſhery, 190.
Sugar from Trees, 92.
Sugar-Tree Creek, 93, 172.
Sundays diſregarded, 45.
Superſtition, Indian, 97, 103.
Surveyors appointed, 17; Names of, 224.
Suſſex County, 13.
Swan, Samuel, 18, 23, 51, 54, 63, 79, 224.
Swedes, Settlement of, 12.
Sweet Gum Tree, 165.

TAR, 56, 63.
Tarantula Bites, how cured, 168, 169.
Tarapin caught, 165.
Tar River, 180.
Temperate Climate, 159.
Tetero, King, 188.
Tewahominy Creek, 92.
Tewawhomini Creek, 173.
Thankſgiving, 185, 186.
Tike, 162.
Tilman, George, 224.
Tobacco, Purchaſe of, 50; introduced, 2.
Tortures, 122.
Tradeing Path, 179-181.
Traditions, Indian, 175.
Turkeys, wild, 81, 94, 97, 103, 106, 113, 119, 135, 146, 161, 166, 170, 177.
Turkey Buzzards, 50, 94, 146.
Turpentine, 56.
Turtle's Eggs, 165.
Tuſcarora Indians, 174.
Tuſkarooda Creek, 92.

USHEREES, 181.

VIRGINIA, how defined, 1.

WALKER, Mr., 191.
War Parties, how formed, 121.
Water, Clearneſs of, 86.
Weſt Jerſey Grant, 12.
Wharves, Mode of building, 20.
Weyanoke Creek, 15, 16, 212, 213, 220.
Whales, 165, 166.
White, Mr., 28.
Whitlock, William, 224.
Wicocon Creek, 16, 213, 215.
Wicro-quoi Creek, 191.
Wild-cat, 91, 92.
Wilkins, William, 37.
William and Mary's College, 74, 75.
Wilſons, Thomas, 39, 41, 224.
Wolves, 58, 98, 99, 177.
Wool, 41.

YADKIN River, 181, 188.
Yatapſco, 91, 175, 177.
Yaws, deſcribed, 32, 33.

FINIS.

Albi Dis Typhus Albanensis

Hiſtorical Documents

FROM THE

Old Dominion.

No. II.

"Gather up the Fragments that remain."

Hiſtorical Documents

FROM THE

Old Dominion.

No. III.

"Gather up the Fragments that remain."

HISTORY

OF THE

DIVIDING LINE

AND

Other Tracts.

FROM THE PAPERS OF

WILLIAM BYRD,

OF WESTOVER, IN VIRGINIA, ESQUIRE.

VOL. II.

Journey to the Land of Eden, Etc.

Richmond, Va.:
1866.

Edition of 200 Copies.

JOURNEY

TO THE

LAND OF EDEN

AND

Other Tracts.

BY

WILLIAM BYRD,
OF WESTOVER, IN VIRGINIA, ESQUIRE,

Printed from the Original Manuscript.

Richmond, Va.:
1866.

Entered according to Act of Congress in the Year 1866,
By THOMAS H. WYNNE,
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States
for the Eastern District of Virginia.

A

JOURNEY

TO

THE LAND OF EDEN:

ANNO 1733.

HAVING recommended my Family to the Protection of the Almighty, I croſt the river with 2 Servants and 4 Horſes, and rode to Colo. Mumford's. There I met my Friend, Mr. Baniſter, who was to be the kind Companion of my Travels. I ſtayed dinner with the Good Colonel, while Mr. Baniſter made the beſt of his way home, to get his Equipage ready, in order to join me the next day. After dining plentifully, and wiſhing all that was good to the houſehold, I proceeded to Major Mumford's, who had alſo appointed to go along with me. I was the more obliged to Him, becauſe he made me the Complement to leave the Arms of a pretty Wife, to lye on the Cold Ground for my Sake. She ſeemed to chide me with her Eyes, for coming to take her Bedfellow from her, now the Cold weather came on, and to make my peace, I was forced to promiſe to take abundance of Care of Him, in Order to reſtore him Safe and Sound to her Embraces. 1733 Sept. 11

1733 Sept. 12 After the Major had cleared his Pipes, in calling with much Authority about him, he made a Shift to truſs up his Baggage about Nine a'Clock. Near the Same Hour my Old Friend and Fellow Travellor, Peter Jones, came to us compleatly accoutred. Then we fortifi'd ourſelves with a Beef-Steake, kil't our Landlady for good Luck, and mounted about ten. The Major took one Robin Bolling with him, as Squire of his Body, as well as Conductor of his Baggage. Tom Short had promiſed to attend me, but had marry'd a Wife and could not come. We croſ't Hatcher's Run, Gravelly Run, Stony Creek, and in the diſtance of about 20 Miles reach't Sappony chappel, where Mr. Baniſter join'd us. Thus agreeably reinforc't we proceeded ten Miles further, to Major Embry's, on the South Side of Nottoway River. The Major was ill of a purging and vomiting, attended with a Feaver which had brought him low; but I preſcribed him a Gallon or two of Chicken Broth, which waſh't him as clean as a Gun, and quench't his feaver. Here Major Mayo met us, well equip't for a March into the Woods, bringing a Surveyor's Tent, that would Shelter a Small Troop. Young Tom Jones alſo repaired hither to make his Excuſe; but Old Tom Jones, by the priviledge of his Age, neither came nor ſent, ſo that we were not ſo ſtrong as we intended, being diſappointed of 3 of our Ableſt Foreſters. The Entertainment we met with was the leſs Sumptuous by Reaſon of our Landlord's Indiſpoſition. On this Occaſion we were as little Troubleſome as poſſible, by ſending part of our Company to Richard Birch's, who lives juſt by the Bridge over the River. We ſent for an Old Indian called Shacco-Will, living about 7 Miles off, who reckon'd himſelf 78 years Old. This fellow pretended he could conduct us to a Silver Mine, that lyes either upon Eno River, or a Creek of it, not far from where the Tuſcaruros once lived. But by ſome Circumſtances in his Story, it ſeems to be rather a Lead than a Silver Mine. However, ſuch as it

is, he promiſed to go and Shew it to me whenever I pleaſed. 1733 Sept.
To comfort his Heart, I gave him a Bottle of Rum, with which
he made himſelf very happy, and all the Familey very miſerable
by the horrible Noiſe he made all Night.

Our Landlord had great relief from my Remedy, and found 13
himſelf eaſy this Morning. On this Account we took our departure with more Satisfaction, about Nine, and having pick't up our Friends at Mr. Birch's, purſued our Journey over Quoique Creek, and Sturgeon Run, as far as Brunſwick Court houſe, about 12 Miles beyond Notoway. By the way, I ſent a Runner half a Mile out of the Road to Colo. Drury Stith's, who was ſo good as to come to us. We cheer'd Our hearts with Three Bottles of pretty good Madeira, which made Drury talk very hopefully of his copper Mine. We eaſily prevailed with him to let us have his Company, upon condition we would take the Mine in our way. From thence we proceeded to Meherin River, which lys 8 Miles beyond the Court houſe, and in our way forded Great Creek. For fear of being belated, we called not at my Quarter, where Don Pedro is Overſeer, and lives in good Repute amongſt his Neighbours. In Complement to the little Major we went out of our way, to ly at a Settlement of his upon Cock's Creek, 4 Miles Short of Roanoak. Our Fare here was pretty Coarſe, but Mr. Baniſter and I took Poſſeſſion of the Bed, while the reſt of the Company lay in Bulk upon the Floor. This Night the little Major made the firſt diſcovery of an impatient and peeviſh Temper, equally unfit both for a Traveller and a Huſband.

In the Morning my friend Tom Wilſon made me a Viſit, 14
and gave me his Parole that he would meet us at Blue Stone Caſtle. We took Horſe about Nine, and in the diſtance of Ten Miles reach't a Quarter of Colo. Stith's, under the Management of John Tomaſin. This Plantation lies on the Weſt Side of Stith's Creek, which was ſo full of Water, by reaſon of

1733. Sept. a Freſh in the River, that we cou'd not ford it, but we and our Baggage were paddled over in a canoe, and our Horſes swam by our Sides. After Staying here an Hour, with ſome of Diana's Maids of Honour, we croſſ't Miles' Creek a Small Diſtance off, and at the End of Eight Miles were met by a tall, meager Figure, which I took at firſt for an Apparition, but it proved to be Colo. Stith's Miner. I concluded that the unwholeſome Vapours ariſing from the Copper Mine had made this Operator ſuch a Skeleton, but upon Enquiry underſtood that it was Shear Famine had brought him ſo low. He told us his Stomach had not been bleſ't with one Morſel of Meat for more than three Weeks, and that too he had been obliged to Short Allowance of Bread, by reaſon Corn was Scarce and to be fetch't from Tomaſin's, which was ten long Miles from the Mine where he liv'd. However, in Spite of this Spare dyet, the man was chearfull, and uttered no Complaint. Being conducted by him, we reach't the Mines about five a'clock, and pitch't our Tents, for the firſt time, there being yet no Building erected but a Log-houſe, to Shelter the Miner and his two Negroes. We examined the Mine and found it dip't from Eaſt to Weſt, and ſhew'd but a Slender Vein, embody'd in a hard rock of White Spar. The Shaft they had open'd was about 12 feet deep, and 6 Over. I ſaw no more than one Peck of good Ore above Ground, and that promiſ'd to be very Rich. The Engineer ſeem'd very ſanguine, and had not the leaſt doubt but his Employer's Fortune was made. He made us the Complement of 3 Blaſts, and We filled his Belly with good Beef in return, which in his hungry Circumſtances was the moſt agreeable Preſent we cou'd make him.

15 It rain'd in the Morning, which made us decamp later than we intended, but the Clouds clearing away about ten, We wiſh't good luck to the Mine and departed. We left Colo. Stith there to keep faſt with his Miner, and directed our Courſe thro'

the Woods to Boucher's Creek, which hath its Name from an honeſt Fellow that lives upon it. This place is about 6 Miles from Colo. Stith's works, and can alſo boaſt of a very fair Shew of Copper Oar. It is dug out of the ſide of a Hill, that riſes gradually from the Creek to the Houſe. The good Man was from Home himſelf; but his Wife, who was as old as one of the Sybills, refreſh't us with an Ocean of Milk. By the Strength of that Entertainment, we proceeded to Mr. Mumford's Quarter, about 5 Miles off, where Joſeph Colſon is Overſeer. Here our thirſty Companions raiſ'd their drooping Spirits with a chearfull Dram, and having wet both Eyes, we rode on 7 Miles farther to Blue Stone Caſtle, 5 whereof were thro' my own Land, that is to ſay, all above Sandy Creek. My Land there in all extends 10 Miles upon the River; and 3 charming Iſlands, namely, Sapponi, Occaneeche, and Totero, run along the whole length of it. The loweſt of theſe Iſlands is three Miles long, the next 4, and the uppermoſt 3, divided from each other by only a Narrow Strait. The Soil is rich in all of them, the Timber large, and a kind of Pea, very gratefull to Cattle and Horſes, holds green all the Winter. Roanoke River is divided by theſe Iſlands; that part which runs on the North Side is about 80 Yards, and that on the South more than 100. A large Freſh will overflow the lower part of theſe Iſlands, but never covers all, ſo that the Cattle may always recover a Place of Security. The Middlemoſt Iſland, called Occaneeche Iſland, has ſeveral fields in it where Occaneeche Indians formerly lived, and there are ſtill ſome remains of the Peach Trees they planted. Here grow likewiſe excellent wild Hops without any Cultivation. My Overſeer, Harry Morris, did his utmoſt to entertain me and my Company; the worſt of it was, we were obliged all to be litter'd down in one Room, in Company with my Landlady and four children, one of which was very Sick, and conſequently very fretfull.

1733 Sept.

1733 Sept. 16 This being Sunday, and the place where we were quite out of Chriſtendom, very little Devotion went forward. I thought it no harm to take a Sabbath day's Journey, & rode with my Overſeer to a new Entry I had made upon Blue Stone Creek, about 3 Miles from the Caſtle, and found the Land very fertile & convenient. It conſiſts of Low Grounds and Meadows on both Sides the Creek. After taking a View of this, we rode 2 Miles farther to a Stony Place, where there were ſome Tokens of a Copper Mine, but not hopefull enough to lay me under any Temptation. Then we return'd to the Company, and found Tom Wilſon was come according to his promiſe, in order to proceed into the Woods along with Us. Jo. Colſon likewiſe entered into pay, having cautiouſly made his Bargain for a Piſtole. There were 3 Tuſkeruda Indians, (which I underſtood had been kept on my Plantation to hunt for Harry Morris,) that with much ado were alſo perſuaded to be of the party. My Landlady cou'd not forbear diſcovering ſome broad Signs of the fury, by breaking out into inſolent & paſſionate Expreſſions againſt the poor Negroes. And if my Preſence cou'd not awe Her, I concluded ſhe could be very outrageous when I was an hundred Miles off. This inference I came afterwards to underſtand was but too true, for, between the Huſband and the Wife, the Negroes had a hard time of it.

17 We ſet off about nine from Blue Stone Caſtle, and rode up the River 6 Miles, (one half of which diſtance was on my own Land,) as far as Major Mumford's Quarter, where Maſter Hogen was Tenant upon Halves. Here were no great Marks of Induſtry, the Weeds being near as high as the Corn. My Iſlands run up within a little way of this Place, which will expoſe them to the Inrode of the Major's Creatures. That call'd Totero Iſland, lyes too convenient not to receive Damage that way; but we muſt guard againſt it as well as we can. After the Major had convinct Himſelf of the Idleneſs of his Tenant, he

return'd back to Blue Stone, and Harry Morris and I went in queſt of a fine Copper Mine, which he had Secured for me in the Fork. For which purpoſe, about a Quarter of a Mile, higher than Hogen's, we croſt a Narrow Branch of the River into a ſmall Iſland, not yet taken up, and after traverſing that, forded a much wider Branch into the Fork of the Roanoke River. Where we landed was near 3 Miles higher up than the Point of the Fork. We firſt directed our Courſe Eaſterly towards that Point, which was very Sharp, and each Branch of the River Where it divided firſt ſeem'd not to exceed 80 Yards in Breadth. The Land was broken and barren off from the River, till we came within half a Mile of the Point where the Low-grounds began. The Same Sort of Low Ground run up each Branch of the River. That on the Staunton (being the Northern Branch) was but Narrow, but that on the South, which is called the Dan, ſeem'd to carry a wedth of at leaſt half a Mile. After diſcovering this Place, for which I intended to enter, we rode up the Mid-land 5 Miles to view the Mine, which in my Opinion hardly anſwered the Trouble of riding ſo far out of our way. We returned downwards again about 4 Miles, and a Mile from the Point found a good Ford over the North Branch, into the upper end of Totero Iſland. We croſt the River there, and near the Head of the Iſland ſaw a large Quantity of Wild Hops growing, that ſmelt fragrantly, and ſeem'd to be in great perfection. At our firſt Landing we were ſo hampered with Brambles, Vines and Poke Buſhes, that our Horſes could hardly force their way thro' them. However, this Difficulty held only about 25 Yards at each end of the Iſland, all the reſt being very level and free from Underwood. We met with Old Fields where the Indians had formerly liv'd, and the Graſs grew as high as a Horſe and his Rider. In one of theſe Fields were large Duck Ponds, very firm at the Bottom, to which Wild fowl reſort in the Winter. In the Woody part of the Iſland

1733 Sept. 17

1733 Sept. grows a Vetch, that is green all the Winter, and a great Support for Horſes & Cattle, tho' it is to be fear'd the Hogs will root it all up. There is a Cave in this Iſland, in which the laſt Tetero King, with only 2 of his Men, defended himſelf againſt a great Hoſt of Northern Indians, & at laſt oblig'd them to retire. We forded the Streight out of this into Occaneechy Iſland, which was full of large Trees, and rich Land, and the South part of it is too high for any Flood leſs than Noah's to drown it, we rode about 2 Miles down this Iſland, (being half the length of it,) where finding ourſelves oppoſite to Blue Stone Caſtle, we paſſ't the River in a canoe, which had been ordered thither for that purpoſe, & join'd our Friends, very much tired, not ſo much with the length of the Journey, as with the heat of the Weather.

18 We lay by till the return of the Meſſenger that we ſent for the Ammunition, and other things left at the Court houſe. Nor had the Indians yet join'd us according to their Promiſe, which made us begin to doubt of their Veracity. I took a Solitary Walk to the firſt Ford of Blue Stone Creek, about a Quarter of a Mile from the Houſe. This Creek had its Name from the Colour of the Stones, which pav'd the Bottom of it, and are ſo ſmooth that tis probable they will burn into Lime. I took care to return to my Company by Dinner time, that I might not treſpas upon their Stomachs. In the Afternoon I was paddled by the Overſeer and one of my Servants up the Creek, but cou'd proceed little farther than a Mile becauſe of the Shoal Water. All the way we perceiv'd the Bottom of the Creek full of the Blue Stones above mention'd, Sufficient in quantity to build a large Caſtle. At our return we went into the Middle of the River, and ſtood upon a large Blue Rock to Angle, but without any Succeſs. We broke off a Fragment of the Rock, and found it as heavy as ſo much Lead. Diſcouraged by our ill Luck, we repair'd to the Company, who had procured ſome

Pieces of Copper Oar from Cargil's Mine, which ſeem'd full of Metal. This Mine lies about 2 Miles higher than Major Mumford's Plantation, and has a better Shew than any yet diſcover'd. There are ſo many appearances of Copper in theſe Parts, that the Inhabitants ſeem to be all Mine-mad, and neglect making of Corn for their preſent neceſſitys, in hopes of growing very Rich hereafter. 1733 Sept.

The Heavens lowr'd a little upon us in the Morning, but, like a Damſel ruffled by too bold an Addreſs, it ſoon clear'd up again. Becauſe I deteſted Idleneſs, I cauſ'd my Overſeer to paddle me up the River as far as the Streight that divides Occaneechy from Totero Iſland, which is about 20 Yards wide. There runs a Swift Stream continually out of the South part of the River into the North, and is in ſome places very deep. We croſt the South part of the oppoſite Shoar, to view another entry I had made, beginning at Buffalo Creek and running up the River to guard my Iſlands, and keep off bad Neighbours on that Side. The Land ſeems good enough for Corn along the River, but a Quarter of a Mile back tis broken, and full of Stones. After ſatisfying my Curioſity, I return'd the way that I came, and ſhot the ſame Streight back again, and paddled down the River to the Company. When we got home, we laid the foundation of two large Citys. One at Shacco's, to be called Richmond, and the other at the Point of Appamattuck River, to be nam'd Peterſburgh. Theſe Major Mayo offered to lay out into Lots without Fee or Reward. The Truth of it is, theſe two places being the uppermoſt Landing of James and Appamattux Rivers, are naturally intended for Marts, where the Traffick of the Outer Inhabitants muſt Center. Thus we did not build Caſtles only, but alſo Citys in the Air. In the Evening our Ammunition arrived ſafe, and the Indians came to us, reſolving to make part of our Company, upon Con- 19

1733 Sept. dition of their being Supply'd with Powder and Shot, and having the Skins of all the Deer they kill'd to their own proper uſe.

20 Every thing being ready for a March, we left Blue Stone Caſtle about ten. My Company conſiſted of 4 Gentlemen (Namely, Maj Mayo, Maj Mumford, Mr. Baniſter and Mr. Jones,) and 5 Woodſmen, Thomas Wilſon, Henry Morris, Joſeph Colſon, Robert Bolling and Thomas Hooper, 4 Negroes and 3 Tuſcaruda Indians. With this ſmall Troop we proceeded up the River as far as Hogen's, above which, about a quarter of a Mile, we forded into the little Iſland, and from thence into the Fork of the River. The Water was riſen ſo high, that it ran into the Top of my Boots, but without giving me any Cold, altho I rid in my wet Stockings. We Landed 3 Miles above the point of the Fork, and, after marching three Miles farther, reacht the Tenement of Peter Mitchell, the higheſt Inhabitant on Roanoke River. Two Miles above that we forded a Water, which we named Birche's Creek, not far from the Mouth, where it diſcharges itſelf into the Dan. From thence we rode thro charming Low-Grounds, for 6 Miles together, to a larger Stream, which we agreed to call Baniſter River. We were puzzled to find a Ford by reaſon the Water was very high, but at laſt got ſafe over, about 1½ Mile from the Banks of the Dan. In our way we kill'd 2 very large Rattle-Snakes, One of 15 and the other of 12 Rattles. They were both fat, but nobody would be perſuaded to carry them to our Quarters, altho they would have added much to the Luxury of our Supper. We pitcht our Tents upon Baniſter River, where we feaſted on a Young Buck which had the ill luck to croſs our way. It rain'd great part of the Night, with very loud Thunder, which rumbled frightfully amongſt the tall Trees that Surrounded us in that low Ground, but, thank God! without any Damage. Our Indians kill'd 3 deer, but were ſo lazy they brought them not to the Camp, pretending for their Excuſe that they were too lean.

The neceſſity of drying our Baggage prevented us from marching till 11 a'clock. Then we proceeded thro low-Grounds which were tolerably wide for 3 Miles together, as far as a Small Creek, named by us Morris's Creek. This Tract of Land I perſuaded Mr. Baniſter to enter for, that he might not be a loſer by the Expedition. The Low Grounds held good a Mile beyond the Creek, and then the Highland came quite to the River, and made our travelling more difficult. All the way we went we perceiv'd there had been tall Canes lately growing on the Bank of the River, but were univerſally kill'd; And inquiring into the reaſon of this deſtruction, we were told that the Nature of thoſe Canes was, to ſhed their Seed but once in Seven Years, and the Succeeding Winter to dye, and make Room for Young ones to grow up in their Places. Thus much was certain, that 4 Years before we ſaw Canes grow and flouriſh in Several Places, where they now lay dead and dry upon the Ground. The whole diſtance we travell'd in this day by Computation was 15 Miles, and then the Appearance of a black Cloud, which threaten'd a Guſt, oblig'd us to take up our Quarters. We had no ſooner got our Tents over our Heads, but it began to rain and thunder furiouſly, and one Clap ſucceeded the Lightening the ſame Inſtant, and made all tremble before it. But, bleſſed be God! it ſpent its fury upon a tall Oak juſt by our Camp. Our Indians were ſo fearfull of falling into the hands of the Cataubas, that they durſt not loſe Sight of us all day; ſo they kill'd nothing, and we were forc'd to make a temperate Supper upon Bread and Cheeſe. It was Strange we met with no Wild Turkeys, this being the Seaſon in which great Numbers of them uſed to be ſeen towards the Mountains. They commonly perch on the high Trees near the Rivers and Creeks. But this Voyage, to our great Misfortune, there were none to be found. So that we cou'd not commit that Abomination, in the Sight of all Indians, of mixing the Fleſh of Deer & Turkeys in our Broth.

1733 Sept. 21

1733 Sept. 22 We were again oblig'd to dry our Baggage, which had thoroughly ſoakt with the heavy Rain that fell in the Night. While we ſtaid for that, our Hunters knockt down a Brace of Bucks, wherewith we made ourſelves amends for our Scanty Supper the aforegoing Night. All theſe Matters being duly perform'd made it near Noon before we Sounded to Horſe. We marcht about 2 Miles over fine low-Grounds to a moſt pleaſant Stream, which we nam'd the Medway, and by the way diſcover'd a rich Neck of Highland that lay on the South Side of the Dan, and lookt very tempting. Two Miles beyond the Medway, we forded another Creek, which we called Maoſty Creek. The whole diſtance between theſe 2 Streams lay exceeding rich Land, & the ſame continued 2 Miles higher. This Body of Low-Ground tempted me to enter for it, to ſerve as a Stage between my Land at the Fork, and the Land of Eden. The Heavens lookt ſo menacing that we reſolved to take up our Quarters 2 Miles above Maoſty Creek, where we intrencht ourſelves on a riſing Ground. We had no ſooner taken theſe Precautions, but it began to rain unmercifully, and to put out our Fire as faſt as we cou'd kindle it; nor was it only a haſty Shower, but continued with great impetuoſity moſt part of the Night. We preferred a dry Faſt to a Wet Feaſt, being unwilling to expoſe the People to the Weather, to gratify an unreaſonable Appetite. However it was ſome comfort, in the Midſt of our Abſtinence, to dream of the delicious Breakfaſt we intended to make next Morning, upon a fat Doe and two-year-Old Bear our Hunters had kill'd the Evening before. Notwithſtanding all the Care we cou'd take, ſeveral of the Men were dripping wet, and among the reſt, Harry Morris dabbled ſo long in the Rain, that he was ſeized with a Violent Fit of an Ague that Shook him almoſt out of all his Patience.

23 It was no loſs of time to reſt in our Camp according to the Duty of the day, becauſe our Baggage was ſo wet it needed

a whole day to dry it. For this purpoſe we kindled 4 Several Fires, in the abſence of the Sun, which vouchſaft us not one kind look the whole day. My Servant had dropt his Great-Coat Yeſterday, and 2 of the men were ſo good-Natured as to ride back and look for it to-day, and were ſo lucky as to find it. Our Indians having no Notion of the Sabbath, went out to hunt for Something for dinner, and brought a Young Doe back along with them. They laught at the Engliſh for loſing one day in Seven; tho the Joke may be turned upon them for loſing the whole Seaven, if Idleneſs and doing nothing to the purpoſe may be called loſs of time. I lookt out narrowly for Ginſeng, this being the Seaſon when it wears its Scarlet Fruit, but neither now nor any other time during the whole Journey cou'd I find one Single Plant of it. This made me conclude that it delighted not in quite ſo Southerly a Climate; And in truth I never heard of its growing on this Side of 38 Degrees of Latitude. But to make amends we ſaw abundance of Sugar Trees in all theſe Low-Grounds, which the whole Summer long the Woodpeckers tap, for the ſweet Juice that flows out of them. Towards the Evening, a Strong Norweſter was ſo kind as to ſweep all the Clouds away, that had blacken'd our Sky, and moiſten'd our Skins, for ſome time paſt. 1733 Sept.

The reſt the Sabbath had given us made every Body alert this Morning, ſo that we mounted before Nine a'clock. This Diligence happened to be the more neceſſary, by reaſon the Woods we encountered this day were exceedingly Buſhy and uneven. At the diſtance of 4 Miles we forded both Branches of Forked Creek, which lay within 1000 Paces from each other. My Horſe fell twice under me, but, thank God! without any Damage either to Himſelf or his Rider; and Maj'r Mayo's Baggage Horſe roll'd down a Steep Hill, and Ground all his Biſcuit to Rocahominy. My greateſt diſaſter was that, in mounting one of the Precipices, my Steed made a Short turn and gave my Knee an 24

1733 Sept. unmerciful Bang againſt a Tree, & I felt the Effects of it Several Days after. However, this was no Interruption of our Journey, but we went merrily on, and 2 Miles farther croſt Peter's Creek, and 2 Miles after that Jones' Creek. Between theſe Creeks was a Good breadth of Low-Grounds, with which Mr. Jones was tempted, tho he ſhook his head at the diſtance. A little above Jones' Creek, we met with a pleaſant Situation, where the Herbage appear'd more inviting than uſual. The Horſes were ſo fond of it that we determin'd to Camp there, altho' the Sun had not near finiſht his Courſe. This gave ſome of our Company leiſure to go out and ſearch for the Place where our Line firſt croſt the Dan, and by good luck they found it within half a Mile of the Camp. But the Place was ſo altered by the deſolation which had happen'd to the Canes, (which had formerly fringed the Banks of the River a full Furlong deep,) that we hardly knew it again. Pleaſ'd with this diſcovery, I forgot the Pain in my knee, and the whole Company ate their Veniſon without any other Sauce than keen Appetite.

25 The Weather now befriending us, we deſpatcht our little Affairs in good time, and marcht in a Body to the Line. It was already grown very dimm, by reaſon many of the markt Trees were burnt or blown down. However, we made Shift, after riding little more than half a Mile, to find it, and having once found it, ſtuck as cloſe to it as we could. After a March of 2 Miles, we got upon Cane Creek, where we ſaw the ſame Havock amongſt the Old Canes that we had obſerv'd in other Places, & a whole Foreſt of Young Ones Springing up in their Stead. We purſued our Journey over Hills and Dales till we arriv'd at the Second Ford of the Dan, which we paſt with no other Damage than Sopping a little of our Bread, and Shipping ſome Water at the Tops of our Boots. The late Rains having been a little immoderate, had raiſ'd the Water and made a cur-

rant in the River. We drove on 4 Miles farther to a plentifull Run of very clear Water, and quarter'd on a riſing Ground a Bow-Shot from it. We had no ſooner pitcht the Tents, but one of our Woodſmen alarm'd us with the News that he had follow'd the Track of a great Body of Indians to the place where they had lately encampt. That there he had found no leſs than Ten Huts, the Poles whereof had Green Leaves ſtill freſh upon them. That each of theſe Huts had Shelter'd at leaſt Ten Indians, who, by ſome infallible Marks, muſt have been Northern Indians. That they muſt needs have taken their departure from thence no longer ago than the day before, having erected thoſe Huts to protect themſelves from the late Heavy Rains. Theſe Tidings I could perceive were a little Shocking to ſome of the Company, and particularly the little Major, whoſe Tongue had never lain ſtill, was taken Speechleſs for 16 Hours. I put as good a Countenance upon the Matter as I cou'd, aſſuring my Fellow Travellers, that the Northern Indians were at Peace with us, and altho one or two of them may now and then commit a Robbery or a Murder, (as other Rogues do,) yet nationally and avowedly they would not venture to hurt us. And in Caſe they were Cataubas, the Danger would be as little from them, becauſe they are too fond of our Trade to looſe it for the pleaſure of Shedding a little Engliſh Blood. But Suppoſing the worſt, that they might break thro all the Rules of Self-Intereſt, and attack us, yet we ought to ſtand bravely on our defence, and ſell our lives as dear as we could. That we ſhould have no more fear on this Occaſion, than juſt to make us more watchfull and better provided to receive the Enemy, if they had the Spirit to venture upon us. This Reaſoning of mine, tho it could not remove the Panick, yet it abated ſomething of the Palpitation, and made us double our Guard. However, I found it took off the Edge of moſt of our Appetites, for every thing but the Rum Bottle, which was

1733 Sept.

1733 Sept. more in favour than ever, becauſe of its Cordial Quality. I Hurt my other Knee this afternoon, but not enough to ſpoil either my dancing or my Stomach.

26 We liked the place ſo little that we were glad to leave it this Morning as ſoon as we could. For that reaſon we were all on Horſeback before Nine, and after riding 4 Miles arriv'd at the Mouth of Sable Creek. On the Eaſtern Bank of that Creek, 6 Paces from the Mouth, and juſt at the Brink of the River Dan, ſtands a Sugar Tree, which is the beginning of my fine Tract of land in Carolina, call'd the Land of Eden. I cauſ'd the Initial Letters of my name to be cut on a large Poplar and Beech near my Corner, for the more eaſy finding it another time. We then made a beginning of my Survey, directing our Courſe due South from the Sugar Tree above-mention'd. In a little way we perceived the Creek forkt, and the Weſtern Branch was wide enough to merit the name of a River. That to the Eaſt was much leſs, which we interſected with this Courſe. We ran Southerly a Mile, and found the Land good all the way, only towards the End of it we ſaw the Trees deſtroy'd in ſuch a Manner that there were hardly any left to mark my Bounds. Haveing finiſht this Courſe, we encampt in a charming Peninſula, form'd by the Weſtern Branch of the Creek. It contain'd about 40 Acres of very Rich Land, gradually deſcending to the Creek, and is a delightful Situation for the Mannor Houſe. My Servant had fed ſo intemperately upon Bear, that it gave him a Scouring, and that was followed by the Piles, which made riding worſe to him than Purgatory. But anointing with the Fat of the ſame Bear, he ſoon grew eaſy again.

27 We were ſtirring early from this enchanting place, and ran 8 Miles of my back Line, which tended South 84½ Weſterly. We found the Land uneaven, but tolerably good, tho very thin of Trees, and thoſe that were ſtanding fit for little but fewel

and Fence-Rails. Some Conflagration had effectually open'd the Country, and made room for the Air to circulate. We croſt both the Branches of Low Land Creek, and Sundry other Rills of fine Water. From every Eminence we diſcover'd the Mountains to the N. Weſt of us, tho' they ſeem'd to be a long way off. Here the Air felt very refreſhing and agreeable to the Lungs, having no Swamps or Marſhes to taint it. Nor was this the only good Effect it had, but it likewiſe made us very hungry, ſo that we were forc'd to halt and pacify our Appetites with a frugal Repaſt out of our Pockets, which we waſht down with Water from a Purling Stream juſt by. My knees pain'd me very much, tho' I broke not the Laws of Travelling by uttering the leaſt Complaint. Meaſuring and marking ſpent ſo much of our Time, that we could advance no further than 8 Miles, and the Chain Carryer's thought that a great way. In the Evening we took up our Quarters in the Low-Grounds of the River, which our Scouts inform'd us was but 200 Yards ahead of us. This was no Small ſurprize, becauſe we had flatter'd ourſelves that this Back Line would not have Interſected the Dan at all; but we found Ourſelves miſtaken, and plainly perceived that it ran more Southerly than we imagined, and in all likelihood pierces the Mountains where they form an Amphitheater. The Veniſon here was lean; and the misfortune was we met no Bear in ſo open a Country, to greaſe the way and make it Slip down. In the Night our Centinel alarm'd us with an Idle Suſpicion that he heard the Indian Whiſtle, (which amongſt them is a Signal for attacking their Enemies.) This made every one Stand manfully to his Arms in a Moment, and I found no Body more undiſmayed in this Surprize than Mr. Baniſter; But after we had put ourſelves in Battle Array, we diſcover'd this Whiſtle to be nothing but the Nocturnal Note of a little harmleſs Bird, that inhabits thoſe Woods. We were glad to find the Miſtake, and commending the Centinel for his

1733 Sept.

1733 Sept. great Vigilance, compoſ'd our Noble Spirits again to reſt till the Morning. However, ſome of the Company dream'd of nothing but Scalping all the reſt of the Night.

28 We ſnapt up our Breakfaſt as faſt as we cou'd, that we might have the more leiſure to pick our way over a very bad Ford acroſs the River. Tho', bad as it was, we all got ſafe on the other ſide. We were no ſooner Landed, but we found ourſelves like to encounter a very rough and almoſt impaſſable Thicket. However, we Scuffled thro' it without any diſmay or Complaint. This was a Copſe of young Saplins, conſiſting of Oak, Hiccory and Saſſafras, which are the growth of a fertile Soil. We gain'd no more than 2 Miles in 3 Hours in this perplext Place, and after that had the Pleaſure to iſſue out into opener Woods. The Land was generally good, tho' pretty bare of Timber, and particularly we traverſt a rich Levil of at leaſt 2 Miles. Our whole day's Journey amounted not quite to 5 Miles, by reaſon we had been ſo hamper'd at our firſt ſetting out. We were glad to take up our Quarters early in a piece of fine low-Grounds, lying about a Mile N. of the River. Thus we perceiv'd the River edged away gently towards the South, and never likely to come in the way of our Courſe again. Nevertheleſs, the laſt time we ſaw it, it kept much the ſame Breadth and depth that it had where it divided its Waters from the Staunton, and in all likelihood holds its own quite as high as the Mountains.

29 In Meaſuring a Mile and a half farther we reacht the lower Ford of the Irvin, which branches from the Dan about 2 Miles to the S. S. E. of this place. This River was very near Three Score Yards over, and in many places pretty deep. From thence, in little more than a Mile, we came to the End of this Courſe, being in length 15 Miles and 88 Poles. And ſo far the Land held reaſonably good; but when we came to run our Northern Courſe of 3 Miles, to the place where the Country line interſects the ſame Irvin higher up, we paſt over nothing

but Stony Hills, and barren Grounds, cloth'd with little Timber, and refreſht with leſs Water. All my hopes were in the Riches that might lye under Ground, there being may goodly Tokens of Mines. The Stones which paved the River, both by their Weight & Colour, promiſ'd abundance of Metal; but whether it be Silver, Lead or Copper, is beyond our Skill to diſcern. We alſo diſcover'd many ſhews of Marble, of a white ground, with Streaks of red and purple. So that tis poſſible the Treaſure in the Bowels of the Earth may make ample amends for the Poverty of its Surface. We encampt on the Bank of this River, a little below the Dividing Line, and near the lower end of an Iſland half a Mile long, which, for the Metallick Appearances, we dignify'd with the Name of Potoſi. In our way to this place we treed a Bear, of ſo mighty a Bulk, that when we fetcht her down ſhe almoſt made an Earthquake. But neither the Shot nor the fall diſabled her ſo much, but ſhe had like to have hugg'd one of our Dogs to Death in the Violence of her Embrace. We exerciſ'd the Diſcipline of the Woods, by toſſing a very careleſs Servant in a Blanket, for loſſing one of our Axes. 1883 Sept.

This being Sunday, we were glad to reſt from our Labours; and, to help reſtore Our Vigour, ſeveral of us plung'd into the River, notwithſtanding it was a froſty morning. One of our Indians went in along with us, and taught us their way of Swimming. They ſtrike not out both hands together, but alternately one after another, whereby they are able to ſwimm both farther and faſter than we do. Near the Camp grew Several large Cheſtnut trees very full of Cheſtnuts. Our men were too lazy to climb the Trees for the ſake of the Fruit, but, like the Indians, choſe rather to cut them down, regardleſs of thoſe that were to come after. Nor did they eſteem ſuch kind of Work any breach of the Sabbath, ſo long as it helpt to fill their Bellys. One of the Indians ſhot a Bear, which he lugg'd about half a 30

1733 Oct. Mile for the good of the Company. Theſe Gentiles have no diſtinction of Days, but make every day a Sabbath, except when they go out to war or a hunting, and then they will undergo incredible Fatigues. Of other work the Men do none, thinking it below the dignity of their Sex, but make the poor Women do all the Drudgery. They have a blind Tradition amongſt them, that work was firſt laid upon Mankind by the fault of a Female, and therefore tis but juſt that Sex ſhould do the greateſt part of it. This they plead in their Excuſe; but the true reaſon is, that the Weakeſt muſt always go to the Wall, and Superiority has from the beginning ungenerouſly impoſ'd Slavery on thoſe who are not able to reſiſt it.

1 I plung'd once more into the River Irvin this Morning, for a Small Cold I had caught, and was intirely cured by it. We ran the 3 Mile Courſe from a White Oak ſtanding on my Corner upon the Weſtern Bank of the River, and interſected the place, where we ended the Back line exactly, and fixt that corner at a Hiccory. We ſteer'd South from thence about a Mile, and then came upon the Dan, which thereabouts makes but narrow Low-Grounds. We forded it about a Mile and a half to the Weſtward of the place where the Irvin runs into it. When we were over, we determin'd to ride down the River on that Side, and for 3 Miles found the High-Land come cloſe down to it, pretty barren and uneaven. But then on a Sudden the Scene chang'd, and we were ſurpriz'd with an Opening of large Extent, where the Sauro Indians once liv'd, who had been a conſiderable Nation. But the frequent Inroads of the Senecas annoy'd them inceſſantly, and oblig'd them to remove from this fine Situation about 30 Years ago. They then retired more Southerly, as far as Pee Dee River, and incorporated with the Kewawees, where a Remnant of them is ſtill ſurviveing. It muſt have been a great Misfortune to them to be oblig'd to abandon ſo beautiful a dwelling, where the Air is wholeſome,

and the Soil equal in Fertility to any in the World. The River is about 80 Yards wide, always confin'd within its lofty Banks, and rolling down its Waters, as ſweet as Milk, and as clear as Cryſtal. There runs a charming Level, of more than a Mile Square, that will bring forth like the Lands of Egypt, without being overflow'd once a Year. There is ſcarce a Shrub in View to intercept your Proſpect, but Graſs as high as a Man on Horſeback. Towards the Woods there is a gentle Aſcent, till your Sight is intercepted by an Eminence, that overlooks the whole Landſkape. This ſweet Place is bounded to the Eaſt by a fine Stream, call'd Sauro Creek, which running out of the Dan, and tending Weſterly, makes the whole a Peninſula. I cou'd not quit this Pleaſant Situation without Regret, but often faced about to take a Parting look at it as far as I could ſee, and ſo indeed did all the reſt of the Company. But at laſt we left it quite out of Sight, and continued our Courſe down the River, till where it interſects my Back line, which was about 5 Miles below Sauro Town. We took up our Quarters at the ſame Camp where we had a little before been alarm'd with the Suppoſ'd Indian Whiſtle, which we could hardly get out of our heads. However, it did not Spoil our reſt; but we dreamt all Night's of the delights of Tempe and the Elyſian Fields. 1733 Oct.

We awak'd early from theſe innocent Dreams, and took Our way along my Back line till we came to the Corner of it. From thence we Slanted to the Country Line, and kept down as far as the next fording place of the River, making in the whole 18 Miles. We breath'd all the way in pure Air, which ſeem'd Friendly to the Lungs, and circulated the Blood and Spirits very briſkly. Happy will be the People deſtin'd for ſo wholeſome a Situation, where they may live to fulneſs of days, and which is much better Still, with much Content and Gaiety of Heart. On every riſeing Ground we faced about to take our leave of the Mountains, which ſtill ſhew'd their Towering 2

1733 Oct. Heads. The Ground was uneaven, riſing into Hills, and ſinking into Valleys great part of the way, but the Soil was good, abounding in moſt places with a greaſy black Mould. We took up our Quarters on the Weſtern Bank of the River, where we had forded it at our coming up. One of our Men, Joſeph Colſon by Name, a timorous, lazy Fellow, had ſquandered away his Bread, and grew very uneaſy when his own ravening had reduced him to Short Allowance. He was one of thoſe Drones who love to do little and eat much, and are never in humour unleſs their Bellies are full. According to this wrong turn of Conſtitution, when he found he could no longer revel in Plenty, he began to break the Rules by complaining and threatening to deſert. This had like to have brought him to the Blanket, but his ſubmiſſion repriev'd him. Tho' Bread grew a little Scanty with us, we had Veniſon in abundance, which a true Woodſman can eat contentedly without any Bread at all. But Bear's fleſh needs ſomething of the Farinaceous, to make it paſs eaſily off the Stomach. In the Night we heard a Dog bark at ſome diſtance, as we thought, when we ſaw all our own Dogs lying about the Fire. This was another Alarm; but we ſoon diſcover'd it to be a Wolf, which will ſometimes Bark very like a Dog, but ſomething Shriller.

3 The fine Seaſon continuing, we made the moſt of it by leaving our Quarters as ſoon as poſſible. We began to meaſure and mark the Bounds of Maj'r Mayo's Land on the South of the Country Line. In order to do this we marcht round the Bent of the River, but he being oblig'd to make a traverſe, we cou'd reach no farther than 4 Miles. In the Diſtance of about a Mile from where we lay, we croſt Cliff Creek, which confin'd its Stream within ſuch high Banks that it was difficult to find a Paſſage over. We kept cloſe to the River, and 2 Miles farther came to Hixe's Creek, where abundance of Canes lay dry and proſtrate on the Ground, having Suffer'd in the late

Septennial Slaughter of that Vegetable. A Mile after that we forded another Stream, which we called Hatcher's Creek, from two Indian Traders of that Name, who uſ'd formerly to carry Goods to the Sauro Indians. Near the Banks of this Creek I found a Large Beech Tree, with the following Inſcription cut upon the Bark of it, "J. H., H. H., B. B., lay here the 24th of May, 1673." It was not difficult to fill up theſe Initials with the following Names, Joſeph Hatcher, Henry Hatcher and Benjamin Bullington, 3 Indian Traders, had lodged near that Place 60 Years before, in their way to the Sauro Town. But the Strangeſt part of the Story was this, that theſe letters, cut in the Bark, ſho'd remain perfectly legible ſo long. Nay, if no Accident befalls the Tree, which appears to be ſtill in a flouriſhing Condition, I doubt not but this piece of Antiquity may be read many years hence. We may alſo learn from it, that the Beech is a very long-liv'd Tree, of which there are many exceedingly large in theſe Woods. The Major took in a pretty deal of rich low-Ground into his Survey, but unhappily left a a greater Quantity out, which proves the Weakneſs of making Entrys by gueſs. We found the Dan fordable hereabouts in moſt places. One of the Indians ſhot a Wild Gooſe, that was very louſy, which nevertheleſs was good meat, and prov'd thoſe Contemptible Taſters to be no bad Taſters. However, for thoſe Stomachs that were ſo unhappy as to be Squeamiſh, there was plenty of fat Bear, we having kill'd two in this day's March. 1733 Oct.

I cauſ'd the Men to uſe double Diligence to aſſiſt Maj'r Mayo 4 in fixing the Bounds of his Land, becauſe he had taken a great deal of pains about Mine. We therefore mounted our Horſes as ſoon as we had ſwallow'd our Breakfaſt. Till that is duly perform'd a Woodſman makes a Conſcience of expoſeing himſelf to any Fatigue. We proceeded then in his Survey, and made an End before Night, tho' moſt of the Company were of Opin-

1733. Oct. ion the Land was hardly worth the Trouble. It ſeem'd moſt of it before below the Character the Diſcoverers had given him of it. We fix'd his Eaſtern Corner on Cocquade Creek, and then continued our March, over the Hills and far away along the Country Line 2 Miles farther. Nor had we ſtopt there, unleſs a likelihood of Rain had oblig'd us to encamp on an Eminence where we were in no danger of being overflow'd. Peter Jones had a ſmart fit of an Ague, which Shook him ſeverely, tho' he bore it like a Man; but the ſmall Major had a ſmall Fever, and bore it like a Child. He groan'd as if he had been in Labour, and thought verily it wou'd be his Fate to die like a Mutinous Iſraelite in the Wilderneſs, and be bury'd under a heap of Stones. The Rain was ſo kind as to give us Leiſure to ſecure our Selves againſt it, but came however time enough to interrupt our Cookery, ſo that we ſupt as temperately as ſo many Philoſophers, and kept ourſelves Snug within our Tents. The worſt part of the Story was, that the Centinels could hardly keep our Fires from being extinguiſht by the heavineſs of the Shower.

5 Our Invalids found themſelves in travelling Condition this Morning, and began to conceive hopes of returning home and dying in their own Beds. We purſued our Journey thro' uneven and perplext Woods, and in the thickeſt of them had the Fortune to knock down a Young Buffalo, 2 Years old. Providence threw this vaſt Animal in our way very Seaſonably, juſt as our Proviſions began to fail us. And it was the more welcome too, becauſe it was change of dyet, which of all Varietys, next to that of Bed-fellows, is the moſt agreeable. We had liv'd upon Veniſon and Bear til our Stomachs loath'd them almoſt as much as the Hebrews of Old did their Quails. Our Butchers were ſo unhandy at their Buſineſs that we grew very lank before we cou'd get our Dinner. But when it came, we found it equal in in goodneſs to the beſt Beef. They made it the longer becauſe they kept Sucking the Water out of the Guts, in imitation of the

Catauba Indians, upon the belief that it is a great Cordial, and will even make them drunk, or at leaſt very Gay. We encampt upon Hico River, pretty high up, and had much ado to get our houſe in order, before a heavy Shower deſcended upon us. I was in pain leſt our ſick men might ſuffer by the Rain, but might have ſpar'd myſelf the Concern, becauſe it had the Effect of a Cold bath upon them, and drove away their diſtemper, or rather chang'd it into a Canine Appetite, that devour'd all before it. It rain'd Smartly all Night long, which made our Situation on the Low-Ground more fit for Otters than Men. 1733 Oct.

We had abundance of drying Work this Morning after the Clouds broke away and ſhew'd the Sun to the happy Earth. It was impoſſible for us to ſtrike the Tents till the afternoon, and then we took our departure, and made an eaſy march of 4 Miles to another Branch of Hico River, which we call'd Jeſuit's Creek, becauſe it miſled us. We lugg'd as many of the dainty Pieces of the Buffalo along with us as our poor Horſes cou'd carry, envying the Wolves the pleaſure of ſuch Luxurious dyet. Our Quarters were taken upon a delightful Eminence, that Scornfully overlookt the Creek, and afforded us a dry habitation. We made Our Supper on the Tongue and Udder of the Buffalo, which were ſo good, that a Cardinal Legat might have made a comfortable Meal upon them during the Carnaval. Nor was this all, but we had ſtill a rarer Morſel, the Bunch riſeing up between the Shoulders of this Animal, which is very tender and very fat. The Primeings of a Young Doe, which one of the Men brought to the Camp, were ſlighted amidſt theſe Daintys, nor wou'd even our Servants be fobb'd off with Cates ſo common. The Low-Grounds of this creek are wide in many places, and Rich, but ſeem to ly within reach of every Inundation; and this is commonly the Caſe with moſt low-Grounds, that ly either on the Rivers or on the Creeks that run into them. So great an Inconvenience leſſens their Value very 6

1733 Oct. much, and makes High-Land, that is juſt tolerable, of greater Advantage to the Owner. There he will be more likely to reap the Fruits of his Induſtry every year, and not run the riſque, after all his Toil, to ſee the Sweat of his Brow carry'd down the Stream, and perhaps many of his Cattle drown'd into the Bargain. Perhaps in times to come People may Bank their Low-Grounds as they do in Europe, to confine the Water within its natural Bounds to prevent theſe Inconveniences.

7 The Scarcity of Bread, join'd to the Impatience of ſome of our Company, laid us under a kind of Neceſſity to haſten our Return home. For that reaſon we thought we might be excuſed for making a Sabbath day's Journey of about 5 Miles, as far as our Old Camp upon Sugar Tree Creek. On our way we forded Buffalo Creek, which alſo emptys its Waters into Hico River. The Woods we rode thro' were open, and the Soil very promiſing, great part thereof being Low-Grounds, full of tall and large Trees. A She Bear had the ill luck to croſs our way, which was large enough to afford us ſeveral Luxurious Meals. I paid for Violateing the Sabbath by loſeing a pair of Gold Buttons. I pitcht my Tent on the very ſpot I had done when we ran the Dividing Line between Virginia and Carolina. The Beech whoſe bark recorded the names of the Carolina Commiſſioners was ſtill Standing, and we did them the Juſtice to add to their Names a Sketch of their Characters. We got our Houſe in order time enough to walk about and make ſome ſlight obſervations. There were Sugar Trees innumerable growing in the Low-Grounds of this Creek, from which it receiv'd its name. They were many of them as tall as large Hiccories, with Trunks from 15 to 20 Inches through. The Woodpeckers, for the pleaſure of the ſweet Juice which theſe Trees yield, pierce the Bark in many places, and do great damage, tho' the Trees live a great while under all theſe Wounds. There grows an infinite quantity of Maidenhair,

which ſeems to delight moſt in Rich grounds. The Sorrel Tree is frequent there, whoſe leaves, brew'd in Beer, are good in Dropſyes, Green-Sickneſs, and Cachexys. We alſo ſaw in this Place abundance of papa Trees, the Wood whereof the Indians make very dry on purpoſe to rub Fire out of it. Their Method of doing it is this: They hold one of theſe dry Sticks in each hand, and by rubing them hard and quick together, rarify the Air in ſuch a Manner as to fetch Fire in ten Minutes. Whenever they offer any Sacrifice to their God, they look upon it as a Profanation to make uſe of Fire already kindled, but produce freſh Virgin Fire for that purpoſe, by rubbing 2 of theſe Sticks together that never had been uſ'd before on any Occaſion. 1733 Oct.

After fortifying ourſelf with a Bear Breakfaſt, Majr Mayo took what help he thought neceſſary, and began to Survey the Land, with which the Commiſſioners of Carolina had preſented him upon this Creek. After running the bounds, the Major was a little diſappointed in the Goodneſs of the Land, but as it had coſt him nothing it cou'd be no bad pennyworth, as his upper Tract really was. While that buſineſs was carrying on, I took my old Friend and Fellow Traveller, Tom Wilſon, and went to view the Land I had enter'd for upon this Creek, on the North of the Country Line. We rode down the Stream about 6 Miles, croſſing it ſundry times, and found very wide Low Grounds on both ſides of it, only we obſerved, wherever the Low-Grounds were Broad on one ſide the Creek, they were narrow on the Other. The High Lands we were oblig'd to paſs over were very good, & in ſome places deſcended ſo gradually to the edge of the Low-grounds, that they form'd very agreeable Proſpects and pleaſant Situations for building. About 4 Miles from the Line, Sugar Tree Creek empty'd itſelf into the Hico, which with that Addition ſwell'd into a fine River. In this Space we ſaw the moſt, and moſt promiſing good Land 8

1733 Oct. we had met with in all our Travels. In our way we Shot a Doe, but ſhe not falling immediately, we had loſt our Game had not the Ravens, by their Croaking, conducted us to the Thicket where ſhe fell. We plunged the Carcaſs of the Deer into the Water, to ſecure it from theſe Ominous Birds till we return'd, but an Hour afterwards were ſurpriz'd with the Sight of a wolf which had been fiſhing for it, and devour'd one Side. We knockt down an antient She Bear that had no fleſh upon her Bones, ſo we left it to the Free-Booters of the Forreſt. In coming back to the Camp we diſcover'd a Solitary Bull Buffalo, which boldly ſtood his Ground, contrary to the Cuſtom of that Shy Animal, we ſpar'd his Life, from a principle of never Slaughtering an Innocent Creature to no purpoſe. However, we made ourſelves ſome Diverſion, by trying if he wou'd face our Dogs. He was ſo far from retreating at their Approach, that he ran at them with great fierceneſs, cocking up his ridiculous little Tail, and grunting like a Hog. The Dogs in the mean time only plaid about him, not venturing within reach of his Horns, and by their nimbleneſs came off with a whole Skin. All theſe Adventures we related at our return to the Camp, and what was more to the purpoſe, we carry'd to them the ſide of Veniſon which the Wolf had vouchſaft to leave us. After we had compoſ'd ourſelves to reſt, Our Horſes ran up to Our Camp as faſt as their Hobbles would let them. This was to ſome of us a certain Argument that Indians were near, whoſe ſcent the Horſes can no more endure than they can their Figures; tho' it was more likely they had been ſcar'd by a Panther or ſome other Wild Beaſt, the glaring of whoſe Eyes are very terrifying to them in a dark Night.

9 Majr Mayo's Survey being no more than half done, we were oblig'd to amuſe Ourſelves another day in this Place. And that the time might not be quite loſt, we put our Garments and Baggage into good repair. I for my part never ſpent a day ſo

well during the whole Voyage. I had an impertinent Tooth in my upper Jaw, that had been looſe for ſome time, and made me chew with great Caution. Particularly I cou'd not grind a Biſcuit but with much deliberation and preſence of mind. Tooth-Drawers we had none amongſt us, nor any of the Inſtruments they make uſe of. However, Invention ſupply'd this want very happily, and I contriv'd to get rid of this troubleſome Companion by cutting a Caper. I cauſed a Twine to be faſten'd round the Root of my Tooth, about a Fathom in Length, and then ty'd the other End to the Snag of a Log that lay upon the Ground, in ſuch a Manner that I cou'd juſt ſtand upright. Having adjuſted my String in this manner, I bent my Knees enough to enable me to ſpring vigorouſly off the Ground, as perpendicularly as I cou'd. The force of the Leap drew out the Tooth with ſo much eaſe that I felt nothing of it, nor ſhould have believ'd it was come away, unleſs I had ſeen it dangling at the End of the String. An Under tooth may be fetcht out by ſtanding off the Ground and faſtning your String at due diſtance above you. And having ſo fixt your Gear, jump off your Standing, and the weight of your Body, added to the force of the Spring, will poize out your Tooth with leſs pain than any Operator upon Earth cou'd draw it. This new way of Tooth-drawing, being ſo ſilently and deliberately perform'd, both ſurprized and delighted all that were preſent, who cou'd not gueſs what I was going about. I immediately found the benefit of getting rid of this troubleſome Companion, by eating my Supper with more comfort than I had done during the whole Expedition. 1733 Oct.

In the Morning we made an End of our Bread, and all the reſt of Our Proviſion, ſo that now we began to travel pretty light. All the Company were Witneſſes how good the Land was upon Sugar Tree Creek, becauſe we rode down it 4 Miles, till it fell into Hico River. Then we directed our Courſe over 10

1733 Oct. the High Land, thinking to Shorten our way to Tom Wilſon's Quarter. Nevertheleſs, it was our Fortune to fall upon the Hico again, and then kept within ſight of it ſeveral Miles together, till we came near the Mouth. Its Banks were high and full of precipices on the Eaſt Side, but it afforded ſome Low-Grounds on the Weſt. Within 2 Miles of the Mouth are good ſhews of Copper Mines, as Harry Morris told me, but we ſaw nothing of them. It runs into the Dan juſt below a large Fall, but the chain of Rocks dont reach quite croſs the River, to intercept the Navigation. About a Mile below lives Aaron Pinſton, at a Quarter belonging to Thomas Wilſon, upon Tewahominy Creek. This man is the higheſt Inhabitant on the South ſide of the Dan, and yet reacons himſelf perfectly ſafe from danger. And if the Bears, Wolves, and Panthers were as harmleſs as the Indians, his Stock might be ſo too. Tom Wilſon offer'd to knock down a Steer for us, but I would by no means accept of his Generoſity. However, we were glad of a few of his Peas and Potatoes, and ſome Raſhers of his Bacon, upon which we made good Chear. This Plantation lys about a Mile from the Mouth of Tewahominy, and about the ſame diſtance from the Mouth of Hico River, and contains a good piece of Land. The Edifice was only a Log Houſe, affording a very free paſſage for the Air thro' every part of it, nor was the cleanlineſs of it any temptation to lye out of our Tents, ſo we encampt once more, for the laſt time, in the open Field.

11 I tippt our Landlady with what I imagined a full Reward for the Trouble we had given her, and then mounted our Horſes, which prickt up their Ears after the 2 Meals they had eaten of Corn. In the Diſtance of about a Mile we reacht the Dan, which we forded with ſome difficulty into the Fork. The Water was pretty high in the River, and the Currant ſomething Rapid, nevertheleſs all the Company got over ſafe, with only a

little Water in their boots. After traverſing the Fork, which was there at leaſt 2 good Miles acroſs, We forded the Stanton into a little Iſland, & then the narrow Branch of the ſame to the main Land. We took Majr Mumford's Tenant in Our way, where we moiſten'd Our Throats with a little Milk, and then proceeded in good Order to Blue Stone Caſtle. My Landlady received us with a grim Sort of a welcome, which I did not expect, ſince I brought her Huſband back in good Health, tho' perhaps that might be the Reaſon. Tis ſure ſomething or other did teize her, and ſhe was a female of too ſtrong Paſſions to know how to diſſemble. However, ſhe was ſo Civil as to get us a good Dinner, which I was the better pleaſ'd with becauſe Colo. Cock and Mr. Mumford came time enough to partake of it. The Colo. had been Surveying Land in theſe parts, and particularly that on which Mr. Stith's Copper Mine lys, as likewiſe a Tract on which Cornelius Cargill has fine Appearances. He had but a poor Opinion of Mr. Stith's Mine, foretelling it would be all labour in vain, but thought ſomething better of Mr. Cargill's. After Dinner theſe Gentlemen took their Leaves, and at the ſame time I diſcharg'd 2 of my fellow travellors, Thomas Wilſon and Joſeph Colſon, after having made their Hearts merry, and giving each of them a piece of Gold to rub their Eyes with. We now return'd to that Evil Cuſtom of lying in a houſe, and an evil one it is, when ten or a dozen People are forct to pig together in a Room, as we did, and were troubled with the Squalling of peeviſh, dirty Children into the Bargain. 1733 Oct.

We eat our Fill of Potatoes and Milk, which ſeems delicious Fare to thoſe who have made a Campaign in the Woods. I then took my firſt Miniſter, Harry Morris, up the Hill, & markt out the place where Blue ſtone Caſtle was to Stand, and overlook the Adjacent Country. After that I put my Friend in mind of many things he had done amiſs, which he promiſ'd 12

1733 Oct. faithfully to reform. I was ſo much an Infidel to his fair Speeches, (having been many times deceiv'd by them,) that I was forc'd to threaten him with my higheſt diſpleaſure, unleſs he mended his Conduct very much. I alſo let him know, that he was not only to Correct his own Errors, but likewiſe thoſe of his Wife, ſince the power certainly belong'd to him, in Vertue of his Conjugal Authority. He Scratcht his head at this laſt Admonition, from whence I inferred that the Gray Mare was the better Horſe. We gave our heavy Baggage 2 hours' Start, and about noon follow'd them, and in 12 Miles reacht John Butcher's, calling by the way for Maſter Mumford, in order to take him along with us. Mr. Butcher receiv'd us kindly, and we had a true Roanoke Entertainment of Pork upon Pork, and Pork again upon that. He told us he had been one of the firſt Seated in that remote part of the Country, and in the beginning had been forct, like the great Nebuchadnezzar, to live a conſiderable time upon Graſs. This honeſt man ſat a mighty Value on the Mine he fancyed he had in his Paſture, and ſhew'd Us ſome of the Oar, which he was made to believe was a Gray Copper, and wou'd certainly make his Fortune. But there is a bad Diſtemper rages in thoſe parts, that grows very Epidemical. The People are all Mine mad, and neglecting to make Corn, ſtarve their Familys in hopes to live in great Plenty hereafter. Mr. Stith was the firſt that was ſeiz'd with the Frenzy, and has ſpread the Contagion far and near. As you ride along the Woods, you ſee all the large Stones knockt to pieces, nor can a poor Marcaſite reſt quietly in its Bed for theſe Curious Inquirers. Our converſation ran altogether upon this darling Subject, til the hour came for our lying in bulk together.

13 After breaking our faſt with a Sea of Milk and potatos, we took our leave, and I croſſt my Landlady's hand with a piece of Money. She refuſ'd the Offer at firſt, but, like a true Woman,

accepted of it when it was put Home to Her. She told me the utmoſt ſhe was able to do for me was a trifle in Compariſon of ſome favour I had formerly done Her; but what that favour was, neither I cou'd recollect, nor did ſhe think proper to explain. Tho' it threaten'd Rain, we proceeded on our Journey, and jogg'd on in the New Road for 20 Miles, that is as far as it was clear'd at that time, and found it wou'd ſoon come to be a very good one after it was well grubb'd. About 9 Miles from John Butcher's, we croſſ't Allen's Creek, 4 Miles above Mr. Stith's Mine. Near the Mouth of this Creek is a good Body of rich Land, whereof Occaneechy Neck is a part. It was enter'd for many Years ago by Colo. Harriſon and Colo. Allen, but to this day is held without Patent or Improvement. And they ſay Mr. Bolling dos the ſame, with a Thouſand Acres lying below John Butcher's. After beating the new Road for 20 Miles, we ſtruck off towards Meherrin, which we reacht in 8 Miles farther, & then came to the Plantation of Joſhua Nicholſon, where Daniel Taylor lives for Halves. There was a poor dirty houſe, with hardly any thing in it but Children, that wallow'd about like ſo many Pigs. It is a common Caſe in this part of the Country, that People live worſt upon good Land; and the more they are befriended by the Soil and the clymate, the leſs they will do for themſelves. This man was an Inſtance of it, for tho' his Plantation would make Plentiful returns for a little Induſtry, yet he wanting that, wanted every thing. The Woman did all that was done in the Family, and the few Garments they had to cover their dirty Hides were owing to her Induſtry. We cou'd have no Supplys from ſuch Neighbours as theſe, but depended on our own KnapSacks, in which we had ſome Remnants of cold Fowls that we brought from Blueſtone Caſtle. When my Houſe was in Order, the whole Family came and admir'd it, as much as if it had been the Grand Vizier's Tent in the Turkiſh Army.

1733 Oct.

1733 Oct. 14 The ſabbath was now come round again, and altho' our Horſes wou'd have been glad to take the benefit of it, yet we determin'd to make a Sunday's Journey to Brunſwick Church, which lay about 8 Miles off. Tho' our Landlord cou'd do little for us, nevertheleſs, we did him all the good we were able, by bleeding his ſick Negro, and giving him a Doſe of Indian Phyſick. We got to Church in decent time, and Mr. Betty, the Parſon of the Pariſh, entertain'd us with a good honeſt Sermon, but whether he bought it, or borrow'd it, would have been uncivil in us to inquire. Be that as it will, he is a decent Man, with a double Chin that ſits gracefully over his Band, and his Pariſh, eſpecially the Female part of it, like him well. We were not crowded at Church, tho' it was a new thing in that remote part of the Country. What Women happen'd to be there, were very gim and tydy in the work of their own hands, which made them look tempting in the Eyes of us Foreſters. When Church was done, we refreſht our Teacher with a Glaſs of Wine, and then receiving his Bleſſing, took Horſe and directed our Courſe to Maj'r Embry's. The Diſtance thither was reputed 15 Miles, but appear'd leſs by the Company of a Nymph of thoſe Woods, whom Innocence, and wholeſome Fleſh and Blood made very alluring. In our way we croſt Sturgeon Creek and Queocky Creek, but at our Journey's end were ſo unlucky as not to find either Maſter or Miſtreſs at home. However, after 2 hours of hungry Expectation, the good Woman luckily found her way home, and provided very hoſpitably for us. As for the Major, he had profited ſo much by my Preſcription, as to make a Journey to Williamſburgh, which required pretty good health, the diſtance being little Short of 100 Miles.

15 After our Bounteous Landlady had cheriſht us with Roaſt Beef and Chicken-Pye, we thankfully took Leave. At the ſame time we ſeparated from our good Friend and Fellow Traveller, Maj'r Mayo, who ſteer'd directly home. He is certainly a very

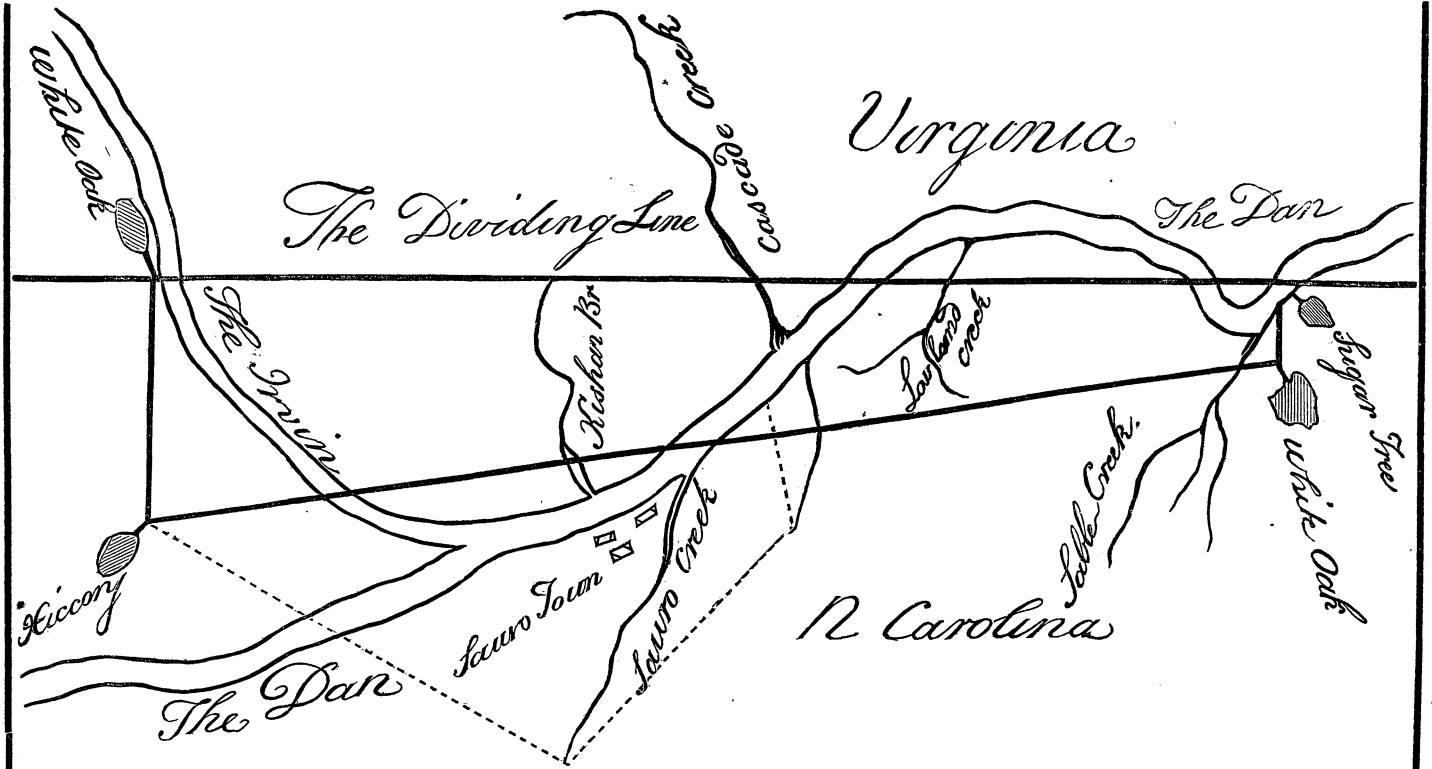
uſeful, as well as an agreeable Companion in the Woods, being ever cheerful & good-humor'd, under all the little Croſſes, diſaſters, and diſappointments of that rambling Life. As many of us as remain'd jogg'd on together to Saponi Chapel, where I thankt Major Mumford and Peter Jones for the trouble he had taken in this long Journey. That Ceremony being duly perform'd, I filed off with my honeſt Friend, Mr. Baniſter, to his Habitation on Hatcher's Run, which lay about 14 Miles from the Chapel above-mention'd. His good-humour'd little Wife was glad to ſee her Runaway Spouſe return'd in Safety, and treated us kindly. It was no ſmall pleaſure to me, that my worthy Friend found his Family in good Health, and his Affairs in good Order. He came into this Ramble ſo frankly, that I ſhou'd have been ſorry if he had been a Sufferer by it. In the Gaiety of our hearts we drank our bottle a little too freely, which had an unuſual Effect on Perſons ſo long accuſtom'd to Simple Element. We were both of us raiſ'd out of our Beds in the ſame Manner, and near the ſame time, which was a fair proof that people who breath the ſame Air, and are engaged in the ſame Way of living, will be very apt to fall into the ſame Indiſpoſitions. And this may explain why Diſtempers ſometimes go round a Family, without any reaſon to believe they are infectious, according to the Superſtition of the Vulgar. 1733 Oct.

After pouring down a Baſin of Chocolate, I wiſht Peace to that Houſe, and departed. As long as Mr. Baniſter had been abſent from his Family, He was yet ſo kind as to conduct me to Major Mumford's, & which was more, his wife very obligingly conſented to it. The Major ſeem'd overjoy'd at his being return'd Safe and Sound from the perils of the Woods, tho' his Satiſfaction had ſome Check from the Change his pretty Wife had ſuffer'd in her Complexion. The Vermilion of her Cheeks had given place a little to the Saffron, by means of a ſmall Tincture of the Yellow Jaundice. I was ſorry to ſee ſo fair a 16

1733 Oct. flower thus faded, and Recommended the beſt Remedy I cou'd think of. After a refreſhment of about an hour, we went on to Colo. Bolling's, who was ſo gracious as to ſend us an Invitation. As much in haſte as I was to return to my Family, I ſpent an hour or two at that place, but cou'd by no means be perſuaded to ſtay Dinner, nor could even Madam de Graffenriedt's Smiles on one Side of her Face ſhake my Reſolution. From thence we proceeded to Colo. Mumford's, who ſeem'd to have taken a new Leaſe, were any dependence to be upon looks, or any Indulgence allow'd to the Wiſhes of his Friends. An honeſter Man, a fairer Trader, or a kinder Friend, this Country never produced: God ſend any of his Sons may have the Grace to take after him. We took a running Repaſt with this good Man, and then bidding Adieu both to him and Mr. Baniſter, I mounted once more, and obſtinately purſued my Journey home, tho' the clouds threaten'd, and the Heavens lookt very lowring. I had not paſt the Court-houſe before it began to pour down like a Spout upon me. Nevertheleſs, I puſht forward with Vigour, and got dripping wet before I could reach Merchant's hope Point. My Boat was there luckily waiting for me, and wafted me ſafe over. And the Joy of meeting my Family in Health made me in a Moment forget all the Fatigues of the Journey, as much as if I had been Huſquenawed. However, the good Providence that attended me, and my whole Company, will I hope ſtick faſt in my Memory, and make me everlaſtingly thankful.

A Liſt of our Company of all Sorts.

Myſelf,	Thomas Wilſon,	Lawſon,
Maj'r Mayo,	Joſeph Colſon,	3 Indians,
Maj'r Mumford,	Harry Morris,	3 negroes,
Mr. Baniſter,	Robert Bolling,	20 horſes,
Mr. Jones,	Thomas Hooper,	4 dogs.



My Plat of 20,000 Acres in N° Carolina.
Survey'd in September 1733, by Mr. Mayo, being
15 Miles long, 3 Broad at the W. End, & one at the Est

1733 Oct.

An Account of the Diſtances of Places.	*Miles.*
From Weſtover to Colo. Mumford's, - -	16
From Colo. Mumford's to maj'r Mumford's,	6
From thence to Sappony Chappel, - -	20
From thence to major Embry's on Notoway,	10
From thence to Brunſwick Court-houſe, -	15
From thence to Meherin River, - -	8
From thence to the Ford on Roanoak, - -	12
From thence to Colo. Stith's Copper Mine, -	20
From thence to Butcher's Creek, - - -	6
From thence to Blueſtone Caſtle, - -	12
From thence to the Ford into the Fork, - -	7
From thence to Birche's Creek, - -	5
From thence to Baniſter River, - - -	6
From thence to Morris Creek, - - -	3
From thence to the Medway, - - -	14
From thence to Maoſtie Creek, - -	2
From hence to Fork Creek, - - -	6
From hence to Peter's Creek, - - -	2
From hence to Jones' Creek, - - -	2
From hence to the firſt Ford over the Dan,	1½
From hence to Cane Creek, - - -	2½
From hence to the Second Ford of the Dan,	4½
From hence to the Mouth of Sable creek, -	8
From hence to the S-E Corner of my Land,	1
From thence to the Dan on my Back Line,	8
From thence to the Irvin on my back Line, -	6
From thence to my S-W Corner, - -	1
From thence to my Corner on the W. of the Irvin,	3
From thence to the Dan along my Upper-Line,	4½
	—Sum 212
From thence to the Mouth of the Irvin, -	1½
From thence to Sauro Creek, - - -	2½
From thence to where my Back-line croſſes the Dan, - - - - - - - -	5
From thence to my South-Eaſt Corner, - -	8
From thence to Cliff Creek, - - -	10
From thence to Hixe's Creek, - - -	2
From thence to Hatcher's Creek, - -	1

An Account of the Diſtances of Places.	*Miles.*	1733 Oct.
From thence to Cocquade Creek, - - -	5	
From thence to the upper Ford of Hico River,	7	
From thence to Jeſuit's Creek, - - -	4	
From thence to where the Line cuts Sugar Tree Creek, - - - - - - -	5	
From thence to the Mouth of Sugar Tree Creek,	4	
From thence to the Mouth of Hico River, -	7	
From thence to Wilſon's Quarter on Tewahominy Creek, - - - - - -	1	
From thence to the Dan, - - - - -	1	
From thence acroſs the Fork to the Stanton,	2	
From thence to Blue Stone Caſtle, - -	7	
From thence to Sandy Creek, - - -	5	
From thence to Mr. Mumford's Plantation,	2	
From thence to Butcher's Creek, - -	5	
From thence to Allen's Creek, - - -	9	
From thence to Joſhua Nicholſon's on Meherin,	18	
From thence to Brunſwick Court-houſe, -	8	
From thence to Notoway Bridge, - - -	14	
From thence to Sappony Chappel, - -	10	
From thence to Mr. Baniſter's on Hatcher's Run, - - - - - - - -	12	
From thence to Colo. Bolling's Plantation, -	9	
From thence to Colo. Mumford's Plantation,	5	
From thence to Weſtover, - - -	16	
	—184	

A PROGRESS TO THE MINES,

In the Year 1732.

FOR the Pleaſure of the good Company of Mrs. Byrd, and her little Governuor, my Son, I went about half way to the Falls in the Chariot. There we halted, not far from a purling Stream, and upon the Stump of a propagate Oak picket the Bones of a piece of Roaſt Beef. By the Spirit which that gave me, I was the better able to part with the dear Companions of my Travels, and to perform the reſt of my Journey on Horſeback by myſelf. I reacht Shaccoa's before 2 a'clock, and croſt the River to the Mills. I had the Grief to find them both ſtand as ſtill for the want of Water, as a dead Woman's Tongue, for want of Breath. It had rain'd ſo little for many Weeks above the Falls, that the Naides had hardly Water enough left to waſh their Faces. However, as we ought to turn all our Misfortunes to the beſt Advantage, I directed Mr. Booker, my firſt Miniſter there, to make uſe of the lowneſs of the Water for blowing up the Rocks at the Mouth of the Canal. For that purpoſe I order'd Iron Drills to be made about 2 foot long, pointed with Steel, Chizzel faſhion, in order to make holes, into which we put our Cartridges of Powder, containing each about 3 Ounces. There wanted Skill among my Engineers to chuſe the beſt parts of the Stone for boring, that we might blow to the moſt advantage. They made all their Holes quite perpendicular, whereas they ſhould have humour'd the Grain of the Stone

1732 Sept. 18

1732 Sept. for the more effectual Execution. I order'd the points of the Drills to be made Chizzel way, rather than the Diamond, that they might need to be Seldomer repair'd, tho' in Stone the Diamond points would make the moſt deſpatch. The Water now flow'd out of the River ſo ſlowly, that the Miller was oblig'd to pond it up in the Canal, by ſetting open the Flood-gates at the Mouth, and ſhutting thoſe cloſe at the Mill. By this contrivance, he was able at any time to grind two or three Buſhels, either for his choice Cuſtomers, or for the uſe of my Plantations. Then I walkt to the place where they broke the Flax, which is wrought with much greater eaſe than the Hemp, and is much better for Spinning. From thence I paid a Viſit to the Weaver, who needed a little of Minerva's Inſpiration to make the moſt of a piece of fine Cloth. Then I lookt in upon my Caledonian Spinſter, who was mended more in her looks than in her Humour. However, ſhe promiſed much, tho' at the ſame time intended to perform little. She is too high-Spirited for Mr. Booker, who hates to have his ſweet Temper ruffled, and will rather ſuffer matters to go a little wrong ſometimes, than give his righteous Spirit any uneaſineſs. He is very honeſt, and would make an admirable Overſeer where Servants will do as they are bid. But Eye-Servants, who want abundance of overlooking, are not ſo proper to be committed to his Care. I found myſelf out of order, and for that reaſon retir'd Early; yet with all this precaution had a gentle feaver in the Night, but towards morning Nature ſat open all her Gates, and drove it out in a plentiful perſpiration.

19 The worſt of this feaver was, that it put me to the Neceſſity of taking another Ounce of Bark. I moiſten'd every doſe with a little Brandy, and fill'd the Glaſs up with Water, which is the leaſt Nauſeous way of taking this Popiſh Medicine, and beſides hinders it from Purging. After I had ſwallow'd a few Poacht Eggs, we rode down to the Mouth of the Canal, and from

thence croſt over to the broad Rock Iſland in a Canoe. Our errand was to view ſome Iron Ore, which we dug up in two places. That on the Surface ſeem'd very ſpongy and poor, which gave us no great Encouragement to ſearch deeper, nor did the Quantity appear to be very great. However, for my greater Satisfaction, I order'd a hand to dig there for ſome time this Winter. We walkt from one End of the Iſland to the other, being about half a Mile in length, and found the Soil very good, and too high for any Flood, leſs than that of Deucalion, to do the leaſt damage. There is a very wild proſpect both upward and downward, the River being full of Rocks, over which the Stream tumbled with a Murmur, loud enough to drown the Notes of a Scolding Wife. This Iſland would make an agreeable Hermitage for any good Chriſtian, who had a mind to retire from the World. Mr. Booker told me how Dr. Ireton had cured him once of a Looſeneſs, which had been upon him two whole years. He order'd Him a Doſe of Rhubarb, with directions to take 25 Drops of Laudanum ſo Soon as he had had 2 Phyſical Stools. Then he reſted one day, and the next order'd him another Doſe of the ſame Quantity of Laudanum to be taken, alſo after the 2d Stool. When this was done, he finiſht the Cure by giving him 20 drops of Laudanum every night for five Nights running. The Doctor inſiſted upon the neceſſity of Stopping the Operation of the Rhubarb before it workt quite off, that what remained behind might ſtrengthen the Bowels. I was punctual in Swallowing my Bark, and that I might uſe exerciſe upon it, rode to Prince's Folly, and my Lord's Iſlands, where I ſaw very fine Corn. In the mean time Vulcan came in Order to make the Drills for boring the Rocks, And gave me his Parole he wou'd, by the grace of God, attend the works till they were finiſht, which he perform'd as lamely as if he had been to labour for a dead Horſe, and not for ready Money. I made a North Carolina Dinner upon Freſh

1732 Sept.

1732 Sept. pork, tho' we had a plate of Green Peas after it, by way of Deſert, for the Safety of our Noſes. Then my firſt Miniſter and I had ſome ſerious Converſation about my Affairs, and I find nothing diſturb'd his peaceable Spirit ſo much as the miſbehaviour of the Spinſter above-mention'd. I told him I cou'd not pity a Man, who had it always in his Power to do himſelf and her Juſtice, and wou'd not. If ſhe were a Drunkard, a Scold, a Thief, or a Slanderer, we had wholeſome Laws, that would make her Back Smart for the diverſion of her other Members, and twas his Fault he had not put thoſe wholeſome Severitys in Execution. I retired in decent time to my own Apartment, and Slept very comfortably upon my Bark, forgetting all the little croſſes ariſing from Overſeers and negroes.

20 I continued the Bark, and then toſt down my Poacht Eggs, with as much eaſe as ſome good Breeders Slip Children into the World. About Nine I left the Prudenteſt Orders I could think of with my Viſier, & then croſt the River to Shaccoe's. I made a running Viſit to 3 of my Quarters, where, beſides finding all the People well, I had the Pleaſure to ſee better Crops than uſual both of Corn and Tobacco. I parted there with my Intendant, and purſued my Journey to Mr. Randolph's, at Tuckahoe, without meeting with any Adventure by the way. Here I found Mrs. Fleming, who was packing up her Baggage with deſign to follow her Huſband the next day, who was gone to a new Settlement in Goochland. Both he and She have been about Seaven Years perſuading themſelves to remove to that retired part of the Country, tho' they had the two ſtrong Arguments of Health and Intereſt for ſo doing. The Widow ſmiled graciouſly upon me, and entertain'd me very handſomely. Here I learnt all the tragical Story of her Daughter's humble Marriage with her Uncle's Overſeer. Beſides the meanneſs of this mortal's Aſpect, the Man has not one viſible Qualification,

except Impudence, to recommend him to a Female's Inclina- 1732
tions. But there is ſometimes ſuch a Charm in that Hibernian Sept.
Endowment, that frail Woman cant withſtand it, tho' it ſtand alone without any other Recommendation. Had ſhe run away with a Gentleman or a pretty Fellow, there might have been ſome Excuſe for her, tho' he were of inferior Fortune: but to ſtoop to a dirty Plebeian, without any kind of merit, is the loweſt Proſtitution. I found the Family juſtly enraged at it; and tho' I had more good Nature than to join in her Condemnation, yet I cou'd deviſe no Excuſe for ſo ſenceleſs a Prank as this young Gentlewoman had play'd. Here good Drink was more Scarce than good Victuals, the Family being reduc'd to the laſt Bottle of Wine, which was therefore huſbanded very carefully. But the Water was excellent. The Heir of the Family did not come home till late in the Evening. He is a pretty Young Man, but had the misfortune to become his own maſter too ſoon. This puts young Fellows upon wrong purſuits, before they have Sence to Judge rightly for themſelves. Tho' at the ſame time they have a ſtrange conceit of their own Suffiency, when they grow near 20 Years old, eſpecially if they happen to have a ſmall Smattering of Learning. Tis then they fancy themſelves wiſer than all their Tutors and Governors, which makes them headſtrong to all advice, and above all Reproof and Admonition.

I was ſorry in the morning to find myſelf ſtopt in my Career 21
by bad Weather brought upon us by a North-Eaſt Wind. This drives a World of Raw unkindly Vapours upon us from Newfoundland, loaden with Blite, Coughs, and Pleuriſys. However, I complain'd not, leſt I might be ſuſpected to be tir'd of the good Company. Tho' Mrs. Fleming was not ſo much upon her Guard, but mutiny'd ſtrongly at the Rain, that hinder'd her from purſuing her dear Huſband. I ſaid what I cou'd to comfort a Gentlewoman under ſo ſad a Diſappointment. I told her

1732 Sept. a Huſband, that ſtaid ſo much at Home as her's did, cou'd be no ſuch violent Rarity, as for a Woman to venture her precious Health, to go daggling thro' the Rain after him, or to be miſerable if ſhe happen'd to be prevented. That it was prudent for marry'd people to faſt Sometimes from one another, that they might come together again with the better Stomach. That the beſt things in this World, if conſtantly uſ'd, are apt to be cloying, which a little abſence and Abſtinence wou'd prevent. This was Strange Doctrine to a fond Female, who fancys People ſhou'd love with as little Reaſon after Marriage as before. In the Afternoon Monſieur Marij, the Miniſter of the Pariſh, came to make me a Viſit. He had been a Romiſh Prieſt, but found Reaſons, either Spiritual or temporal, to quit that gay Religion. The fault of this new Convert is, that he looks for as much Reſpect from his Proteſtant Flock, as is paid to the Popiſh Clergy, which our ill-bred Hugonots dont underſtand. Madam Marij, had ſo much Curioſity as to want to come too; but another Horſe was wanting, and ſhe believ'd it would have too Vulgar an Air to ride behind her Huſband. This Woman was of the true Exchange Breed, full of Diſcourſe, but void of Diſcretion, and marry'd a Parſon, with the Idle hopes he might ſome time or other come to be his Grace of Canterbury. The Gray Mare is the better Horſe in that Family, and the poor man Submits to her wild Vagarys for Peace' Sake. She has juſt enough of the fine Lady, to run in debt, and be of no ſignification in her Houſehold. And the only thing that can prevent her from undoing her loving Huſband will be, that nobody will truſt them beyond the 16000,* which is ſoon run out in a Goochland ſtore. The way of Dealing there is, for ſome ſmall Merchant or Pedler to buy a Scots Pennyworth of

* Sixteen thouſand Pounds of Tobacco was the legal Salary of a Miniſter.—Ed.

Goods, and clap 150 p cent. upon that. At this Rate the Parſon cant be paid much more for his preaching than tis worth. No ſooner was our Viſiter retired, but the facetious Widow was ſo kind as to let me into all this Secret Hiſtory, but was at the ſame time exceedingly Sorry that the Woman ſhould be ſo indiſcreet, and the man ſo tame as to be govern'd by an unprofitable and fantaſtical Wife. 1732 Sept.

We had another wet day, to try both Mrs. Fleming's Patience and my good Breeding. The N E Wind commonly ſticks by us 3 or 4 days, filling the Atmoſphere with damps, injurious both to man and Beaſt. The worſt of it was, we had no good Liquor to warm our Blood, and fortify our Spirits againſt ſo ſtrong a Malignity. However, I was cheerful under all theſe Misfortunes, and expreſt no Concern but a decent Fear leſt my long viſit might be troubleſome. Since I was like to have thus much Leizure, I endeavour'd to find out what Subject a dull marry'd man cou'd introduce that might beſt bring the Widow to the Uſe of her Tongue. At length I diſcover'd ſhe was a notable Quack, and therefore paid that regard to her Knowledge, as to put ſome Queſtions to her about the bad diſtemper that raged then in the Country. I mean the Bloody Flux, that was brought us in the Negro-ſhip conſigned to Colo. Braxton. She told me ſhe made uſe of very Simple remedys in that Caſe, with very good Succeſs. She did the Buſineſs either with Hartſhorn Drink, that had Plantain Leaves boil'd in it, or elſe with a Strong decoction of St. Andrew's Croſs, in New milk inſtead of Water. I agreed with her that thoſe remedys might be very good, but would be more effectual after a doſe or two of Indian Phyſick. But for fear this Converſation might be too grave for a Widow, I turn'd the diſcourſe, and began to talk of Plays, & finding her Taſte lay moſt towards Comedy, I offer'd my Service to read one to Her, which ſhe kindly accepted. She produced the 2d part of the Beggar's Opera, which had diverted the Town for 22

1732 Sept. 40 Nights ſucceſſively, and gain'd four thouſand pounds to the Author. This was not owing altogether to the Wit or Humour that Sparkled in it, but to ſome Political Reflections, that ſeem'd to hit the Miniſtry. But the great Advantage of the Author was, that his Intereſt was ſolicited by the Dutcheſs of Queenſbury, which no man could refuſe who had but half an Eye in his head, or half a Guinea in his Pocket. Her Grace, like Death, ſpared nobody, but even took my Lord Selkirk in for 2 Guineas, to repair which Extravagance he liv'd upon Scots Herrings 2 Months afterwards. But the beſt Story was, ſhe made a very Smart Officer in his Majeſty's Guards give her a Guinea, who Swearing at the ſame time twas all he had in the World, ſhe ſent him 50 for it the next day, to reward his Obedience. After having acquainted my Company with the Hiſtory of the Play, I read 3 Acts of it, and left Mrs. Fleming and Mr. Randolph to finiſh it, who read as well as moſt Actors do at a Rehearſal. Thus we kill'd the time, and triumpht over the bad Weather.

23 The Clouds continued to drive from the N-Eſt, and to menace us with more Rain. But as the Lady reſolved to venture thro' it, I thought it a Shame for me to venture to flinch. Therefore, after fortifying myſelf with 2 capacious Diſhes of Coffee, and making my Complements to the Ladyes, I mounted, and Mr. Randolph was ſo kind as to be my Guide. At the diſtance of about 3 Miles, in a Path as narrow as that which leads to Heaven, but much more dirty, we reacht the homely dwelling of the Reverend Mr. Marij. His Land is much more barren than his Wife, and needs all Mr. Bradley's Skill in Agriculture to make it bring Corn. Thence we proceeded five Miles farther, to a Mill of Mr. Randolph's, that is apt to ſtand ſtill when there falls but little Rain, and to be carry'd away when there falls a great deal. Then we purſued a very blind Path 4 Miles farther, which puzzled my Guide,

who I ſuſpect led me out of the way. At length we came into a great Road, where he took leave, after giving me ſome very confuſ'd Directions, and ſo left me to blunder out the reſt of the Journey by myſelf. I loſt myſelf more than once, but ſoon recover'd the right way again. About 3 Miles after quitting my Guide, I paſſed the S Branch of Pomunky River, near 50 Yards over, and full of Stones. After this, I had 8 Miles to Mr. Chiſwell's, where I arriv'd about 2 a'Clock, and ſav'd my Dinner. I was very handſomely entertain'd, finding every thing very clean, and very Good. I had not ſeen Mrs. Chiſwell in 24 Years, which, alas! had made great Havoc with her pretty Face, and plow'd very deep Furrows in her fair Skin. It was impoſſible to know her again, ſo much the flower was faded. However, tho' ſhe was grown an Old Woman, yet ſhe was one of thoſe abſolute Rarities, a very good old Woman. I found Mr. Chiſwell a ſenſible, well-bred Man, and very frank in communicating his knowledge in the Myſtery of making Iron, wherein he has had long Experience. I told him I was come to Spy the Land, and inform myſelf of the Expence of carrying on an Iron work with Effect. That I ſought my Inſtruction from Him, who underſtood the whole Myſtery, having gain'd full Experience in every part of it; Only I was very ſorry he had bought that Experience ſo dear. He anſwer'd that he would, with great Sincerity, let me into the little knowledge he had, and ſo we immediately entered upon the Buſineſs. He aſſured me the firſt ſtep I was to take was to acquaint myſelf fully with the Quantity and Quality of my Oar. For that reaſon I ought to keep a good Pick-ax Man at work a whole Year to ſearch if there be a Sufficient Quantity, without which it would be a very raſh undertaking. That I ſhou'd alſo have a Skilful perſon to try the richneſs of the oar. Nor is it great Advantage to have it exceeding rich, becauſe then it will yield Brittle Iron, which is not valuable. But the way to have it

1732 Sept.

1732 Sept. tough is to mix poor Oar and Rich together, which makes the poorer ſort extremely neceſſary for the production of the beſt Iron. Then he ſhew'd me a Sample of the Richeſt Oar they have in England, which yields a full Moiety of Iron. It was of a Pale red Colour, ſmooth and greaſy, and not exceedingly heavy; but it produced ſo brittle a Metal, that they were oblig'd to melt a poorer Oar along with it. He told me, after I was certain my Oar was good and plentiful enough, my next inquiry ought to be, how far it lyes from a Stream proper to build a furnace upon, and again what diſtance that Furnace will be from Water Carriage; Becauſe the Charge of Carting a great way is very heavy, and eats out a great part of the Profit. That this was the Misfortune of the Mines of Frederickſville, where they were oblig'd to Cart the Oar a Mile to the Furnace, and after twas run into Iron, to carry that 24 Miles, over an uneven Road to Rappahannock River, about a Mile below Frederickſburgh, to a Plantation the Company rented of Colo. Page. If I were ſatisfy'd with the Situation, I was in the next place to conſider whether I had Woodland enough near the Furnace to Supply it with Charcoal, whereof it wou'd require a prodigious Quantity. That the propereſt Wood for that purpoſe was that of Oyly kind, ſuch as Pine, Walnut, Hiccory, Oak, and in ſhort all that yields Cones, Nuts, or Acorns. That 2 Miles Square of Wood, wou'd ſupply a Moderate furnace; ſo that what you fell firſt may have time to grow up again to a proper bigneſs (which muſt be 4 Inches over) by that time the reſt is cut down. He told me farther, that 120 Slaves, including Women, were neceſſary to carry on all the Buſineſs of an Iron Work, and the more Virginians amongſt them the better; Tho' in that number he comprehended Carters, Colliers, and thoſe that planted the Corn. That if there ſhould be much Carting, it would require 1600 Barrels of Corn Yearly to Support the People, & the Cattle employ'd; nor dos even that Quantity

ſuffice at Frederickſville. That if all theſe Circumſtances ſhou'd happily concur, and you cou'd procure honeſt Colliers and Firemen, which will be difficult to do, you may eaſily run 800 Tuns of Sow Iron a Year. The whole charge of Freight, Cuſtom, Commiſſion, and other Expences in England, will not exceed 30 Shillings a Tun, and twill commonly ſell for £6, and then the clear profit will amount to £4 ,, 10. So that allowing the ten Shillings for Accidents, you may reaſonably expect a clear Profit of £4, which being multiply'd by 800, will amount to £3200 a year, to pay you for your Land and Negroes. But then it behooved me to be fully inform'd of the whole Matter myſelf, to prevent being impoſed upon; and if any offer'd to put tricks upon me, to puniſh them as they deſerve. Thus ended our Converſation for this day, and I retir'd to a very clean Lodging in another Houſe, and took my Bark, but was forced to take it in Water, by reaſon a light finger'd Damſel had ranſackt my Baggage, and drunk up my Brandy. This unhappy Girl, it ſeems, is a Baronet's Daughter; but her Complexion, being red hair'd, inclin'd her ſo much to Lewdneſs, that her Father ſent her, under the Care of the virtuous Mr. Cheep, to ſeek her fortune on this Side the Globe. 1732 Sept.

My Friend, Mr. Chiſwell, made me reparation for the Robbery of his Servant, by filling my Bottle again with good Brandy. It being Sunday, I made a Motion for going to Church, to ſee the growth of the Pariſh, but unluckily the Sermon happen'd to be at the Chappel, which was too far off. I was unwilling to tire my Friend with any farther diſcourſe upon Iron, and therefore turn'd the Converſation to other Subjects. And talking of Management, he let me into 2 Secrets worth remembering. He ſaid the quickeſt way in the world to ſtop the Fermentation of any Liquor was to keep a lighted Match of Brimſtone under the Caſk for ſome time. This is uſeful in ſo warm a Country as this, where cyder is apt 24

1732 Sept. to work itſelf off both of its Strength and ſweetneſs. The other Secret was to keep Weevels out of Wheat and other Grain. You have nothing to do, ſaid he, but to put a Bag of Pepper into every heap, or Caſk, which thoſe Inſects have ſuch an Antipathy to that they will not approach it. Theſe Receipts he gave me, not upon Report, but upon his own repeated Experience. He farther told me he had brew'd as good Ale of Malt made of Indian Corn as ever he taſted; all the objection was, he cou'd neither by Art, or Standing, ever bring it to be fine in the Caſk. The Quantity of Corn he employed in brewing a Caſk of 40 Gallons was 2 Buſhels and a half, which made it very Strong and pleaſant. We had a Hanch of Veniſon for Dinner, as fat and well taſted as if it had come out of Richmond Park. In theſe upper parts of the Country the Deer are in better Caſe than below, tho' I believe the Buck which gave us ſo good a Dinner had eaten out his Value in Peas, which will make Deer exceeding fat. In the Afternoon, I walkt with my Friend to his Mill, which is half a Mile from his Houſe. It is built upon a Rock very firmly, ſo that tis more apt to ſuffer by too little Water, (the Run not being over plentiful,) than too much. On the other ſide of this Stream lye ſeveral of Colo. Jones' Plantations. The poor Negroes upon them are a kind of Adamites, very Scantily ſupply'd with cloaths and other neceſſaries; Nevertheleſs, (which is a little incomprehenſible,) they continue in perfect health, and none of them dye, except it be of Age. However, they are even with their Maſter, and make him but indifferent Crops, ſo that he gets nothing by his unjuſtice, but the Scandal of it. And here I muſt make One Remarque, which I am a little unwilling to do for fear of encouraging of Cruelty, that thoſe Negroes which are kept the bareſt of cloaths & Bedding are commonly the freeſt from Sickneſs. And this happens, I ſuppoſe, by their being all Face, and

therefore better proof againſt the ſudden changes of Weather, to which this Climate is unhappily Subject. 1732 Sept. 25

After ſaying ſome very civil things to Mrs. Chiſwell, for my handſome Entertainment, I mounted my Horſe, and Mr. Chiſwell his Phaeton, in order to go to the Mines at Frederickſville. We cou'd converſe very little by the way, by reaſon of our different Voitures. The Road was very Straight and level the whole Journey, which was 25 Miles, the laſt ten whereof I rode in the Chair, and my friend on my Horſe, to eaſe ourſelves by that Variety of Motion. About a Mile before we got to Frederickſville, we forded over the North Branch of Pomunky, about 60 Yards over. Neither this nor the South Branch run up near ſo high as the Mountains, but many Miles below them ſpread out into a kind of Moraſs, like Chickahominy. When we approacht the Mines, there open'd to our View a large Space of clear'd Ground, whoſe Wood had been cut down for coaling. We Arriv'd here about 2 A'Clock, and Mr. Chiſwell had been ſo provident as to bring a Cold Veniſon Paſty, with which we appeaſed our Appetites, without the Impatience of waiting. When our Tongues were at leizure for diſcourſe, my Friend told me there was one Mr. Hariſon, in England, who is ſo univerſal a dealer in all Sorts of Iron, that he cou'd govern the Market juſt as he pleaſ'd. That it was by his artful Management that our Iron from the Plantations ſold for leſs than that made in England, tho' it was generally reckon'd much better. That Ours wou'd hardly fetch 6£ a Tun, when their's fetcht 7 or 8, purely to ſerve that Man's Intereſt. Then he explain'd the Several Charges upon our Sow Iron, after it was put on Board the Ships. That in the firſt place it paid 7/6 a Tun for Freight, being juſt ſo much clear gain to the Ships, which carry it as Ballaſt, or wedge it in among the Hogſheads. When it gets Home, it pays 3/9 cuſtome. Theſe Articles together make no more than 11/3, and yet the Merchants,

1732 Sept. by their great Skill in Multiplying Charges, Swell the account up to near 30/ a Tun by that time it gets out of their Hands, and they are continually adding more and more, as they ſerve us in our Accounts of Tobacco. He told me a ſtrange thing about Steel, that the making of the beſt remains at this day a profound Secret in the breaſt of a very few, and therefore is in danger of being loſt, as the Art of Staining of Glaſs, and many others, have been. He cou'd only tell me they uſ'd Beech Wood in the making of it in Europe, & burn it a Conſiderable time in powder of Charcoal; but the Myſtery lies in the Liquor they quench it in. After dinner we took a walk to the Furnace, which is elegantly built of Brick, tho' the Hearth be of Fire-Stone. There we ſaw the Founder, Mr. Derham, who is paid 4 Shillings for every Tun of Sow Iron that he runs, which is a Shilling cheaper than the laſt Workman had. This Operator lookt a little Melancholy, becauſe he had nothing to do, the Furnace having been Cold ever ſince May, for want of Corn to Support the Cattle. This was however no neglect of Mr. Chiſwell, becauſe all the Perſons he had contracted with had baſely diſappointed him. But having receiv'd a ſmall Supply, they intended to blow very ſoon. With that view they began to heat the Furnace, which is 6 Weeks before it comes to that intenſe heat required to run the Metal in perfection. Nevertheleſs, they commonly begin to blow when the Fire has been kindled a Week or ten days. Cloſe by the Furnace ſtood a very ſpacious Houſe full of Charcoal, holding at leaſt 400 Loads, which will be burnt out in 3 Months. The Company has contracted with Mr. Harry Willis to fall the Wood, and then maul it and cut it into pieces of 4 feet in length, and bring it to the Pits where it is to be coal'd. All this he has undertaken to do for 2 Shillings a Cord, which muſt be 4 foot broad, 4 foot high, and 8 foot long. Being thus carry'd to the Pits, the Collier has contracted to Coal it for 5 Shillings a Load,

conſiſting of 160 Buſhels. The Fire in the Furnace is blown by 2 Mighty pair of Bellows, that coſt one Hundred pounds each, and theſe Bellows are mov'd by a great Wheel of 26 foot diameter. The Wheel again is carry'd round by a ſmall Stream of Water, conveyed about 350 Yards over Land in a Trough, from a Pond made by a wooden Dam.. But there is great want of Water in a dry Seaſon, which makes the Furnace often blow out, to the great prejudice of the Works. Having thus fill'd my Head with all theſe Particulars, we return'd to the Houſe, where, after talking of Colo. Spotſwood, and his Stratagems to ſhake off his Partners, and ſecure all his Mines to himſelf, I retired to a homely Lodging, which, like a homeſpun Miſtreſs, had been more tolerable, if it had been ſweet. 1732 Sept.

Over our Tea, Mr. Chiſwell told me the expence which the Company had been already at amounted to near Twelve Thouſand Pounds: But then the Land, Negroes, and Cattle were all included in that Charge. However, the Money began now to come in, they having run 1200 Tuns of Iron, and all their heavy diſburſements were over. Only they were ſtil forct to buy great Quantitys of Corn, becauſe they had not Strength of their own to make it. That they had not more than 80 Negroes, and few of thoſe Virginia born. That they need 40 Negroes more to carry on all the Buſineſs with their own Force. They have 15000 Acres of Land, tho' little of it rich except in Iron, and of that they have a great Quantity. Mr. FitzWilliams took up the mine tract, and had the addreſs to draw in the Governor, Capt. Pearſe, Dr. Nicolas and Mr. Chiſwell to be jointly concern'd with him, by which contrivance he firſt got a good price for the Land, and then, when he had been very little out of Pocket, ſold his Share to Mr. Nelſon for 500£; and of theſe Gentlemen the Company at preſent conſiſts. And Mr. Chiſwell is the only perſon amongſt them that knows any thing of the matter, and has 100£ a year for looking after 26

1732 Sept. the Works, and richly deſerves it. After breaking our Faſt we took a walk to the principal Mine, about a Mile from the Furnace, where they had ſunk in ſome places about 15 or 20 foot deep. The Operator, Mr. Gordon, raiſ'd the Oar, for which he was to have by contract 1/6 p Cart-Load of 26 Hundred Weight. This man was oblig'd to hire all the Laborers he wanted for this Work of the Company, after the rate of 25/ a Month, and for all that was able to clear 40£ a-year for himſelf. We ſaw here ſeveral large Heaps of oar of 2 ſorts, one of rich, and the other Spongy and poor, which they melted together to make the Metal more tough. The way of raiſing the oar was by blowing it up, which Operation I ſaw here from beginning to End. They firſt drill'd a hole in the Mine, either upright or Slopeing, as the grain of it required. This hole they cleanſed with a Rag faſten'd to the End of an Iron with a Worm at the end of it. Then they put in a Cartridge of Powder containing about 3 Ounces, and at the ſame time a Reed full of fuſe that reacht to the Powder. Then they ramm'd dry Clay, or ſoft Stone very hard into the Hole, and laſtly they fired the fuſe with a Paper that had been dipt in a Solution of Saltpetre and dry'd, which burning Slow and Sure, gave leizure to the Engineer to retire to a proper diſtance before the Exploſion. This in the Miner's Language is call'd making a Blaſt, which will looſen ſeveral hundred Weight of Oar at once; and afterwards the Laborers eaſily ſeparate it with Pick-axes and carry it away in Baſkets up to the Heap. At our return we ſaw near the Furnace large Heaps of Mine with Charcoal mixet with it, a Stratum of each alternately, beginning firſt with a layer of Charcoal at the Bottom. To this they put Fire, which in a little time ſpreads thro' the whole Heap, and calcines the Oar, which afterwards eaſily crumbles into ſmall pieces fit for the Furnace. Then was likewiſe a mighty Quantity of Limeſtone, brought from Briſ-

tol, by way of ballaſt, at 2/6 a Tun, which they are at the Trouble to Cart hither from Rappahannock River, but contrive to do it when the Carts return from carrying of Iron. They put this into the Furnace with the Iron Oare, in the proportion of one Tun of Stone to ten of Oar, with deſign to abſorb the Sulphur out of the Iron, which wou'd otherwiſe make it brittle. And if that be the uſe of it, Oyſter Shells wou'd certainly do as well as LimeStone, being altogether as ſtrong an Alkali, if not Stronger. Nor can their being taken out of Salt water be any Objection, becauſe tis pretty certain the Weſt India LimeStone, which is thrown up by the Sea, is even better than that imported from Briſtol. But the founders who never try'd either of theſe will by no means be perſwaded to go out of their way, tho' the Reaſon of the thing be never ſo evident. I obſerv'd the richer Sort of Mine, being of a dark Colour Mixt with ruſt, was laid in a heap by itſelf, and ſo was the poor, which was of a Liver or Brick Colour. The Sow Iron is in the Figure of a half-round, about two feet and a half-long, weighing 60 or 70 Pounds, whereof 3000 weight make a Cart-load drawn by 8 Oxen, which are commonly ſhod to ſave their Hoofs in thoſe Stony ways. When the Furnace blows, it runs about 20 Tuns of Iron a Week. The founders find it very hot work to tend the Furnace, eſpecially in Summer, and are oblig'd to ſpend no ſmall part of their Earnings in ſtrong Drink to recruit their Spirits. Beſides the Founder, the Collier, and Miner, who are paid in proportion to their Work, the Company have ſeveral other Officers upon Wages, a Stock-taker, who weighs and meaſures every thing, a Clerk, who keeps an Account of all Receipts and Diſburſements, a Smith to Shoe their Cattle, and keep all their Iron work in repair, a wheel-Wright, Cartwright, Carpenter, and Several Carters. The Wages of all theſe perſons amount to one Hundred Pounds a Year; ſo that including Mr. Chiſwell's Salary, they diſburſe 1732 Sept.

1732 Sept. 200£ p Annum in ſtanding Wages. The Proviſions too are a heavy Article, which their Plantations dont yet produce in a Sufficient Quantity, tho' they are at the Charge of a general Overſeer. But while Corn is ſo ſhort with them, there can be no great Increaſe of Stock of any kind.

27 Having now pretty well exhauſted the Subject of Sow Iron, I aſkt my Friend ſome Queſtions about Bar-Iron. He told me we had as yet no Forge erected in Virginia, tho' we had 4 Furnaces. But there was a very good one ſet up at the head of the Bay in Maryland, that made exceeding good Work. He let me know that the duty in England upon Bar Iron was 24/ a Tun, and that it ſold there from Ten to 16 pounds a Tun. This wou'd pay the Charge of Forging abundantly, but he doubted the Parliament of England would ſoon forbid us that Improvement, leſt after that we ſhou'd go farther, and manufacture Our Bars into all Sorts of Iron Ware, as they already do in New England & Pennſylvania. Nay, he queſtion'd whether we ſhou'd be ſuffer'd to caſt any Iron, which they can do themſelves at their Furnaces. Thus ended our Converſation, and I thankt my Friend for being ſo free in communicating every thing to me. Then, after tipping a Piſtole to the Clerk, to drink proſperity to the Mines with all the Workmen, I accepted the kind offer of going part of my Journey in the Phaeton. I took my Leave about ten, and drove over a Spacious Level Road ten Miles, to a Bridge built over the River Po, which is one of the 4 Branches of Matopany, about 40 Yards wide. Two Miles beyond that, we paſſed by a Plantation belonging to the Company, of about 500 Acres, where they keep a great Number of Oxen to relieve thoſe that have dragg'd their loaded Carts thus far. Three Miles farther we came to the Germanna Road, where I quitted the Chair, and continued my Journey on Horſeback. I rode 8 Miles together over a Stony Road, and had on either ſide continual poiſon'd

Fields, with nothing but Saplins growing on them. Then I came into the Main County Road, that leads from Frederickſburgh to Germanna, which laſt place I reacht in Ten Miles more. This famous Town conſiſts of Colo. Spotſwood's enchanted Caſtle on one Side of the Street, and a Baker's Dozen of ruinous Tenements on the other, where ſo many German Familys had dwelt ſome Years ago; but are now remov'd ten Miles higher, in the Fork of Rappahannock, to Land of their Own. There had alſo been a Chappel about a Bow-Shot from the Colonel's houſe, at the End of an Avenue of Cherry Trees, but ſome pious people had lately burnt it down, with intent to get another built nearer to their own homes. Here I arriv'd about three a'clock, and found only Mrs. Spotſwood at Home, who receiv'd her Old acquaintance with many a gracious Smile. I was carry'd into a Room elegantly ſet off with Pier Glaſſes, the largeſt of which came ſoon after to an odd Misfortune. Amongſt other favourite Animals that cheer'd this Lady's Solitude, a Brace of Tame Deer ran familiarly about the Houſe, and one of them came to ſtare at me as a Stranger. But unluckily Spying his own Figure in the Glaſs, he made a ſpring over the Tea Table that ſtood under it, and ſhatter'd the Glaſs to pieces, and falling back upon the Tea Table, made a terrible Fracas among the China. This Exploit was ſo ſudden, and accompany'd with ſuch a Noiſe, that it ſurpriz'd me, and perfectly frighten'd Mrs. Spotſwood. But twas worth all the Damage to ſhew the Moderation and good humour with which ſhe bore this diſaſter. In the Evening the noble Colo. came home from his Mines, who ſaluted me very civilly, and Mrs. Spotſwood's Siſter, Miſs Theky, who had been to meet him *en Cavalier*, was ſo kind too as to bid me welcome. We talkt over a Legend of old Storys, ſupp'd about 9, and then prattl'd with the Ladys, til twas time for a Travellour to retire. In the mean time I obſerv'd my old Friend to be very Uxorious, and exceedingly fond of his Child-

1732 Sept.

1732 Sept. ren. This was ſo oppoſite to the Maxims he uſ'd to preach up before he was marryed, that I cou'd not forbear rubbing up the Memory of them. But he gave a very good-natur'd turn to his Change of Sentiments, by alleging that whoever brings a poor Gentlewoman into ſo ſolitary a place, from all her Friends and acquaintance, wou'd be ungrateful not to uſe her and all that belongs to her with all poſſible Tenderneſs.

28 We all kept Snug in our ſeveral apartments till Nine, except Miſs Theky, who was the Houſewife of the Family. At that hour we met over a Pot of Coffee, which was not quite ſtrong enough to give us the Palſy. After Breakfaſt the Colo. and I left the Ladys to their Domeſtick Affairs, and took a turn in the Garden, which has nothing beautiful but 3 Terrace Walks that fall in Slopes one below another. I let him underſtand, that beſides the pleaſure of paying him a Viſit, I came to be inſtructed by ſo great a Maſter in the Myſtery of Making of Iron, wherein he had led the way, and was the Tubal Cain of Virginia. He corrected me a little there, by aſſuring me he was not only the firſt in this Country, but the firſt in North America, who had erected a regular Furnace. That they ran altogether upon Bloomerys in New England & Pennſilvania, till his Example had made them attempt greater Works. But in this laſt Colony, they have ſo few Ships to carry their Iron to Great Britain, that they muſt be content to make it only for their own uſe, and muſt be oblig'd to manufacture it when they have done. That he hoped he had done the Country very great Service by ſetting ſo good an Example. That the 4 Furnaces now at work in Virginia circulated a great Sum of Money for Proviſions and all other neceſſarys in the adjacent Countys. That they took off a great Number of Hands from Planting Tobacco, and employ'd them in Works that produced a large Sum of Money in England to the perſons concern'd, whereby the Country is ſo much the Richer. That they are beſides a conſiderable advantage to Great Britain,

becauſe it leſſens the Quantity of Bar Iron imported from Spain, Holland, Sweden, Denmark and Muſcovy, which uſed to be no leſs than 20,000 Tuns yearly, tho' at the ſame time no Sow Iron is imported thither from any Country but only from the Plantations. For moſt of this Bar Iron they do not only pay Silver, but our Friends in the Baltick are ſo nice, they even expect to be paid all in Crown Pieces. On the contrary, all the Iron they receive from the Plantations, they pay for it in their own Manufactures, and ſend for it in their own Shipping. Then I inquired after his own Mines, and hoped, as he was the firſt that engaged in this great undertaking, that he had brought them to the moſt perfection. He told me he had Iron in ſeveral Parts of his great Tract of Land, conſiſting of 45,000 Acres. But that the Mine he was at work upon was 13 Miles below Germanna. That his Oar (which was very rich) he raiſ'd a Mile from his Furnace, and was oblig'd to Cart the Iron, when it was made, 15 Miles to Maſſaponux, a Plantation he had upon Rappahanock River; But that the Road was exceeding good, gently declining all the way, and had no more than one Hill to go up in the whole Journey. For this reaſon his loaded carts went it in a day without difficulty. He ſaid it was true His works were of the oldeſt Standing: but that his long abſence in England, and the wretched Management of Mr. Greame, whom he had entruſted with his Affairs, had put him back very much. That what with Neglect and Severity, above 80 of his Slaves were loſt while he was in England, and moſt of his Cattle ſtarved. That his Furnace ſtood ſtill great part of the time, and all his Plantations ran to ruin. That indeed he was rightly ſerv'd for committing his Affairs to the care of a Mathematician, whoſe thoughts were always among the Stars. That nevertheleſs, ſince his return, he had apply'd himſelf to rectify his Steward's Miſtakes, and bring his Buſineſs again into Order. That now he had contriv'd to do every thing with his

1732 Sept.

1732 Sept. own People, except raiſing the Mine and running the Iron, by which he had contracted his Expence very much. Nay, he believ'd that by his directions he cou'd bring ſenſible Negroes to perform thoſe parts of the work tolerably well. But at the ſame time he gave me to underſtand, that his Furnace had done no great Feats lately, becauſe he had been taken up in building an Air Furnace at Maſſaponux, which he had now brought to perfection, and ſhou'd be thereby able to furniſh the whole Country with all Sorts of Caſt Iron, as cheap and as good as ever came from England. I told him he muſt do one thing more to have a full Vent for thoſe Commoditys, he muſt keep a Chaloupe running into all the Rivers, to carry his Wares home to people's own Doors. And if he wou'd do that I wou'd ſet a good Example, and take of a whole Tun of them. Our Converſation on this Subject continued till Dinner, which was both elegant and plentifull. The afternoon was devoted to the ladys, who ſhew'd me one of their moſt beautiful Walks. They conducted me thro' a Shady Lane to the Landing, and by the way made me drink ſome very fine Water that iſſued from a Marble Fountain, and ran inceſſantly. Juſt behind it was a cover'd Bench, where Miſs Theky often ſat and bewail'd her Virginity. Then we proceeded to the River, which is the South Branch of Rappahanock, about 50 Yards wide, and ſo rapid that the Ferry Boat is drawn over by a Chain, and therefore called the Rapidan. At night we drank proſperity to all the Colonel's Projects in a Bowl of Rack Punch, and then retired to our Devotions.

29 Having employ'd about 2 hours in Retirement, I Sally'd out at the firſt Summons to Breakfaſt, where our converſation with the Ladys, like Whip Sillabub, was very pretty, but had nothing in it. This it ſeems was Miſs Theky's Birth day, upon which I made her my Compliments, & wiſh't ſhe might live twice as long a marry'd Woman as ſhe had liv'd a Maid. I did not

preſume to pry into the Secret of her Age, nor was ſhe forward to diſcloſe it, for this humble Reaſon, leſt I ſhou'd think her Wiſdom fell ſhort of her Years. She contriv'd to make this day of her Birth a day of Mourning, for having nothing better at preſent to ſet her Affections upon, ſhe had a Dog that was a great Favourite. It happen'd that very Morning the poor Curr had done ſomething very uncleanly upon the Colo's Bed, for which he was condemn'd to dye. However, upon her entreaty, ſhe got him a Reprieve; but was ſo concern'd that ſo much ſeverity ſhou'd be intended on her Birth day, that ſhe was not to be comforted; and leſt ſuch another Accident might Ouſt the poor Curr of his Clergy, ſhe proteſted ſhe would board out her Dog at a Neighbour's Houſe, where ſhe hoped he wou'd be more kindly treated. Then the Colo. and I took another turn in the Garden, to diſcourſe farther on the Subject of Iron. He was very frank in communicating all his dear-bought Experience to me, and told me very civilly he wou'd not only let me into the whole Secret, but wou'd make a Journey to James River, and give me his faithful Opinion of all my Conveniences. For his part he wiſht there were many more Iron works in the Country, provided the partys concerned wou'd preſerve a conſtant Harmony among themſelves, and meet and conſult frequently, what might be for their common Advantage. By this they might be better able to manage the Workmen, and reduce their Wages to what was juſt and reaſonable. After this frank Speech, he began to explain the whole charge of an Iron-work. He ſaid, there ought at leaſt to be an Hundred Negroes employ'd in it, and thoſe upon good Land would make Corn, and raiſe Proviſions enough to ſupport themſelves and the Cattle, and do every other part of the Buſineſs. That the Furnace might be built for 700£, and made ready to go to work, if I went the neareſt way to do it, eſpecially ſince coming after ſo many, I might correct their Errors and avoid their

1732 Sept.

1732 Sept. Miſcarriages. That if I had Oar and Wood enough, and a convenient Stream of Water to ſet the Furnace upon, having neither too much nor too little Water, I might undertake the Affair with a full Aſſurance of Succeſs. Provided the diſtance of Carting be not too great, which is exceedingly burdenſome. That there muſt be abundance of Wheel Carriages, ſhod with Iron, and ſeveral Teams of Oxen, provided to tranſport the Wood that is to be coal'd, and afterwards the Coal and Oar to the Furnace, and laſt of all the Sow Iron to the neareſt Water Carriage, and carry back Limeſtone & other neceſſarys from thence to the Works; and a Sloop alſo would be uſeful to carry the Iron on Board the Ships, the Maſters not being always in the Humour to fetch it. Then he enumerated the people that were to be hired, viz.: a Founder, a Mine-raiſer, a Collier, a Stock-taker, a Clerk, a Smith, a Carpenter, a Wheelwright, and Several Carters. That theſe altogether will be a Standing charge of about £500 a Year. That the amount of Freight, Cuſtom, Commiſſion and other Charges in England, comes to 27/ a Tun. But that the Merchants yearly find out means to inflame the Account with New Articles, as they do in thoſe of Tobacco. That, upon the whole matter, the Expences here and in England may be computed modeſtly at 3£. a Tun. And the reſt that the Iron ſells for will be clear gain, to pay for the Land and Negros, which tis to be hoped will be £3 more for every Tun that is ſent over. As this Account agreed pretty near with that which Mr. Chiſwell had given me, I ſet it down (notwithſtanding it may ſeem a Repetition of the ſame thing) to prove that both theſe Gentlemen were ſincere in their Repreſentations. We had a Michaelmas Gooſe for Dinner, of Miſs Theky's own raiſing, who was now goodnatur'd enough to forget the Jeopardy of her Dog. In the afternoon we walkt in a Meadow by the River ſide, which winds in the form of a Horſeſhoe about Germanna, making it a Peninſula, containing

about 400 Acres. Rappahanock forks about 14 Miles below this place, the Northern Branch being the larger, and conſequently muſt be the River that bounds My Lord Fairfax's Grant of the Northern Neck. 1732 Sept.

The Sun roſe clear this Morning, and ſo did I, and finiſht all my little Affairs by Breakfaſt. It was then reſolv'd to wait on the Ladys on Horſeback, ſince the bright Sun, the fine Air, and the wholeſome Exerciſe, all invited us to it. We forded the River a little above the Ferry, and rode 6 Miles up the Neck to a fine Level piece of Rich Land, where we found about 20 Plants of Ginſeng, with the Scarlet Berrys growing on the top of the Middle Stalk. The Root of this is of wonderful Vertue in many Caſes, particularly to raiſe the Spirits and promote Perſpiration, which makes it a Specifick in Colds and Coughs. The Colo. complemented me with all we found, in return for my telling him the Vertues of it. We were all pleaſ'd to find ſo much of this King of Plants ſo near the Colonel's habitation, and growing too upon his own Land; but were, however, ſurprized to find it upon level Ground, after we had been told it grew only upon the North Side of Stony Mountains. I carry'd home this Treaſure, with as much Joy, as if every Root had been a Graft of the Tree of Life, and waſht and dry'd it carefully. This Airing made us as Hungry as ſo many Hawks, ſo that between Appetite and a very good Dinner, twas difficult to eat like a Philoſopher. In the Afternoon the Ladys walkt me about amongſt all their little Animals, with which they amuſe themſelves, and furniſh the Table; the worſt of it is, they are ſo tender-hearted, they Shed a Silent Tear every time any of them are kill'd. At Night the Colo. and I quitted the threadbare Subject of Iron, and changed the Scene to Politicks. He told me the Miniſtry had receded from their demand upon New England, to raiſe a ſtanding Salary for all ſucceeding Governors, for fear ſome curious Members of the 30

1732 Sept. Houſe of Commons ſhou'd enquire How the Money was diſpoſ'd of, that had been raiſ'd in the other American Colonys for the Support of their Governors. And particularly what becomes of the 4½ p cent., paid in the Sugar Colonys for that purpoſe. That Duty produces near £20,000 a Year, but being remitted into the Exchequer, not one of the Weſt India Governors is paid out of it; but they, like Falcons, are let looſe upon the People, who are complaiſant enough to ſettle other Revenues upon them, to the great impoveriſhing of theſe Colonys. In the mean time, tis certain the money raiſ'd by the 4½ p cent. moulders away between the Miniſter's Fingers, no body knows how, like the Quitrents of Virginia. And tis for this Reaſon that the Inſtructions, forbidding all Governors to accept of any preſents from their Aſſemblys, are diſpenſ'd with in the Sugar Iſlands, while tis ſtrictly inſiſted upon every where elſe, where the Aſſemblys were ſo wiſe as to keep their Revenues among themſelves. He ſaid further, that if the Aſſembly in New England would ſtand Bluff, he did not ſee how they cou'd be forct to raiſe Money againſt their Will, for if they ſhou'd direct it to be done by Act of Parliament, which they have threaten'd to do, (though it be againſt the Right of Engliſhmen to be taxt, but by their Repreſentatives,) yet they wou'd find it no eaſy matter to put ſuch an Act in Execution. Then the Colonel read me a Lecture upon Tar, affirming that it cant be made in this warm Clymate, after the manner they make it in Sweden and Muſcovy, by barking the Tree 2 Yards from the Ground, whereby the Turpentine deſcends all into the Stump in a Year's time, which is then ſplit in pieces in order for the Kiln. But here the Sun fries out the Turpentine in the Branches of the Tree, when the leaves are dry'd, and hinders it from deſcending. But, on the Contrary, thoſe who burn Tar of Lightwood in the common way, and are careful about it, make as good as that which comes from the Eaſt Country,

nor will it burn the Cordage more than that dos. Then we enter'd upon the Subject of Hemp, which the Colonel told me he never cou'd raiſe here from foreign Seed, but at laſt ſow'd the Seed of Wild Hemp, (which is very common in the upper parts of the Country) and that came up very thick. That he ſent about 500 ℔s. of it to England, and that the Commiſſioners of the Navy, after a full tryall of it, reported to the Lords of the Admiralty, that it was equal in goodneſs to the beſt that comes from Riga. I told him if our Hemp were never ſo good, it would not be worth the making here, even tho' they ſhou'd continue the Bounty. And my Reaſon was, becauſe labour is not more than two pence a day in the Eaſt Country where they produce Hemp, and here we cant compute it at leſs than Ten Pence, which being five times as much as their Labour, and conſidering beſides, that our Freight is 3 times as dear as theirs, the Price that will make them rich will ruin us, as I have found by wofull Experience. Beſides, if the King, who muſt have the Refuſal, byys our Hemp, the Navy is ſo long in paying both the price and the Bounty, that we who live from Hand to Mouth cant afford to wait ſo long for it. And then our good Friends, the Merchants, load it with ſo many charges, that they run away with great part of the profit themſelves. Juſt like the Bald Eagle, which after the Fiſhing Hawk has been at great pains to catch a Fiſh, pounces upon and takes it from him. Our converſation was interrupted by a Summons to Supper, for the Ladys, to ſhew their power, had by this time brought us tamely to go to Bed with our Bellys full, thou' we both at firſt declar'd poſitively againſt it. So very pliable a thing is frail Man, when Women have the bending of him. 1732 Oct.

Our Ladys overſlept themſelves this Morning, ſo that we did not break our Faſt till Ten. We drank Tea made of the Leaves of Ginſeng, which has the Vertues of the Root in a weaker Degree, and is not diſagreeable. So Soon as we cou'd 1

1732 Oct. force our Inclinations to quit the Ladys, we took a turn on the Terrace walk, and diſcourſt upon quite a New Subject. The Colo. explain'd to me the difference betwixt the Galleons and the Flota, which very few People know. The Galleons, it ſeems, are the Ships which bring the Treaſure and other Rich Merchandize to Carthagene from Portobel, to which place it is brought over Land, from Panama & Peru. And the Flota is the Squadron that brings the Treaſure, &c., from Mexico and New Spain, which make up at La Vera Cruz. Both theſe Squadrons rendezvous at the Havanna, from hence they ſhoot the Gulph of Florida, in their return to Old Spain. That this important Port of the Havanna is very poorly fortify'd, and worſe garriſon'd & provided, for which reaſon it may be eaſily taken. Beſides, both the Galleons and Flota, being confin'd to Sail thro' the gulph, might be intercepted by our Stationing a Squadron of Men of War at the moſt convenient of the Bahama Iſlands. And that thoſe Iſlands are of vaſt conſequence for that purpoſe. He told me alſo that the aſſogue Ships are they that carry QuickSilver to Portobello and La Vera Cruz, to refine the Silver, and that, in Spaniſh, aſſogue ſignifys Quick-ſilver. Then my Friend unriddled to me the great myſtery, why we have endured all the late Inſolences of the Spaniards ſo tamely. The Aſſiento Contract, and the Liberty of ſending a Ship every Year to the Spaniſh Weſt Indies, make it very neceſſary for the South Sea Company to have Effects of great Value in that part of the World. Now theſe being always in the Power of the Spaniards, make the Directors of that Company very fearful of a Breach, and conſequently very generous in their offers to the Miniſtry to prevent it. For fear theſe worthy Gentlemen ſhou'd Suffer, the Engliſh Squadron, under Admiral Hoſier, lay Idle at the Baſtimentos, till the Ships' Bottoms were eaten out by the Worm, and the Officers and Men, to the number of 5000, dyed like Rotten ſheep, without being

ſuffer'd, by the Strickteſt Orders, to Strike one Stroke, tho' they might have taken both the Flota and Galleons, and made themſelves Maſters of the Havanna into the Bargain, if they had not been chain'd up from doing it. All this Moderation, our peaceable Miniſtry ſhew'd even at a time when the Spaniards were furiouſly attacqing Gibraltar, and taking all the Engliſh Ships they could, both in Europe and America, to the great and Everlaſting Reproach of the Britiſh Nation. That ſome of the Miniſtry, being tired out with the Clamours of the Merchants, declared their Opinion for War, and while they entertain'd thoſe Sentiments they pitch't upon him, Colo. Spotſwood, to be Governor of Jamaica, that by his Skill and Experience in the Art Military, they might be the better able to execute their deſign of taking the Havanna. But the Courage of theſe worthy Patriots ſoon cool'd, and the Arguments uſ'd by the South Sea Directors, perſwaded them once again into more pacifick Meaſures. When the Scheme was drop't, His Government of Jamaica was drop't at the ſame time, and then General Hunter was judg'd fit enough to rule that Iſland in time of peace. After this the Colo. endeavour'd to convince me that he came fairly by his Place of PoſtMaſter-General, notwithſtanding the Report of ſome Evil diſpoſ'd perſons to the Contrary. The caſe was this, Mr. Hamilton, of New Jerſey, who had formerly had that Poſt, wrote to Colo. Spotſwood, in England, to favour him with his Intereſt to get it reſtor'd to him. But the Colo. conſidering wiſely that Charity began at Home, inſtead of getting the Place for Hamilton, ſecured it for a better Friend: tho', as he tells the Story, that Gentleman was abſolutely refuſ'd, before he ſpoke the leaſt good word for himſelf. 1732 Oct.

This being the day appointed for my departure from hence, I 2 pack't up my Effects in good time; but the lad'ys, whose dear compan'ys we were to have to the Mines, were a little tedious

1732 Oct. in their Equipment. However, we made a Shift to get into the Coach by ten a'clock; but little Maſter, who is under no Government, would by all means go on Horſeback. Before we ſet out I gave Mr. Ruſſel the Trouble of diſtributing a Piſtole among the Servants, of which I fancy the Nurſe had a pretty good ſhare, being no ſmall Favorite. We drove over a fine Road to the Mines, which lye 13 Meaſured Miles from the Germanna, each mile being mark't diſtinctly upon the Trees. The Colo. has a great deal of Land in his Mine tract exceedingly barren, and the growth of Trees upon it is hardly big enough for Coaling. However, the Treaſure under Ground makes amends, and renders it worthy to be his Lady's Jointure. We lighted at the Mines, which are a Mile nearer to Germanna than the Furnace. They raiſe abundance of Oar there, great part of which is very Rich. We ſaw his Engineer blow it up after the following Manner. He drill'd a hole about 18 Inches deep, humouring the Situation of the Mine. When he had dryed it with a Rag faſtened to a worm, he charged it with a Cartridge containing 4 Ounces of Powder, including the Priming. Then he ramm'd the Hole up with ſoft Stone to the very Mouth; after that he pierced thro' all with an Iron called a Primer, which is taper and ends in a Sharp point. Into the hole the Primer makes the Priming is put, which is fired by a paper moiſten'd with a Solution of SaltPetre. And this burns leizurely enough, it ſeems, to give time for the Perſons concerned to retreat out of Harm's way. All the Land hereabouts ſeems pav'd with Iron Oar; ſo that there ſeems to be enough to feed a Furnace for many Ages. From hence we proceeded to the Furnace, which is built of rough Stone, having been the firſt of that kind erected in the Country. It had not blown for Several Moons, the Colo. having taken off great part of his People to carry on his Air Furnace at Maſſaponux. Here the Wheel that carry'd the Bellows was no more than 20 Feet Diameter; but was an Overſhot Wheel

that went with little Water. This was neceſſary here, becauſe Water is ſomething Scarce, notwithſtanding tis ſupply'd by 2 Streams, One of which is conveyed 1900 Feet thro' wooden Pipes, and the other 60. The Name of the Founder employed at preſent is one Godfrey, of the Kingdom of Ireland, whoſe Wages are 3/6 ℔ Tun for all the Iron he runs, and his proviſions. This Man told me that the beſt Wood for Coaling is red Oak. He Complain'd that the Colo. Starves his Works out of Whimſicalness and Frugality, endeavouring to do every thing with his own people, and at the ſame time taking them off upon every Vagary that comes into his Head. Here the Cole carts diſcharge their Load at folding Doors, made at the Bottom, which is ſooner done, and Shatters the cole leſs. They carry no more than 110 Buſhels. The Colo. adviſed me by all means to have the coal made on the ſame ſide of the River with the Furnace, not only to avoid the Charge of Boating and Baggs, but likewiſe to avoid breaking of the coals, and making them leſs fit for uſe. Having pick't the Bones of a Surloin of Beef, we took leave of the Ladys, and rode together about 5 Miles, where the Roads parted. The Colo. took that to Maſſaponux, which is 15 Miles from his Furnace, and very level, and I that to Frederickſburgh, which cant be leſs than 20. I was a little benighted, and ſhould not have ſeen my way, if the Lightening, which flaſh't continually in my Face, had not befriended me. I got about ſeven a'clock to Colonel Harry Willis's, a little moiſten'd with the Rain; but a Glaſs of good Wine kept my Pores open, and prevented all Rheums and Defluxions for that time. 1732 Oct.

I was oblig'd to riſe Early here, that I might not ſtarve my Landlord, whoſe conſtitution requires him to Swallow a Beef-Steak before the Sun bleſſes the World with its genial Rays. However, he was ſo complaiſant as to bear the gnawing of his Stomach, till 8 a'Clock for my Sake. Colo. Waller, after a Score of loud 3

1732 Oct. Hems to clear his Throat, broke his faſt along with us. When this neceſſary affair was deſpatched, Col. Willis walk't me about his Town of Frederickſburgh. It is pleaſantly situated on the South Shore of Rappahannock River, about a Mile below the Falls. Sloops may come up and lye cloſe to the Wharf, within 30 Yards of the Public Warehouſes, which are built in the figure of a Croſs. Juſt by the Wharf is a Quarry of White Stone that is very ſoft in the Ground, and hardens in the Air, appearing to be as fair and fine grain'd as that of Portland. Beſides that, there are ſeveral other Quarrys in the River Bank, within the Limits of the Town, ſufficient to build a great City. The only Edifice of Stone yet built is the Priſon; the Walls of which are ſtrong enough to hold Jack Sheppard, if he had been tranſported thither. Tho' this be a commodious and beautful Situation for a Town, with the Advantages of a Navigable River, and wholeſome Air, yet the Inhabitants are very few. Beſides Colo. Willis, who is the top man of the place, there are only One Merchant, a Taylor, a Smith and an Ordinary keeper; though I muſt not forget Mrs. Leviſtone, who Acts here in the Double Capacity of a Doctreſs and Coffee Woman. And were this a populous City, ſhe is qualify'd to exerciſe 2 other callings. Tis ſaid the Court-houſe and the Church are going to be built here, and then both Religion and Juſtice will help to enlarge the Place. 2 Miles from this place is a Spring ſtrongly impregnated with Alom, and ſo is the Earth all about it. This water dos wonders for thoſe that are afflicted with a Dropſy. And on the other ſide the River, in King George County, 12 Miles from hence, is another Spring of ſtrong Steel water, as good as that at Tunbridge Wells. Not far from this laſt Spring are England's Iron Mines, call'd ſo from the Chief Manager of them, tho' the Land belongs to Mr. Waſhington. Theſe Mines are 2 miles from the Furnace, and Mr. Waſhington raiſes the Oar, and Carts it thither for 20*s* the Tun of Iron that it yields.

The Furnace is built on a Run, which diſcharges its waters into Potomeck. And when the Iron is caſt, they Cart it about 6 Miles to a Landing on that River. Beſides Mr. Waſhington and Mr. England, there are ſeveral other Perſons, in England, concerned in theſe Works. Matters are very well managed there, and no Expence is ſpared to make them profitable, which is not the caſe in the works I have already mention'd. Mr. England can neither write nor read; but without thoſe helps, is ſo well ſkill'd in Iron works, that he dont only carry on this Furnace, but has likewiſe the Chief Management of the Works at Principia, at the head of the Bay, where they have alſo erected a Forge & make very good Bar Iron. Colo. Willis had built a Flue to try all ſorts of Oar in, which was contriv'd after the following manner. It was built of Stone 4 foot Square with an Iron grate fixed in the Middle of it for the Fire to lye upon. It was open at the Bottom, to give a free paſſage to the Air up to the Grate. Above the Grate was another Opening that carry'd the Smoke into a chimney. This makes a Draught upward, and the fire Rarifying the air below, makes another draught underneath, which cauſes the fire to burn very fiercely, and Melt any Oar in the Crucibles that are ſet upon the Fire. This was erected by a Maſon call'd Taylor, who told me he built the Furnace at Frederickville, and came in for that purpoſe at 3/6 a day, to be paid Him from the time he left his Houſe in Glouceſterſhire, to the time he returned thither again, unleſs he choſe rather to remain in Virginia after he had done his Work. It happen'd to be Court day here, but the Rain hinder'd all but the moſt quarrelſome People from coming. The Colo. brought 3 of his Brother Juſtices to dine with us, namely, John Taliefero, Majr Lightfoot, & Captain Green, and in the Evening Parſon Kenner edify'd us with his Company, who left this Pariſh for a better, without any regard to the poor Souls he had half ſaved, of the Flock he abandon'd. 1732 Oct.

1732 Oct. 4. The Sun riſing very bright, invited me to leave this Infant City; accordingly, about ten, I took leave of my Hoſpitable Landlord, and perſuaded parſon Kenner to be my Guide to Maſſaponux, lying 5 Miles off, where I had agreed to meet Colo. Spotſwood. We arriv'd there about 12, and found it a very pleaſant and commodious Plantation. The Colo. receiv'd us with open Arms, and carry'd us directly to his Air Furnace, which is a very ingenious and profitable contrivance. The uſe of it is to melt his Sow Iron, in Order to caſt it into ſundry Utenſils, ſuch as Backs for Chimneys, Andirons, Fenders, Plates for Hearths, Pots, Mortars, Rollers for Gardeners, Skillets, Boxes for Cart Wheels; and many other things, which, one with another, can be afforded at 20/ a Tun, and deliver'd at People's own Homes. And, being caſt from the Sow Iron, are much better than thoſe which come from England, which are caſt immediately from the Oar for the moſt part. Mr. Flowry is the Artiſt that directed the Building of this Ingenious Structure, which is contrived after this Manner. There is an Opening about a foot Square for the freſh Air to paſs thro' from without. This leads up to an Iron Grate that holds about half a Buſhel of Sea Coal, and is about 6 foot higher than the opening. When the Fire is kindled, it rarifys the Air in ſuch a Manner as to make a very ſtrong Draught from without. About too foot above the Grate is a hole that leads into a kind of Oven, the Floor of which is laid Shelving towards the Mouth. In the Middle of this Oven, on one Side, is another hole that leads into the Funnel of a Chimney, about 40 foot high. The Smoak mounts up this way, drawing the Flame after it with ſo much force, that in leſs than an hour it melts the Sows of Iron that are thruſt towards the upper end of the Oven. As the Mettal melts it runs towards the Mouth into a hollow place, out of which the Potter lades it in Iron Ladles, in order to pour it into the Several Moulds juſt by. The Mouth of the Oven is

Stopt cloſe with a Moveable ſtone Shutter, which he removes ſo ſoon as he perceives, thro' the peep holes, that the Iron is melted. The inſide of the Oven is lined with ſoft Bricks, made of Sturbridge or Windſor Clay, becauſe no other will endure the intenſe heat of the Fire. And over the Floor of the Oven they ſtrew ſand taken from the Land, and not from the Water ſide. This Sand will melt the 2d Heat here, but that which they uſe in England will bear the fire 4 or 5 times. The Potter is alſo obliged to Plaiſter over his Ladles with the ſame Sand moiſten'd, to ſave them from melting. Here are 2 of theſe Air Furnaces in one Room, that ſo in caſe one want repair, the other may work, they being exactly of the ſame Structure. The Chimneys and other outſide work of this building are of Free-Stone, raiſ'd near a Mile off, on the Colonel's own land. And were built by his Servant, whoſe Name is Kerby, a very compleate Workman. This Man diſdains to do any thing of rough work, even where neat is not required, leſt any one might ſay hereafter, Kerby did it. The Potter was ſo complaiſant as to ſhew me the whole Proceſs, for which I paid him and the other Workmen my reſpects in the moſt agreeable way. There was a great deal of Ingenuity in the framing of the Moulds, wherein they caſt the Several Utenſils, but without breaking them to pieces, I found there was no being let into that Secret. The Flakes of Iron that fall at the Mouth of the Oven are call'd Geets, which are melted over again. The Colo. told me, in my Ear, that Mr. Robert Cary, in England, was concerned with him, both in this and his other Iron works, not only to help ſupport the Charge, but alſo to make Friends to the Undertaking at home. His Honour has ſettled his Couſin, Mr. Greame, here as PoſtMaſter, with a Salary of £60 a Year, to reward Him for having ruin'd his Eſtate while he was abſent. Juſt by the Air Furnace ſtands a very Subſtantial Wharf, cloſe to which any Veſſel may ride in

1732 Oct.

1732 Oct. Safety. After ſatisfying our Eyes with all theſe Sights, we Satisfy'd our Stomachs with a Surloin of Beef, and then the Parſon and I took leave of the Colo., and left our Bleſſing upon all his works. We took our way from thence to Major Woodford's, 7 Miles off, who lives upon a high Hill that affords an extended Proſpect. On which Account tis dignify'd with the Name of Windſor. There we found Rachel Cocke, who ſtayed with her Siſter ſome time, that ſhe might not loſe the uſe of her Tongue in this lonely Place. We were receiv'd graciouſly, and the Evening was Spent in talking and toping, and then the Parſon and I were conducted to the ſame Apartment, the Houſe being not yet finiſht.

5 The Parſon ſlept very peaceably, and gave me no diſturbance, ſo I roſe freſh in the Morning, and did Credit to the Air by eating a hearty Breakfaſt. Then Major Woodford carry'd me to the houſe where he cuts Tobacco. He Manufactures about 60 Hogſheads yearly, for which he gets after the Rate of 11 pence a Pound, and pays Himſelf liberally for his Trouble. The Tobacco he cuts is long Green, which, according to its name, bears a very long leaf, and conſequently each Plant is heavyer than common Sweet-ſcented or Townſend Tobacco. The worſt of it is the Veins of the Leaf are very large, ſo that it loſes its weight a good deal by Stemming. This kind of Tobacco is much the Faſhion in theſe parts, and Jonathan Forward (who has great Intereſt here) gives a good price for it. This Sort the Major cuts up, and has a Man that performs it very handily. The Tobacco is ſtemm'd clean in the firſt place, and then laid ſtraight in a Box, and preſſ'd down hard by a preſs that gos with a Nut. This Box is ſhov'd forward towards the Knife by a Screw, receiving its motion from a Treadle, that the Engineer ſets a-going with his Foot. Each Motion puſhes the Box the exact length which the Tobacco ought to be of, according to the Saffron or oblong cut, which it ſeems yields one

penny in a Pound more at London than the Square Cut, tho' at Briſtol they are both of equal price. The Man ſtrikes down the Knife once at every Motion of the Screw, ſo that his hand and foot keep exact pace with each other. After the Tobacco is cut in this Manner, tis Sifted firſt thro' a Sand Riddle, and then thro' a Duſt Riddle, till tis perfectly clean. Then tis put into a tight Hogſhead, and preſt under the Nut, till it weighs about a Thouſand Neat. One Man performs all the work after the Tobacco is ſtemm'd, ſo that the Charge bears no proportion to the Profit. One conſiderable Benefit from planting long Green Tobacco is, that tis much hardyer, and leſs Subject to fire than other ſweet ſcented, tho' it ſmells not altogether ſo fragrant. I ſurpriz'd Mrs. Woodford in her Houſewifery in the meat-houſe, at which ſhe bluſh'd as if it had been a Sin. We all walkt about a Mile in the Woods, where I ſhew'd them ſeveral uſeful Plants, and explained the Vertues of them. This Exerciſe, and the fine Air we breath'd in, ſharpen'd our appetites ſo much that we had no mercy on a Ribb of Beef that came attended with Several other good things at dinner. In the afternoon, we tempted all the Family to go along with us to Major Ben. Robinſon's, who lives on a high Hill, call'd Moon's Mount, about 5 Miles off. On the Road we came to an Eminence, from whence we had a plain View of the Mountains, which ſeem'd to be no more than 30 Miles from us, in a ſtraight line, tho', to go by the Road, it was near double that diſtance. The Sun had juſt time to light us to our Journey's End, and the Major receiv'd us with his uſual good Humour. He has a very Induſtrious wife, who has kept him from Sinking by the Weight of Gaming & Idleneſs. But he is now reform'd from thoſe ruinous Qualities, and by the help of a Clerk's place, in a Quarrelſome County, will ſoon be able to clear his old Scores. We drank exceeding good Cyder here, the juice of the White Apple, which made us talkative till ten a'clock,

1732 Oct.

1732 Oct. and then I was conducted to a Bed-chamber, where there was neither Chair nor Table; however, I ſlept ſound, and waked with ſtrong tokens of Health in the Morning.

When I got up about Sunriſe, I was ſurpriz'd to find that a 6 Fog had covered this high Hill; but theres a Marſh on the other ſide the River that ſends its filthy Exhalation up to the Clouds. On the Borders of that Moraſs lives Mr. Lomax, a Situation fit only for Frogs and Otters. After fortifying myſelf with Toaſt and Cyder, and ſweetening my Lips with ſaluteing the Lady, I took Leave, and the 2 Majrs conducted me about 4 Miles on my Way, as far as the Church. After that, Ben Robinſon order'd his Eaſt Indian to conduct me to Colo. Martin's. In about ten Miles, we reacht Caroline Court-houſe, where Colo. Armſtead and Colo. Will. Beverley, have each of 'em erected an ordinary, well ſupply'd with Wine & other Polite Liquors, for the Worſhipful Bench. Beſides theſe, there is a Rum Ordinary for Perſons of a more Vulgar taſt. Such Liberal Supplys of Strong Drink often make Juſtice nod, and drop the Scales out of her hands. Eight Miles beyond the Ordinary, I arriv'd at Colo. Martin's, who receiv'd me with more Gravity than I expected. But, upon inquiry, his Lady was Sick, which had lengthened his Face and gave him a very mournful Air. I found him in his Night-Cap and Banian, which is his ordinary dreſs in that retired part of the Country. Poorer land I never ſaw than what he lives upon; but the wholeſomeneſs of the Air, and the goodneſs of the Roads, make ſome amends. In a clear day the Mountains may be ſeen from hence, which is, in truth, the only Rarity of the Place. At my firſt Arrival, the Colo. ſaluted me with a Glaſs of good Canary, and ſoon after filled my Belly with good Mutton and Cauliflowers. Two People were as indifferent Company as a man and his Wife, without a little Inſpiration from the Bottle; and then we were forced to go as far as the

Kingdom of Ireland, to help out our Converſation. There, it ſeems, the Colo. had an Elder Brother, a Phyſician, who threatens him with an Eſtate ſome time or other; Tho' poſſibly it might come to him ſooner if the Succeſſion depended on the death of one of his Patients. By 8 a'Clock at Night we had no more to ſay, and I gaped wide as a Signal for retiring, whereupon I was conducted to a clean Lodging, where I would have been glad to exchange one of the Beds for a Chimney. 1732 Oct.

This Morning Mrs. Martin was worſe, ſo that there were no 7 hopes of ſeeing how much ſhe was alter'd. Nor was this all, but the Indiſpoſition of his Conſort made the Colo. intolerably grave and thoughtful. I prudently eat a Meat Breakfaſt, to give me Spirits for a long Journey, and a long Faſt. My Landlord was ſo good as to ſend his Servant along with me, to guide me thro' all the turnings of a difficult way. In about 4 Miles we croſt Mattaoponi River at Norman's Ford, and then Slanted down to King William County Road. We kept along that for about 12 Miles, as far as the New Brick Church. After that I took a blind Path, that carry'd me to ſeveral of Colo. Jones's Quarters, which border upon my Own. The Colonel's Overſeers were all abroad, which made me fearful I ſhou'd find mine as Idle as them. But I was miſtaken, for when I came to Gravel Hall, the firſt of my Plantations in King William, I found William Snead (that looks after 3 of them) very honeſtly about his buſineſs. I had the Pleaſure to ſee my People all well, and my Buſineſs in good forwardneſs. I viſited all the 5 Quarters on that Side, which ſpent ſo much of my time, that I had no leizure to ſee any of thoſe on the Other ſide the River; Tho' I diſcourſt Thomas Tinſley, one of the Overſeers, who informed me how matters went. In the Evening Tinſley conducted me to Mrs. Sym's Houſe, where I intended to take up my Quarters. This Lady, at firſt Suſpecting I was ſome Lover, put on a Gravity that becomes a Weed;

1732 Oct. but ſo ſoon as ſhe learnt who I was, brighten'd up into an unuſual cheerfulneſs and Serenity. She was a portly, handſome Dame, of the Family of Eſau, and ſeem'd not to pine too much for the Death of her Huſband, who was of the Family of the Saracens. He left a Son by her, who has all the Strong Features of his Sire, not ſoften'd in the leaſt by any of hers, ſo that the moſt malicious of her Neighbours cant bring his Legitimacy in Queſtion, not even the Parſon's Wife, whoſe unruly Tongue, they ſay, dont Spare even the Reverend Doctor, her Huſband. This Widow is a Perſon of a lively & cheerful Converſation, with much leſs Reſerve than moſt of her Countrywomen. It becomes her very well, and ſets off her other agreeable Qualities to Advantage. We toſt off a Bottle of honeſt Port, which we Reliſht with a broil'd Chicken. At Nine I retir'd to my Devotions, And then Slept ſo Sound that Fancy itſelf was Stupify'd, elſe I ſhou'd have dreamt of my moſt obliging Landlady.

8 I moiſten'd my Clay with a Quart of Milk and Tea, which I found altogether as great as great a help to diſcourſe as the Juice of the Grape. The courteous Widow invited me to reſt myſelf there that good day, and go to Church with Her, but I excuſ'd myſelf, by telling her ſhe wou'd certainly ſpoil my Devotion. Then ſhe civilly entreated me to make her Houſe my Home whenever I viſited my Plantations, which made me bow low, and thank her very kindly. From thence I croſt over to Shaccoe's, and took Thomas Tinſley for my guide, finding the Diſtance about 15 Miles. I found every Body well at the Falls, bleſſed be God, tho' the Bloody Flux raged pretty much in the Neighbourhood. Mr. Booker had receiv'd a Letter the day before from Mrs. Byrd, giving an Account of great deſolation made in our Neighbourhood, by the Death of Mr. Lightfoot, Mrs. Soan, Capt. Gerald and Colo. Henry Harriſon. Finding the Flux had been ſo fatal, I deſired Mr. Booker to

make uſe of the following Remedy, in caſe it ſhou'd come amongſt my People. To let them Blood immediately about 8 Ounces; the next day to give them a Doſe of Indian Phyſic, and to repeat the Vomit again the Day following, unleſs the Symptoms abated. In the mean time, they ſhou'd eat nothing but Chicken Broth, and Poacht Eggs, and drink nothing but a Quarter of a Pint of Milk boil'd with a Quart of Water, and Medicated with a little Mullein Root, or that of the prickly Pear, to reſtore the Mucus of the Bowels, and heal the Excoriation. At the ſame time, I order'd him to communicate this Method to all the poor Neighbours, and eſpecially to my Overſeers, with Strict Orders to uſe it on the firſt appearance of that Diſtemper, becauſe in that, and all other Sharp Diſeaſes, Delays are very dangerous. I alſo inſtructed Mr. Booker in the way I had learnt of Blowing up the Rocks, which were now Drill'd pretty full of Holes, and he promiſed to put it in Execution. After diſcourſing ſeriouſly with the Father about my Affairs, I joked with the Daughter in the evening, and about 8 retired to my Caſtle, and recollected all the Follys of the Day, the little I had learnt, and ſtill leſs good I had done. 1732 Oct.

My long Abſence made me long for the Domeſtick Delights of my own Family, for the Smiles of an Affectionate Wife, and the prattle of my Innocent Children. As ſoon as I ſally'd out of my Caſtle, I underſtood that Colo. Carter's Samm was come, by his Maſter's leave, to ſhew my people how to blow up the Rocks in the Canal. He pretended to great Skill in that matter, but perform'd very little, which however might be the Effect of Idleneſs rather than Ignorance. He came upon one of my Horſes, which he ty'd to a Tree at Shacoe's, where the poor Animal kept a Faſt of a Night and a day. Tho' this Fellow workt very little at the Rocks, yet my Man, Argalus, ſtole his Trade, and perform'd as well as he. For this good turn, I order'd Mr. Samuel half a Piſtole, all which he laid out 9

1732 Oct. with a New England Man for Rum, and made my Weaver and Spinning Woman, who has the happineſs to be called his Wife, exceedingly drunk. To puniſh the Varlet for all theſe Pranks, I ordered him to be baniſht from thence for ever, under the penalty of being whipt home, from Conſtable to Conſtable, if he preſum'd to come again. I left my Memorandums with Mr. Booker, of every thing I order'd to be done, and mounted my Horſe about ten, and in little more reacht Bermuda Hundred, and croſt over to Colo. Carter's. He, like an Induſtrious Perſon, was gone to overſee his overſeers at North Wales, but his Lady was at home, and kept me till Supper time before we went to dinner. As ſoon as I had done Juſtice to my Stomach, I made my honours to the good humour'd little Fairy, and made the beſt of my way home, where I had the great Satisfaction to find all that was deareſt to me in good health, nor had any diſaſter happen'd in the Family ſince I went away. Some of the neighbours had Worm fevers, with all the Symptoms of the Bloody Flux; but, bleſſed be God! their Diſtempers gave way to proper Remedys.

THE

Proceedings of the Commiſſioners

APPOINTED TO

Lay out the Bounds of the Northern Neck, lying between the Rivers Potomack and Rappahanock. Anno 1736.

THE Letters Patent by which the Northern Neck was granted to the Lord Colpepper and others, not having expreſt the Weſtern Bounds thereof very clearly, ſeveral Controverſys aroſe between his Majeſty's Governors of Virginia, and the Agents of the Lord proprietor about them. Many Patents were iſſued in the Kings Name for Lands, which his Lordſhip apprehended to be within his Grant, and his Agents on their Part likewiſe granted other Lands which the King's Governors did conceive belong'd to his Majeſty. Theſe Diſputes encreaſing every day, the Lord Fairfax being informed thereof, was very deſirous to have the Bounds of his Patent finally ſettled, and therefore in the year 1733, His Lordſhip preſented a Petition to his Majeſty, praying that his Majeſty would be pleaſed to order a Commiſſion to iſſue, for aſcertaining his Bounds, &c, which Petition will appear more particularly by the following Order of his Majeſty in Council. 1736 Sept.

1736 Sept.

At the Court at S^t James's the 29^th of November 1733.
Preſent. The King's moſt Excellent Majeſty in Council.

Whereas Thomas Lord Fairfax hath by Petition at this Board, humbly repreſented, that under Letters Patents granted to the Petitioner's Anceſtors by King Charles the Second, bearing date, the ^th day of May in the one and twentieth of his Reign, and alſo by King James the Second, bearing date the 27^th of September in the 4^th year of his Reign, the Petitioner is intituled to the Fee Simple and Inheritance, of all that intire Tract, Territory, or Parcel of Land, ſituate in Virginia in America, and bounded by and within the firſt Heads or Springs of the Rivers Tappahanock, alias Rappahanock, & Quireough, alias Potomack & by the Courſes of the ſaid Rivers from their ſaid firſt Heads or Springs (as they are commonly called or known by the Inhabitants & Diſcriptions of thoſe parts) and the Bay of Cheſapeyock, together with the ſaid Rivers themſelves, and all the Iſlands within the outermoſt Banks thereof and the Soil of all and Singular the Premiſes, and all Lands, Woods, Underwoods, Timber, Waters, Rivers, Havens, Ports, Harbours, Creeks, Ferrys, Advowſons, Royalties, Hereditaments, and ſo forth whatſoever, that not withſtanding the Petitioner's Right to the Tract of Land under the ſaid Grants, Several Diſputes have ariſen between His Majeſty's Governor and Council of the Province of Virginia, & the Petitioners Agents touching the Boundarys thereof, and the ſaid Governor and Council have from time to time Actually taken upon them to iſſue Grants of divers parcels of Land, part of the Petitioners ſaid Tract, and have run out Surveys of other Parcels of Land, altho' the ſame, as the Petitioner apprehends, and is adviſ'd, were clearly within the Bounds of his ſaid Tract, For remedy whereof for the Future, and in order to ſettle the Boundaries of the Petitioners ſaid Tract or Diſtrict, between his Majeſty's Province of Virginia, and the Petitioner, he moſt humbly pray'd,

that his Majeſty would be graciouſly pleaſed, to order a Commiſſion to iſſure, for running out, marking and aſcertaining the Bounds of the Petitioners ſaid Tract, or Diſtrict of Land, agreeable to the Diſcription thereof, as expreſſ'd, & contain'd in the ſaid ſeveral Grants from the Crown, & that His Majeſty would be pleaſ'd to name, or cauſed to be named, ſuch a Number of Commiſſioners for that purpoſe for the ſaid Province of Virginia as his Majeſty ſhould think proper, to be joined with an equal number of Commiſſioners on the Petitioners behalf, and that the ſaid Boundary Lines of the ſaid Province of Virginia ſo far as the ſame Affect or concern the Petitioners ſaid Tract of Land, and alſo the Boundary Lines of the Petitioners ſaid Tract or Diſtrict of Land, may be ſurvey'd, run out and mark't within a reaſonable time to be limitted for that purpoſe, and in caſe the ſaid Boundary Lines ſhall not be run, ſettled and aſcertained within the time to be ſo limitted as aforeſaid, that then His Majeſty would be pleaſ'd to hear the Petitioner by his Council on the Premiſes, and to give ſuch order and make ſuch Determination concerning the ſame, as to His Majeſty in his great Wiſdom ſhou'd ſeem meet, and that his Majeſtys Governor of the Province of Virginia, might be directed and and prohibited from making Grants of any Lands lying within the Boundarys inſiſted by the Petitioner or his ſaid Agent or Attorney to belong to the Petitioner under the ſaid Grant from the Crown, untill the ſaid Boundary Lines ſhall be ſettled and aſcertain'd as aforeſaid. His Majeſty in Council was this day pleaſ'd to take the ſaid Petition into His Royal Conſideration, together with the Opinion of a Committee of his privy Council, and of the Lords Commiſſioners for Trade and Plantations thereupon, And is hereby pleaſed to Order, that the Lieutenant Governor of the Province of Virginia ſhall nominate three, or more Commiſſioners (not exceeding Five) who in conjunction with a like Number to be named and Deputed by

1736 Sept.

1736 Sept. the Lord Fairfax; are to ſurvey & ſettle the marks and Boundaries of the ſaid Diſtrict of Land agreeable to the Terms of the Patents under which the Lord Fairfax claims, within the Space of two years after the arrival of this order. And his Majeſty is further pleaſ'd to order, that in the mean time the ſaid Lieutenant Governor of Virginia do not preſume to make any Grants of Lands within the abovemention'd Tract.

JAMES VERNON.

In Obedience to the above order of his Majeſty in Council (which the Lord Fairfax brought over to Virginia himſelf, but did not think fit to produce it to the Governor til more than 2 years after the Date thereof) his Honour William Gooch Eſq, was pleaſ'd to iſſue the following Commiſſion to William Byrd, John Robinſon and John Grymes Eſq^{rs}

William Gooch Eſq^{r}, His Majeſty's Lieu^{t} Governor and Commander in Cheif of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia, To whom theſe preſents ſhall come Greeting.

Whereas the Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax by his Petition to his Majeſty in his Privy Council, hath humbly repreſented, that under Letters Patents granted to his Anceſtors, by King Charles the Second on the Eighth day of May in the 21st Year of his Reign, and by King James the Second, bearing date the Twenty Seventh day of September in the fourth Year of his Reign, he the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax is entituled to the Fee-Simple and Inheritance of all that intire Tract, Territory, or Parcel of Land, ſituate in Virginia in America, and bounded by and within the firſt Heads, or Springs of the Rivers Tappahanock, alias Rappahanock, and Quireouch, alias Potamack, the courſes of the ſaid Rivers from their ſaid firſt Heads or Springs (as they are commonly called or known by the Inhabitants, and deſcription of thoſe Parts) and the Bay of

Cheſapeak, together with the Rivers themſelves, and all the Iſlands within the outermoſt Banks thereof. And further repreſented to his Majeſty, that ſeveral Diſputes have ariſen, touching the Boundarys of the ſaid Territory, and thereupon did humbly Supplicate his Majeſty that for ſettleing the Boundaries of the Petitioners ſaid Tract, his Majeſty would be pleaſ'd to order a Commiſſion to iſſue, and for running, marking and Aſcertaining the Bounds of the Petitioners ſaid Tract or Diſtrict of Land, agreeable to the Deſcription thereof, as expreſſed and contain'd in the ſaid Grants thereof from the Crown, as in and by the ſaid Petition (amongſt other things) is more at large contain'd, And whereas his Majeſty upon Conſideration of the ſaid Petition, hath been graciouſly pleaſ'd by order in his privy Council, bearing Date the 29th day of November 1733, to direct me to nominate three or more Commiſſioners (not exceeding five) who in Conjunction with the like Number to be named and deputed by the ſaid Lord Fairfax, are to Survey and ſettle the Marks and Boundaries of the ſaid Diſtrict of Land, agreeable to the Terms of the Patents under which the Lord Fairfax claims, within the time therein limitted. Know ye therefore that in Obedience to his Majeſty's Royal Commands, and for the more Speedy and Exact performance of the Service aforeſaid, and for removing all future Diſputes and Controverſies, touching The Boundaries between his Majeſty and the ſaid Lord Fairfax, I repoſing Special Truſt and Confidence in the Loyalty, fidelity and known Ability of William Byrd of Weſtover in the County of Charles City Eſqr, John Robinſon of Piſcattoway in the County of Eſſex Eſqr, and John Grymes of Brandon in the County of Middleſex Eſqr Members of his Majeſty's Council in this Dominion, have Nominated, deputed, and by theſe Preſents do Nominate, Depute and appoint the ſaid William Byrd, John Robinſon & John Grymes, Commiſſioners on behalf of his Majeſty for the Purpoſes herein before mention'd giving

1736 Sept.

1736 Sept. and granting unto the ſaid Commiſſioners full Power and Authority, by all Lawfull Ways and Means, to examine, ſettle, and determine all Matters and things touching and concerning the ſaid Several Boundaries, according to the true intereſt and meaning, and Genuine Sence and conſtruction of the Several Letters Patents, Granted for the ſaid Tract and Territory, and for the better enabling the ſaid Commiſſioners to perform the ſaid Service, I do further give and grant unto them full Power and Authority, to call before them all and every Perſon and Perſons, by whom the Truth in the Premiſes may be more fully known and explain'd, and their and every of their Affidavits and Depoſitions openly and plainly in the Preſence of the ſaid Lord Thomas Fairfax, His Agents, Deputy's, or Commiſſioners to take or Cauſe to be taken in Writing, and in all Offices as well of Record as other ways, within this Dominion, to enquire, or cauſe to be Searcht for all Papers, Muniments, and Records, whereby the Boundarys aforeſaid may be more clearly and diſtinctly known and diſcover'd, hereby requiring the Clerks, and other Officers concerned in the keeping the ſaid Offices and Records, to give unto the ſaid Commiſſioners free Acceſs unto the Same, and to furniſh them with Extracts, Tranſcripts, and Copies thereof, for which the uſual Fees ſhall be duly Satisfied and paid out of his Majeſty's Revenues. And I do moreover give and Grant unto the ſaid Commiſſioners full Power and Authority, ſuch and ſo many Surveyors, Chain-Carryers, Markers, and Attendants, as they ſhall find neceſſary for the Service aforeſaid, to take, hire, and employ, hereby requiring the ſaid Commiſſioners in caſe any difficulty ſhould happen to ariſe, ſo as the ſaid Boundaries cannot be ſettled, and aſcertain'd on the place, in Conjunction with the Commiſſioners appointed by the ſaid Lord Fairfax, a full true and exact Report of all Matters of Tract, and other their Proceedings, Specially to return to me or the Commander in Chief of this Colony and Dominion for

the time being, in order to be laid before his Majeſty for his final Determination. 1736 Sept.

Given under my hand, and the Seal of the Colony at Williamſburgh the Seventh Day of September 1736. In the Tenth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the 2nd by the Grace of God of Great Britain, France, and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith &c.

When the Lord Fairfax, underſtood that the Gentlemen abovemention'd were named Commiſſioners on the part of the King, he ſent word by Mr Baradel that he had ſo good an Opinion of their Juſtice, that he would abide by their Deciſion without appointing any Commiſſioners of his own, upon which Complement the following paper was ſent to his Lordſhip to ſign, in Order to confirm what his Council had ſaid.

To all People to whom theſe Preſents ſhall come. Thomas Lord Fairfax, Proprietor of all that Tract or Territory of Land commonly call'd the Northern Neck of Virginia ſendeth Greeting—

Whereas by an Order made by his Majeſty in his Privy Council bearing date the twenty ninth day of September one Thouſand Seven hundred and thirty three, upon the humble Petition of the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax His Majeſty was pleaſ'd to direct the Lieutenant Governor of Virginia, to nominate three or more Commiſſioners (not exceeding five) who in Conjunction with a like Number to be named and deputed by the ſaid Lord Fairfax, are to ſurvey and ſettle the Marks and Boundaries of the aforeſaid Tract or Territory of Land, agreeable to the Terms of the Letters Patents under which the ſaid Lord Fairfax claims, as in the ſaid order more fully is contain'd, And whereas in obedience to the ſaid Order, the Honourable William Gooch Eſqr Lieutenant Governor of Virginia, hath

1736 Sept. nominated and appointed William Byrd, John Robinſon, and John Grymes, Eſquires, Members of his Majeſtys Council of Virginia, Commiſſioners on behalf of his Majeſty to execute the Order aforeſaid.

Now know ye, that the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax, having full confidence in the Honour and Integrity of the ſaid William Byrd, John Robinſon, and John Grymes, and therefore thinking it unneceſſary to nominate and appoint any Commiſſioners on his Behalf, hath conſented and agreed, and by theſe Preſents doth conſent and agree, that the ſaid William Byrd, John Robinſon, and John Grymes, ſhall and may without any Commiſſioners to be named by him the ſaid Lord Fairfax, proceed to execute the Order of his Majeſty herein before mention'd, and the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax doth hereby declare, that it is his intent and meaning, that whatſoever the ſaid William Byrd, John Robinſon, and John Grymes ſhall Act and do in the Execution of the Order aforeſaid, ſhall be as valid and effectual as if the ſame was done in Conjunction with other Commiſſioners nominated by him the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax.

In witneſs whereof the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax hath hereunto ſet his hand and Seal this tenth day of September, in the Year of our Lord One Thouſand Seven Hundred and thirty ſix.

When this Declaration was ſent to the Lord Fairfax to ſign, he was pleaſ'd to refuſe it, which ſhew'd that the Complement made by his Lordſhips order to the Kings Commiſſioners, was ſhear Good Breeding. Upon his Refuſal the Governor thought fit to give the following Inſtructions to his Majeſty's Commiſſioners.

Inſtructions to William Byrd John Robinſon, and John Grymes, Eſq^rs, Commiſſioners appointed in behalf of his Majeſty for running marking and aſcertaining that Tract, Territory, or Diſtrict of Land, Situate in Virginia in America, and claimed by the Right Honourable Thomas Lord Fairfax, as granted by Sundry Letters Patents to his Anceſtors under the great Seal of England. 1736 Sept.

WHEREAS I have appointed you Commiſſioners in behalf of his Majeſty, for Surveying and ſettleing the Boundaries between His Majeſty and the ſaid Lord Fairfax, for your better Information in this Service, you will herewith receive Coppies of the ſeveral Letters Patents granted by the Crown for the Territory aforemention'd, Viz^t The Letters Patents granted by King Charles the Second, bearing date at S^t the 18^th day of September in the firſt Year of his Reign, to Ralph Lord Hopton and others, then the Letters Patents granted by the ſaid King Charles the Second bearing date at Weſtminſter the 5^th day of May in the one and twentieth Year of his Reign, to Henry Earl of S^t Albans and others, and laſtly the Letters granted by King James the Second unto Thomas Lord Culpepper, bearing date at Weſtminſter the 27^th day of September in the fourth year of his Reign. And you will alſo herewith receive an order of his Preſent Majeſty in his Privy Council, bearing date the 29^th day of November 1733, made upon the humble petition of the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax, in purſuance whereof you are now Commiſſionated & appointed, you will therefore carefully peruſe & conſider the ſaid ſeveral Letters Patents, & the order of his Majeſty aforemention'd, and according to the true and genuine Sence and conſtruction thereof, as ſoon as the Seaſon of the year will permit your entering upon that Service, proceed to ſurvey, mark, and ſettle the Boundaries of the ſaid Tract or Territory

1736 Sept. of Land, taking notice, that by the aforeſaid Order of his Majeſty in his Privy Council, the ſaid Service is to be perform'd within the Space of Two Years after the arrival of the ſaid order, and that the time for the ſame muſt be reckon'd from the 15th day of October laſt paſt, when the ſaid Order was firſt deliver'd to me.

And foraſmuch as it may be neceſſary for the more clear Deſcription of the Bounds in Controverſy, to have exact Maps of the Rivers Rappahanock and Potomack and the Branches thereof to the firſt Heads or Springs ſo called or known, You are to cauſe the Surveyors ſo by you employ'd to prepare correct Mapps thereof, in order to be laid before his Majeſty.

And if it ſhall ſo happen, that no Determination or Settlement of the Boundaries can be made upon the Place, and it be found neceſſary to have recourſe to his Majeſty for his final Determination, you are in that Caſe to be very Exact in taking the Affidavits and depoſitions of ſuch Perſons as you ſhall find proper to examine touching the ſaid Rivers Rappahanock and Potomack, and how far they were known by thoſe Names at the time of the laſt Grant made by King James the Second to the Lord Culpepper, and how far the Bounds of the Territory aforeſaid were at that time reputed to extend, or have been ſince bounded by the Proprietors thereof or their Agents, and report all matters of Fact and Evidence, eſpecially touching the Premiſes, to me, or the Commander in Cheif of this Dominion for the time being, together with your Opinion wherein the Bounds now claim'd by the Lord Fairfax, are conſiſtant or inconſiſtant with the Terms of the ſeveral Grants, as the ſame were call'd & known by the Inhabitants & deſcriptions of thoſe Parts

Given under my hand at Williamſburgh this Eight day of September 1736

WILLIAM GOOCH.

The Lord Fairfax after deliberating a long time what Meaſures to take, determin'd at laſt to appoint 3 Commiſſioners of his own, to act in Conjunction with thoſe of his Majeſty, However he woud not truſt them to determine his Bounds, but only to ſettle matters of Fact, to be laid before the King for his final Determination, and this appears by his Lordſhips Commiſſion as follows. 1736 Sept.

To all People to whom theſe Preſents ſhall come, Thomas Lord Fairfax Baron of Cameron in that part of Great Britain called Scotland, ſendeth greeting,

Whereas the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax by his Petition to his Majeſty in his Privy Council, did humbly repreſent, that under Letters Patents granted to his Anceſtors by King Charles the Second bearing date the Eight day of May in the Twenty firſt Year of his Reign, and by King James the Second bearing date the Twenty Seventh day of September in the fourth year of his Reign. He the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax is entitled to the Fee Simple and Inheritance of all that intire Tract, Territory, or Parcel of Land Situate in Virginia in America, and bounded by & within the firſt Heads or Springs of the Rivers Rappahanock & Potoumeek (as they are commonly called and known by the Inhabitants and deſcriptions of thoſe Parts) & the Bay of Cheſapeak, together with the Rivers themſelves and all the Iſlands within the outermoſt Banks thereof, and further repreſenting to his Majeſty that ſeveral Diſputes have ariſen touching the Boundaries of the ſaid Territory, and thereupon did humbly Supplicate His Majeſty, that for ſettling the Boundaries of the Petitioners ſaid Tract, His Majeſty would be graciouſly pleaſ'd to order a Commiſſion to iſſue for running, marking, and aſcertaining the Bounds of the ſaid Petitioners ſaid Tract or Diſtrict of Land, agreeable to the Deſcriptions thereof, as expreſſ'd and contain'd in the Grant thereof from the Crown, as in and by

1736 Sept. the ſaid Petition (among other things) is more at large contain'd, And whereas his Majeſty upon Conſideration of the ſaid Petition, was graciouſly pleaſ'd by order in his Privy Council, to direct that the Lieutenant Governor of Virginia ſhoud nominate 3 or more Commiſſioners (not exceeding five) who in conjunction with a like Number, to be named and deputed by the ſaid Lord Fairfax, ſhoud ſettle and Survey the marks and Boundaries of the ſaid Diſtrict of Land, agreeable to the Terms of the Patents under which the Lord Fairfax claims, within the Space of Two Years after the Arrival of the ſaid Order, And whereas there is great difference of Opinion in the conſtruction of the Grants aforeſaid, what are and ſhall be taken and deem'd the firſt Heads or Springs of the Rivers therein mention'd, ſo that the Boundaries of the ſaid Tract or Territory of Land cannot be finally ſettled or marked, until His Majeſty ſhall have determin'd that matter, and it being neceſſary in order to ſuch Determination, that true and exact Plans & Surveys be made of the ſaid Rivers, & other Facts and Circumſtances examined into and aſcertained, & a Report thereof made to His Majeſty, Know ye therefore, that in Obedience to His Majeſty's ſaid Order, The ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax, repoſing ſpecial truſt & confidence in Charles Carter of the County of King George Eſq^{r}, William Beverley of the County of Eſſex Eſq^{r} and William Fairfax of the County of Weſtmoreland Eſq^{r}, hath nominated, deputed, and appointed, and by theſe preſents doth nominate, depute, and appoint the ſaid Charles Carter, William Beverley, and William Fairfax Commiſſioners on behalf of him the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax, giving and by theſe preſents granting unto the ſaid Commiſſioners full Power & Authority to make or cauſe to be made any ſuch Survey or Surveys as they ſhall think fit, for the better Diſcovery of the firſt Heads or Springs of the ſaid Rivers Rappahanock and Potomack, & other Boundarys of the ſaid Tract or Territory of Land, according to the true intent, meaning, & con-

ſtruction of the aforeſaid Grants; And for that purpoſe to hire and employ ſuch & ſo many Surveyors, Chain-Carryers, & Attendants, as they ſhall find neceſſary. And further to examine & inquire into all other Facts and Circumſtances relating to, or concerning the ſaid Boundaries, and to that End, to take the Affidavits and Depoſitions in Writing of any Perſon or Perſons (being firſt Sworn before a Lawfull Majiſtrate) openly and plainly in the Preſence of the Commiſſioners named on behalf of his Majeſty, if they ſhall think fit to be preſent, and generally to do, & perform all & every other matter and thing, that to them ſhall ſeem neceſſary, & expedient, for the true performance of the Service herein before mention'd, Hereby requiring the ſaid Commiſſioners, to make a full true & exact Report of all Matters of Fact, & other their Proceedings ſpecially, in Order to be laid before his Majeſty for his final determination, concerning the conſtruction of the aforeſaid Grants, and the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax doth further give and Grant unto the ſaid Commiſſioners, full Power & Authority to mark & ſettle the Boundaries aforeſaid, after ſuch determination of his Majeſty ſhall be had & made, in Conjunction with ſuch Commiſſioners as ſhall be nominated in behalf of his Majeſty. In witneſs whereof the ſaid Thomas Lord Fairfax hath unto ſet his Hand & Seal the thirteenth Day of September in the Tenth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Second, by the Grace of God of Great Britain France & Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, & in the year of our Lord one thouſand Seven hundred & Thirty Six. 1736 Sept.

FAIRFAX. O

In obedience to the Order of His Majeſty, & to the Governor's Commiſſion thereupon, the Commiſſioners on the part of the King deſired thoſe of his Lordſhip, to meet them on the 25th of September at Frederickſburgh, and they themſelves repair'd

1736 Sept. thither accordingly at the time appointed, as appears by the Narrative of their Proceedings hereafter following.

The Commiſſioners on the part of the King arriv'd punctually at Frederickſburg at the day appointed, where they found only two of thoſe named by the Lord Fairfax, M^r^ Carter was hinder'd by ſickneſs who nevertheleſs came to us upon the 28^th^ of September, and aſſented to all that his coleagues had agreed to before he came; Theſe Gentlemen had not been Idle on account of his abſence, believing the other two had power to proceed by virtue of their Majority

In the firſt place the Commiſſioners on behalf of the King cauſ'd their Commiſſion to be read empowering them in Conjunction with thoſe appointed by the Lord Fairfax, to Survey, mark and aſcertain the Boundarys in Diſpute. But when his Lordſhips Commiſſion came to be produc't it appear'd his Commiſſioners were only empower'd to Survey the controverted Bounds, that ſo a State of the Facts might afterwards be laid before his Majeſty for his Royal Determination.

This Defect in the Powers given by the Lord Fairfax to His Commiſſioners was the more to be wonder'd at, becauſe in his Lordſhips Petition to the King, He had humbly beg'd His Majeſty to Order, that Commiſſioners might be appointed, not only to ſurvey the Boundaries in diſpute, but alſo to mark and aſcertain them. Nevertheleſs after the King had graciouſly condeſcended to grant his Petition, yet his Lordſhip now declined giving the neceſſary Powers to make his own aſking effectual. However that His Majeſty's Gracious Intentions might not be wholly fruſtrated, the Commiſſioners on the part of the King, by Favour of the Governor's Inſtructions did yield at laſt to cauſe the Bounds in Controverſy to be ſurvey'd and to procure all the Lights they cou'd beſides, to enable them to lay the whole matter as clearly as poſſible before His Majeſty, In order thereunto the two following Preliminarys were firſt agreed upon

1. That in the execution of this whole Affair the Lord Fairfax ſhou'd defray one Moiety of the intire Expence 1736 Sept.

2. That the Bounds of all the Countys in the Northern Neck, tho' not in Diſpute, ſhou'd be meaſured & laid off by the Surveyors of each County, that ſo the Extent of his Lordſhips Grant may the more diſtinctly appear. And Commiſſioners were ſent to the ſaid Surveyors accordingly. After that we commiſſion'd and cauſ'd to be ſworn Mr. Mayo & Mr Brooks as Surveyors for His Majeſty, who in Conjunction with Mr Winſlow & Mr Savage on my Lord's part, ſhou'd run the Courſes & meaſure the diſtance of that Branch of Potomack called Cohaungoruton, from its confluence with Sharando, to the Head Spring thereof, with Orders to return an Exact Map of the ſaid River, ſhewing all the Streams that run into the ſame on either Side. They were alſo directed to take the Latitude, & obſerve particularly where the ſaid River interſected the 40th Degree. And in order to enable them to perform this difficult Service, we allotted them 13 Men & a large quantity of Proviſion

When theſe were diſpatch't who had much fartheſt to go, we commiſſion'd & ſwore Mr Gream on behalf of the King, and Mr Thomas on that of my Lord, to Survey and Meaſure the South Branch of Rappahannock, from the firſt Fork to the Head Spring & return an exact Map of the ſame deſcribing all the Rivers & Creeks that diſcharge their Waters into it. And becauſe Mr Gream had not been much practiſed in Surveying, we allow'd Him to make uſe of Mr Hume as an Aſſiſtant. We likewiſe order'd them to furniſh themſelves with 6 Men, & what Proviſions ſhou'd be neceſſary for their Subſiſtence

We then empower'd and ſwore Mr Wood for His Majeſty, & Mr Thomas the Younger for my Lord, to Survey and meaſure the North Branch of Rappahannock, and gave them the ſame orders we had given to thoſe Surveyors who went up the South Branch. They were alſo directed to provide the ſame

1736 Sept. Number of Men to attend them & to take care to be furniſh't with Proviſions

Before the Surveyors enter'd upon their buſineſs, we meaſur'd all their chains to try their exactneſs, & at the ſame time gave them all orders to form their Draughts by the ſame Scale, that is to ſay after the rate of Six hundred Poles to an Inch.

While we ſtaid at Frederickſburgh we lodg'd at Col° Henry Willis's, but kept a magnificent Table at the Ordinary, and entertain'd all the Gentlemen that came to viſit us, which were a great many. From thence we went to Col° Charles Carters where our Entertainment was by no means extravagant

After all our matters were ſettled, relating to the Surveyors, we proceeded to the Fork of Rappahannock, and cauſ'd each Branch to be meaſured at the Mouth & found the North to be wider by 3 Poles and 9 Links tho' it was objected by his Lordſhip's Commiſſioners, that the South Branch was made narrower by an Iſland that ran along the South Shoar

We carry'd a Surloin of Beef with us from Col° Carter's & pick't the Bones of it as clean as a Kennel of Wolves wou'd thoſe of a wounded Buck, The ſame Gentleman furniſh't us alſo with Strong Beer, but forgot a Veſſel to drink out of. However we ſupply'd that want, with the Shell of a poor Tarapin which we deſtroy'd as Harry the 8th did Cardinal Wolſey, for the ſake of his Houſe. This ſhell we clean'd and drank out of it with as much Taſt as if it had of Gold of Ophir, or one of Phalaris's Triacrian Cups. After this Refreſhment we proceeded from thence to Germanna, where Col° Spotſwood receiv'd us very Courteouſly. And leſt we ſhou'd have forgot the memorable Battles of the Duke of Marlborough, he fought them all over again to us the Nine and fortieth time

There the Commiſſioners for the King took the Depoſitions of M[r] Taliofero, and M[r] Thornton, and thoſe for my Lord, that of M[r] Ruſſel, relating to the time the upper parts of Rap-

pannock have been inhabited, the particulars whereof will beſt appear by the Depoſitions themſelves 1736 Sept.

John Taliofero, Gentleman aged about forty nine Years being ſworn, Saith

That in or about the year of our Lord One thouſand Seven Hundred & Seven, he came up to dwell where he now lives above Snow Creek, which he takes to be Nine Miles below the Falls of Rappahannock River, and that there was then but three Settlements above his Houſe on the South ſide of the River & on the North ſide of the River the uppermoſt Plantation he knew of at that time, was about three Miles below the Falls. And he has been acquainted with the Fork of the River above twenty four Years & that one of the Forks was called the South Fork, and the other the North Fork, untill Col° Spotſwood above twenty Years ago named the South fork Rappidan, and it has ever ſince been ſo called, but the other has all a long been call'd Rappahannock, or the North River

JOHN TALIOFERO

Francis Thornton of Caroline County Gentleman aged fifty three Years and upwards, being ſworn declared

That about Thirty four years ago, He came up to dwell where he now lives, below or on the lower Side of Snow Creek, which He takes to be Nine Miles below the Falls of Rappahannock River, and that then there were but two Settlements above his Houſe on the South ſide of the River, the uppermoſt of which was about four Miles below the Falls. And on the North ſide of the River the uppermoſt Plantation he knew of at that time, was about two or three miles below the Falls & that he has been acquainted with the Fork of the River Rappahannock about Six or Seven and Twenty Years, and that one of the Forks was commonly called the South Branch and the other the North Branch

FRAN THORNTON

1736 Sept. William Ruſſel aged Fifty Six Years & above being ſworn, Saith

That he has known the great Fork of Rappahannock River thirty five Years as a Hunter, and that one of the Branches has always been called the South River or South Fork of Rappahannock, and the other the North River, or North Fork, till he heard that Col° Spotſwood named the South River Rappidan, & the other ſince that hath been called Rappahannock, and that the uppermoſt Settlement thirty odd Years ago was a Tobacco Houſe built by Capt Mount-joy, now Col° Carters Quarter on the North ſide of the River, a little below the Fork, and that there was a Plantation at Seales about two Miles below the Falls. And that he ſaw ſome Poſts of a Houſe on Motts Land, upon the South Side of the River, which was ſaid to be a Houſe burnt down by the Indians, being about three or four Miles above the Falls, near thirty Years ago

WILLIAM RUSSEL,
his W Mark

Theſe were all the Depoſitions that were taken by the Commiſſioners at the time, next follow the Commiſſions granted to the Surveyors.

By the Commiſſioners appointed in behalf of His Majeſty for ſettling the Boundaries between His Majeſty & the Right Honourable Thomas Lord Fairfax Proprietor of the Northern Neck

By vertue of the power and Authority to us given, We do hereby nominate & appoint you William Mayo & Robert Brooke Surveyors, in conjunction with ſuch Surveyors as ſhall be appointed on the part of the Lord Fairfax, to ſurvey & trace the River Cohongoruton as it is now commonly called, from its confluence with the River Sharando, according to your beſt Skill & underſtanding, keeping up the main Stream thereof, to

its Source or Head Spring & we do require you at your return to prepare & deliver to us an exact Plan or Map of the ſame together with a fair copy of your Field Notes, in which you ſhall fully and clearly deſcribe all the Streams or Rivers falling into the ſame, by ſuch Names as they are known, or called by the Indians or other Inhabitants & alſo to find the Variation of the Needle, and to obſerve the Latitude at all proper places eſpecially noting where the Fortieth Degree will interſect the ſaid Cohongoruton River & we do hereby give unto you the ſaid William Mayo & Robert Brooke full power and Authority to carry with you Six chain carriers to be by you Sworn, according to the Law of this Colony and to agree with them for Wages not exceeding Three Shillings ℔ Day, for which Service both you & they will be duly paid out of His Majeſty's Revenue at your return, and we do hereby require all his Majeſty's Subjects inhabiting the Colony of Virginia, and requeſt all others in the Neighbouring Provinces through which you may have occaſion to paſs, to be aiding & aſſiſting to you as occaſion ſhall require, Given under our Hands & ſeals, this Twenty Seventh Day of September in the year of our Lord 1736 1736 Sept.

W Byrd O
John Robinson O
John Grymes O

By the Commiſſioners appointed in behalf of his Majeſty, for ſettling the Boundaries betwen His Majeſty & the Right Honourable Thomas Lord Fairfax Proprietor of the Northern Neck.

By Vertue of the Powers & Authorities to us given, We hereby Nominate and appoint you John Greme Survey in Conjunction with ſuch Surveyor who ſhall be appointed on the part of the Lord Fairfax, to ſurvey & trace the River Rappahannock, as it is now commonly called, from the Falls of the ſaid River

1736 Sept. to the firſt great Fork thereof, and thence keeping up that Branch commonly called the Rappidan River going up the main Stream thereof to its Source or Head Spring — And we do require you at your Return, to prepare and deliver to us (according to your beſt Skill & underſtanding) an exact Plan or Map of the Same, together with a fair Copy of your Field Notes, wherein ſhall be juſtly & clearly deſcribed all the Streams falling into the Same, by ſuch Names as they are Known or called by the Inhabitants of thoſe parts: And alſo to take ſuch obſervations of the Variation of the Compaſs, and of Latitude all proper places as may be neceſſary for the greater Accuracy of your Plan. And we do hereby give unto you full Power & Authority, to take with you three Chain carriers, to be by you ſworn according to the Law of this Country & to agree with them at Two Shillings and Six Pence ℔ Day; for which Service both you & they will be duly paid out of his Majeſty's Revenue at your Return. And We do hereby require all his Majeſty's Subjects, inhabiting this Colony to be aiding and aſſiſting to you as occaſion ſhall require

Given under our hands and Seals this Twenty Seventh day of September in the Tenth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Second King of Great Britain &c

Annoque Dom 1736

W.B O
J R O
J. G. O

By the Commiſſioners appointed in behalf of His Majeſty for ſettling the Boundaries between His Majeſty and the Right Honourable Thomas Lord Fairfax Proprietor of the Northern Neck

By Vertue of the Powers and Authorities to us given, We do hereby nominate and appoint you James Wood Surveyor in

conjunction with ſuch Surveyors as ſhall be appointed on the part of the ſaid Lord Fairfax to ſurvey & trace the North Branch of the River Rappahannock now commonly call'd Rappahannock, from the Fork or place where the Rappidan River falls into it, keeping up the main ſtream thereof to its Source or Head Spring, And we do require you at your Return to prepare and deliver unto us according to your beſt Skill and underſtanding, an exact Plan or Map of the ſame, together with a fair Copy of your Field Notes wherein ſhall be fully and clearly deſcribed all the Streams and Rivers falling into the ſame, by ſuch names as they are known and called by the Inhabitants of theſe parrs, And Alſo to take ſuch Obſervations of the Variation of the Compaſs and of the Latitude at all proper places, as may be neceſſary for the greater accuracy of your Plan. And we do hereby give unto you full power and Authority to take with you three chain carryers, to be by you ſworn according to the Laws of this Colony, and to agree with them at Two Shillings and Six Pence ℔ Day, for which Services both you and they will be duly paid out of His Majeſty's Revenue at your Return. And We do hereby require all his Majeſty's Subjects inhabiting this Colony, to be aiding and aſſiſting to you as occaſion ſhall require 1736 Sept.

Given under our hands and Seals this Thirtieth day of September in the Tenth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Second King of Great Britain &c Annoq3 Dom 1736.

W Byrd O
J Robinson O
J Grymes O

We diſpatch't away theſe Surveyors without Loſs of time, but they ſeem'd in no great Hurry themſelves, They loiter'd ſo long at their firſt ſetting out, that the Commiſſioners thought it neceſſary to ſpur them with the following Letter

1736 Oct.

October 5th 1736

Your proceedings Gentlemen have been very dilatory & we can't conſtrue your conduct otherways than you imagine you are to be paid by the day & that you intend for that reaſon to make the moſt of, But that you may not deceive yourſelves, & ſpend your time in Sloath & Merriment, we give you this fair Warning, that we will make a Strict Examination of every days proceedings, that you may be paid not according to your time, but according to your deſerts, You ought to conſider that the ſettled wages of the Chain Carryers will be a great Addition to the extraordinary expence already contracted and for that reaſon as well as that for your own Credit, you are bound with faithfull Diligence to proſecute the work, you have with too much Slackneſs began. We truſt this neceſſary reproof will have its effect, recommend you to the good opinion of

Y. H. S.

W. Beverley W Byrd
W. Fairfax C Carter

Having mentioned before that we ordered the Surveyor's in the Northern Neck to ſurvey the Bounds of their Reſpective Countys and return a correct Map thereof, it may be proper to ſet down a copy of one of theſe Orders whereby a Notion may be form'd of all the reſt

By the Commiſſioners appointed in behalf of his Majeſty for ſettling the Boundaries between His Majeſty and the Right Honourable Thomas Lord Fairfax Proprietor of the Northern Neck

By vertue of the Power & Authorities to us given we do hereby appoint you John Savage Surveyor of Stafford County, forthwith to ſurvey & trace the Bounds of your ſaid County, from the Creek call'd upper Meckotick to the run of Chappa-

wamſick, according to your beſt Skill and underſtanding. And 1736
we do hereby require you to prepare and deliver to us upon oath an exact Mapp or Plan of the ſame, by a Scale of 800 Poles to one Inch together with a fair Coppy of your Field Notes, wherein ſhall be truly and clearly deſcribed, all the Rivers & Creeks within your ſaid Survey by their proper Names, with the true wedth of the ſame, including the ſaid Run of Chappawomſick & Mechotick Creek and alſo to take obſervation of the Latitude at Paſpatanſie, and we do hereby give you full Power and Authority to employ Two Chain Carryers, who ſhall be duely ſworn according to the Laws of this Country & to agree with them for Wages not exceeding Two Shillings & Six Pence ℔ Day, for which Service both you and they ſhall be duely paid, and we hereby require all his Majeſty's Subjects inhabiting the ſaid County of Stafford to be aiding and aſſiſting to you as Occaſion ſhall require

Given under our hands & Seals this thirtieth day of September Anno Domini 1736

J G. J R. W. B. O

On the Back of this Order was the aſſent of my Lord Fairfax's Commiſſioners under all their hands in the Words following.

We the Underwritten Commiſſioners in behalf of the Lord Fairfax do hereby declare our aſſent that the within ſervice be done by the ſaid John Savage, for which we agree to be at equal expence, the ſaid Surveyor delivering to us alſo an exact Plan or Map of the ſame and a fair Copy of his Field Notes

W F W B. C C

The Affidavit of Thomas Harriſon ſhewing when the upper Settlements were made upon the upper Parts of Potomack

Thomas Harriſon of the County of Prince William Gent aged Seventy five Years or thereabouts being ſworn and Ex-

1736 amin'd Depoſeth that he hath lived ever Since he was a Child on the Plantation where he now dwells on Chappawamſick Run, about forty Miles below the Falls of Potowmack, except about three years when he lived at Hunting Creek; that about Sixty three years ago the uppermoſt Settlement on Potowmack was no higher tham Hunting Creek, which he takes to be about 15 Miles below the Falls, that in the war with the Suſquehanna Indians the People who had ſeated there were beaten off from their Settlements and obliged to retire lower down the River, that about 50 Years ago Sundry Familys Seated again about Hunting Creek but at that time the Falls of Potowmack were not Known as ever he heard of, But about 36 or 37 years ago when he went up to live at Hunting Creek he had heard People talk of going up thither to fiſh, but never heard that any one adventured up ſo far as the Falls till about that time the Indians frighting all People from Venturing ſo far that he hath heard of the Falls he believes about 50 Years or near that time

This was ſworn before me in the preſence of all the Kings Commiſſioners and two of thoſe appointed by the Lord Fairfax the 17th day of June, 1737

W. Byrd

Next follows the Epiſtolary Correſpondence between the Commiſſioners on both Sides after they were Seperated from each other, and the firſt Letter was from the Kings Commiſſioners to thoſe of the Lord Fairfax.

December the 16. 1736

Gentlemen

There being little likelihood that the weather will ſoon allow us the Pleaſure of meeting You, we take this opportunity to let you know that Mr Wood has return'd us his Survey of the Northern Branch of Rappahannock River, which he meaſured fairly from Water Edge to Water Edge and not from Bank to

Bank as we have been informed your Surveyor Mr Thomas did, when he Surveyed the South Branch with the Intent, to be ſure, to make that appear wider than the North. As this ſeems to have been an unrighteous Proceeding in that Officer, We Can't perſuade ourſelves that you gave him any ſuch Orders but that the Artifice was all his own. 1736

We propoſe to give the neceſſary Directions for Surveying the Northern Branch of the Little Fork of Rappahannock, that ſo when the General Map of the Northern Neck comes to be form'd, it may ſhew among other things how far the King has granted; and we can by no means doubt of your Concurrence in a Matter that will ſet the preſent Controverſy in the cleareſt Light. We heartily wiſh you all the Diverſions of the approaching merry Feſtival and are.

Gentlemen Your moſt humble Servants

W. Byrd
John Robinson
John Grymes

The Commiſſioners on the part of the Right Honble the Lord Fairfax return'd the following Anſwer to the foregoing letter.

Feb.y 5th 1736.

We recev'd your Letter of 16th of December, and ſhou'd anſwer'd it ſome Time ago, if the late very cold Seaſon had not rendered our meeting hitherto impracticable.

We take notice that Mr Wood has deliver'd you his Survey of the North Branch of Rappahannock River, with which you are not ſatisfied, And deſire our Concurrence to ſurvey the North Branch of the little Fork, That as you ſay it may appear by the General Map how far the Crown has granted.

We think we have Reaſon alſo to complain of Artifice uſed by your Surveyors on the South River, and as we know of

1736 none uſed by ours, ſo we believe on the other hand, You gave no Orders to Counterfeit unfair Practices. Thomas the Elder has acquainted us, that after they had meaſured up to the laſt Fork of the South Branch, He was of Opinion they ought to proceed up the South Branch of that Fork called Canaway River, but Mr Graeme poſitively refuſed, ſaying that if the ſaid Thomas went up Canaway River, He ſhou'd bear the Expence, upon which Mr Thomas declin'd and proceeded up the N° Branch wherefore we muſt inſiſt upon having the ſaid South Branch called Conaway River alſo meaſured up to the Head Spring, as being likewiſe abſolutely neceſſary, otherwiſe it will not appear by the General Mapp how far Lord Fairfax claims.

We have therefore order'd Thomas the Elder to meaſure that Branch and if you think it neceſſary, that Mr Graeme ſhou'd aſſiſt in doing it, we hope you will pleaſe to order him out, ſo as that it may be done before the Spring. Thomas the Elder has aſſured us, He never meaſured the South River but once from Bank to Bank, and then it was to ſatisfy himſelf how much broader the Stream cou'd be made by any great Freſhes.

His Lordſhip being acquainted with our Conſent to your Propoſal of having the whole Northern Neck Survey'd, has directed us to move, that the River Rappahannock be ſurvey'd & meaſured on the South Side thereof to the outermoſt Banks of which his Lordſhip alſo claims

We conceive the execution of our Commiſſion has been now pretty well advanced ſo as to make another Conference neceſſary, therefore deſire to meet you at Tapahannock in the County of Eſſex, unleſs you can recommend a place more ſuitable to all the Commiſſioners, and ſhall be glad to ſee you as ſoon as poſſible, in Order, and in hopes to ſet all matters right

We are Gentlemen

Your moſt humble Servants

The Anſwer of the Kings Commiſſioners to the foregoing Letter. 1737 April.

April 26. 1737

Gentlemen

Your Letter of 5th of February came to the Hand of one of us, ſome time ago, but by ſeveral Misfortunes it cou'd not be conſidered by all Three till very lately, for which reaſon we cou'd not anſwer it ſooner. No body can doubt but the more exact and particular the Map ſhall be of the Lands in Controverſy, the eaſier will be the Determination upon it, and therefore upon your firſt application we immediately conſented to a Survey of Conaway River, and it is already perform'd. For the ſame reaſon we are of Opinion that the Survey of Rappahannock River ſhou'd be made on the North Side, and as that was our general Sence at the meeting in September laſt, and the Powers were then made out, upon which the work has in a great Meaſure been carry'd into Execution, we conceive your preſent Requeſt that the River Rappahannock be Surveyed and Meaſured on the South Side thereof, is now out of time and would be attended with great delay as well as Expence: And as the time in which we are required to finiſh our Report draws near, we hope his Lordſhip will not inſiſt upon ſo conſiderable an Alteration in the Meaſures which were unanimouſly agreed on Eight Months ago. We hope the Surveys will be all return'd by the 15th of June, and we ſhall then be glad to meet you in Williamſburg, where we may be all moſt conveniently accommodated.

We are

Gentlemen Y. M. H S.

Two of Lord Fairfaxes Commiſſioners came to Williamſburgh, to whom the foregoing Letter was deliver'd, and they ſeem'd to be convinc't of the reaſonableneſs of meeting at

1737 May. Williamſburgh, not only becauſe we ſhou'd be near any Record we might happen to want, but alſo becauſe meeting at Tappahannock would be attended with more Expence, without furniſhing proper Conveniences for ſo many Perſons as wou'd have Orders to attend us, Thus tho' theſe Gentlemen ſeem'd to acquieſce in our Arguments, yet they altered their Opinion as ſoon as they ſaw their Colleague, and ſoon after wrote us the following Letter

May the 10th 1737

Gentlemen

We have conſidered yours of the 26 of April, which we find we are to accept as your anſwer to Ours of the fifth of February; But we cannot agree with you in Opinion, That becauſe you deſire to have the Map Exact and particular you conſent to a Survey upon Conaway River, and for the ſame Reaſon deny your aſſent, that the Survey of Rappahannock River ſhould be made on the South Side. If we have deſired and inſiſted to have the River Rappahannock Surveyed, has it not been ſubſequent to your propoſal to have the whole Northern Neck plotted, and tho' we conſented thereto Eight Monts ago, We did then, and have always thought a Survey of more then the Controverted parts unneceſſary, both as to the time and Expence, And we cou'd not well imagine our Requeſt, to have the ſaid River ſurvey'd on the South Side, could with any equitable Reaſon's be refuſed; If not appearing to us that ſuch an Alteration was ſo conſiderable, as to be attended with any delay or Additional Expence to your ſaid Propoſal. We are now ſenſible that whenever you ſignify your Pleaſure to us, we muſt not diſpute the Juſtice thereof, and if we offer any motion with undeniable Reaſons to ſupport it, no Regard is paid thereto.

We think all the Surveys yet expected may be return'd by the laſt of this Month, after which time we ought to meet at ſome convenient Place near the Northern Neck, where the Surveyors and any Perſon required might attend us at the eaſieſt

Expence, in order to conſider of and prepare fit Matter for the general Map and Report, to be finally agreed on and concluded at Williamſburgh the fifteenth of June, as you have propoſ'd, where we ſhall alſo gladly agree to meet you, when we can have any aſſurance, that you will proceed with all becoming Diſpatch, as our undivided Powers require, which the little you did towards preparing a Report when laſt at Williamſburgh, gives us cauſe to mention. We are 1737 June.

Gentlemen Y. M. H. S.

The Anſwer of the Kings Commiſſioners to the foregoing Letter

June the 16th 1737

Gentlemen

We ſhall not anſwer your Letter in your own polite Terms, but only obſerve modeſtly ſome of the moſt remarkable Paſſages of it In the firſt Place your way of arguing is very notable, you lay it down as a Fundamental Maxim, that you always thought it unneceſſary to Survey more than the controverted Parts, yet in the ſame Breath inſiſt upon having the South Side of Rappahannock Survey'd which is utterly out of Diſpute. That River is a certain uncontroverted, Boundary, and therefore to Survey that wou'd be a wantonneſs of Expence without any Benefit which for that Reaſon we can't come into. Tis true you ſay it would be no Additional Charge tho' that is as much above our Apprehenſion as the uſe of it wou'd be if it were done.

In the next Place you tell us plainly you find you are not to diſpute the Juſtice of what we propoſe. This if it have any meaning, is a Severe Reflection & muſt ſignify, that our Stile is poſitive and Dictatorial, & we pay no regard to the weighty reaſons you are pleaſ'd to offer in Support of your Opinions, We conceive an Accuſation of this heinous Sort wou'd have been back't with ſome Inſtances, if you had any, but as none of

1737 June. them appear, we muſt look upon it as a random Shot, intending only Miſchief in general.

We thank you for being ſo very gracious as to promiſe us a meeting if you found we had proceeded with all becoming Diſpatch. This, beſides the Air of Superiority with which it is expreſ't, is a plain inſinuation that we had been guilty of delaying the Buſineſs we have the honour to be entruſted with. We abſolutely deny the Charge, and at the ſame time take the Liberty to ſay, that had the Diſpatch been as becoming on your part, as it has been on our's, the Buſineſs might have been terminated before this time. You may pleaſe to remember how many Months the King's Order to his Governor was withholden before it was deliver'd, whereby the Seaſon for ſurveying the Bounds in Controverſy was loſt for that Year. We muſt alſo remin'd you how much time was loſt after his Majeſty's Commiſſioners were named, before it was reſolv'd what Commiſſioners to appoint on the Part of my Lord Fairfax, and after all they were not to be truſted with Powers, to determine the diſpute, tho' thoſe were the expreſs Terms of His Lordſhip's Petition to his Majeſty.

Another Delay on your ſide which we muſt complain of as extremely unfair, was, that after it was Solemnly agreed by the Commiſſioners on both Sides to Survey all the Countys in the Northern Neck, and the reſpective Surveyors had orders for that purpoſe, one of you Gentlemen took upon you by his own Authority to countermand that Order, and direct one of the Surveyors not to proceed.

We are miſtaken, if this be proceeding with Decent diſpatch and ſince you make that the Condition neceſſary to intitle us to the honour of Meeting you, we muſt call upon you to name one Inſtance, whereby we have delay'd the Buſineſs. Indeed we have not thought proper to obey your Summons to meet you at Places which appear to us not ſo proper as Williamſburgh.

Upon the whole matter, we think you have made uſe of Several Expreſſions in your Letter abovementioned, which are very injurious, we muſt therefore inſiſt that you'll either make out your Charge, or elſe by owning your miſtake decently acquit 1737 June.

Gentlemen Y M. H. S.

To this Letter we had the following Anſwer

June the 16 1737

Gentlemen

We have receiv'd your Letter of this Date and have only to ſay, that we came to Town in hopes of meeting you, to agree on proper meaſures to execute the purport of our Commiſſion, and not to enter into endleſs diſputes which will unavoidably occaſion thoſe delays each of us diſclaim. We therefore deſire you will pleaſe to appoint ſome time and place to proceed thereon

The Kings Commiſſioners found by this conciſe Letter that his Lordſhips Commiſſioners wou'd neither make good their Accuſations, nor ſay anything to excuſe them, For which reaſon, we immediately ſent the following inſiſting Letter.

June the 18. 1737

Gentlemen

You have uſ'd us ill and without a proper Reparation on your part, we ſhall think ourſelves obliged to make the beſt Repreſentation we can without the Advantage of your Aſſiſtance. We are however very deſirous to be, if you wou'd vouchſafe to do us Juſtice

Y. H. S.

After we ſent this Letter we heard no more from them but they left the Town without any farther Ceremony. We therefore determined to proceed to make our Report without them, which we cou'd the better do, becauſe the Surveys were all made, and the Facts ſettled. But as a Foundation of our Re-

1737 June. port, we order'd Mr Mayo to form the General Mapp out of the particular Ones. But as four of the Surveyors had not return'd the Surveys of their Reſpective County's in the Northern Neck, (We ſuppoſe by the contrivance of ſome of my Lord's Commiſſioner's) we ſent them the following Letter to quicken their Diligence and to return their Plats out of hand

June 18. 1737

Sir

We are very much Surpriſ'd that you have not, in almoſt Nine Months time thought fit to return the Survey that you were order'd to make of your County, by us, with the aſſent of the Commiſſioners of the Lord Fairfax.

Your Neglect in this particular, is a very great delay of the Buſineſs; and we expect that you immediately tranſmit to us your Map and Field-Notes purſuant to our Warrant, that a general Map may be form'd.

As this ought to have been done long agoe, we require that without further delay, you will either convey them immediately to one of us by this Meſſenger, or take care to bring them your ſelf in a very few days, We are

Y. H. S.

At the ſame time we ſent to the Proprietors Office in the Northern Neck for Sundry papers

June the 18th 1737

Sir

Agreeable to what we mention'd to you this day. We deſire you'll be pleaſed to ſend us from the Lord Proprietors Office atteſted Copys of two Grants to Phill: Ludwell Eſqr: bearing Date about the year 1711. A Copy of the Grant, for Brent Town; and the two uppermoſt Grants upon Potowmack River made on or before the Year 1688. We are Sir

Sir Y. M. H. S.

To William Fairfax Eſqr 1737 June.

On the Receipt of our Letter the 4 Surveyors abovementioned, thought fit to ſend us their Surveys very ſoon with a Letter of Excuſe. And we diſpatch't their Plats and all the reſt to Majr Mayo to be form'd into a General Map, with Orders to get it done as ſoon as poſſible, & bring it to us at Williamſburgh on the 3d day of Auguſt when the Kings Commiſſioners appointed to meet in Order to make their Report. Mr Fairfax too was pleaſ'd to ſend us the following anſwer to our Requeſt abovemention'd

June 22d 1737

Gentlemen

I receiv'd yours of the 18th Inſtant deſiring to be ſent you from the Lord Proprietors Office atteſted Copys of 2 Grants to Philip Ludwell Eſqr bearing date about the year 1711 a Copy of the Grant of Brent Town, and the 2 uppermoſt Grants upon Potowmack River made in or before the year 1688. I have accordingly ſent herewith atteſted Copy's of Col Ludwell's 2 Grants. But that of Brent Town is not in any of the Books of the Office. I have writ to Mr Barradel acquainting him that my Lord ſome time ago left with Sir John Randolph an atteſted Copy of that Grant which Mr Barradal is deſired to get of Mr Needler, who it is ſaid has the Cuſtody of Sir John's Papers, and to give you a Copy there of, which I preſume will anſwer Your Intention

As to thoſe other Grants upon Potowmack River, the firſt Book of Regiſtry commences the 29th day of Auguſt 1690 when the ſaid Colo Ludwell was Agent. For I did not receive from Corotomen any Paper or Book relating to any Grant paſt by his Predeceſſor Colo Nicholas Spencer, who was Agent about the Year 1688. If any ſuch Papers be at Corotomen, I have not yet been able to procure them. I am

Gentlemen Y. M. H. S.

W Fairfax

1737 Whether the Proprietors Agents were ſo carleſs in thoſe early times as to keep no Records or whether their Succeſſors have loſt them, on purpoſe to hinder thoſe Grants from appearing, which ſhew how far they took the Proprietors Bounds to extend, is hard to ſay, but to be ſure our correſpondent told us the Truth.

Next follows Mr Fairfaxes letter whereby he forbad Mr Ball to proceed in the Survey of his County til farther Notice, not withſtanding the poſitive Order of the Kings Commiſſioners confirm'd by thoſe of His Lordſhip

March the 16 1736

Sir

His Lordſhip being acquainted with the Kings Commiſſioners Propoſal and Order to have the lower Countys of the Northern Neck Survey'd and plotted, has inſiſted to have the South Shore of Rappahannock included in the Survey, according to his Lordſhip's claim The Kings Commiſſioners have been wrote to & their Anſwer expected. So that you will think proper to Suſpend the Execution of their Orders for Surveying till further Notice. Mr Warner and Capt Barber are agreed to wait his Lordſhip's Commiſſioners Pleaſure herein I am

Sir Your humble Servant

W Fairfax

It is therefore evident that Mr Warner and Capt: Barber had alſo been writ to by the ſame worthy Gentleman to wait the Pleaſure of his Lordſhips Commiſſioners, as well as Mr Ball

According to the order of the Virginia Commiſſioners Majr Mayo form'd a very elegant Map of the whole Northern Neck by joining all the particular Survey's together. In this Map were very neatly and very plainly delineated the ſeveral Branches of Rappahannock River quite up to their ſeveral Sources, together with all the Creeks that flow into the ſame on either

Side. The River Potowmack was therein likewiſe traced with great Exactneſs from the Mouth, up to the Fork a little beyond the Blue Ridge of Mountains, and from thence up the North Branch call'd Cohungoruton—quite away to the Head Springs thereof with all the Waters that diſcharge themſelves into it. And the Diſtance Cohungoruton runs from its Confluence with Sharando, is according to the Meanders thereof 206 Miles to its Foundation From the Hills out of which this River ariſes, may be ſeen other Waters which run Weſtward, and may be the Springs of one of the Branches of Miſſaſippi, probably that commonly called Allegany. In this Map the Courſes of Sharando are not deſcribed, but juſt where it parts with Cohungoruton, by reaſon ſuch Deſcription cou'd give no light to the Controverſy betwixt His Majeſty and the Lord Fairfax. 1737

And here I think I ought to do Juſtice not only to the uncommon Skill, but alſo to the Courage and Indefatiguable Induſtry of Majr Mayo and two of the other Surveyors, employ'd in this long and difficult Taſk, Neither the unexpected Diſtance, nor the Danger of being doubly Starved by Hunger and exceſſive Cold, could in the leaſt diſcourage them from going thro' with Their Work, tho' at one time they were almoſt reduced to the hard neceſſity of cutting up the moſt uſeleſs Perſon among them, Mr Savage, in order to Support and ſave the lives of the reſt. But Providence prevented that dreadfull Blow by an unexpected Supply another way, and ſo the Blind Surveyor eſcapt.

On the 3d day of Auguſt the King's Commiſſioners met at Williams burgh according to their Appointment, in Order to draw up their Report. And that they might do this part of their duty with the more Exactneſs Majr Mayo attended at the ſame time with his Map, with which they were exceedingly Satisfy'd, the ſame being a maſterly performance.

Great Pains were taken to make this Report with all the

1737 Auguſt. Juſtice imaginable, both to his Majeſty and the Lord Fairfax, And altho' the King's Commiſſioners drew it up without the Aſſiſtance of thoſe on the part of his Lordſhip, who modell'd a Report of their own, yet they endeavour'd to do it with all farneſs to both Partys: Nor did they repreſent any thing therein, but what depended upon plain Facts, or might be very righteouſly deduc'd from them, All this appears by the Report it ſelf, which was in the Terms following,

To the Hon^ble^ William Gooch Eſq, His Majeſtys Lieutenant Governor and Commander in Cheif of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia

The Underwritten Commiſſioners appointed by your Honour in Obedience to the Order of his Majeſty in his Privy Council of the 29^th^ of November 1733 for Surveying and ſettling the Boundaries of that Tract or Territory of Land granted by the Crown to the Anceſtors of the Right Honourable Thomas Lord Fairfax and under whom his Lordſhip now claims, Do humbly beg Leave to lay before your Honour the following Report of their Proceedings and the Reaſons why they have not been able finally to determine the ſaid Boundaries according to his Majeſtys royal Intentions.

After we had the Honour to be named Commiſſioners on the part of His Majeſty, the Lord Fairfax by M^r^ Barradall his Agent ſignified to your Honour in Council, that if the King's Commiſſioners were Members of the Council, His Lordſhip was contented that the ſame Commiſſioners ſhou'd likewiſe Act in his behalf, without appointing any diſtinct Commiſſioners of his Own. This induced us to wait on his Lordſhip with our Commiſſion from your Honour, to know whether His Lordſhip wou'd be pleaſed to give us powers to Act for him conformable to his Majeſty's Order, But we ſoon found His Lordſhip had alter'd his mind and now declar'd that he would not Submit the

Determination of his right to any perſon in this Country, nor give any other Powers than barely to Survey the ſeveral Boundaries claim'd by him, and to report the Facts and circumſtances examined into, to be laid before His Majeſty, and ſoon after tender'd us his Commiſſion for that purpoſe; This being contrary to his Lordſhips Petition and the King's Order thereupon, We judged it unbecoming us to receive any Powers ſo different to thoſe from His Majeſty: and for that Reaſon return'd it to Him 1737 Auguſt.

His Lordſhip therefore thought fit to appoint three Commiſſioners on his own part, namely Charles Carter, William Beverly & William Fairfax Eſquires

Theſe Gentlemen we met at Fredericks burg near the Head of Rappahannock River on the 25th of September 1736 And after the Commiſſions on each Side had been produc'd and read, We obſerved that his Lordſhips Commiſſioners had no Authority given them to determine any thing concerning his Lordſhip's Bounds. We made the proper Objections thereto as being inconſiſtent with his Majeſty's Order. But were anſwer'd that His Lordſhip would by no means leave the Deciſion of the Controverſy to any Commiſſioners whatſoever: When we underſtood this, we found Ourſelves under a Neceſſity either to return Home without doing any thing, whereby His Majeſty's gracious purpoſe would have been wholly diſappointed, or elſe by the Latitude which our Commiſſion gave us to drive the Nail that wou'd go, and join with them in obtaining a full and faithfull State of the Facts in Order to be laid before His Majeſty, Thus far we yielded to Act in Conjunction with the Lord Fairfaxes Commiſſioners, altho' they were not required by thier Commiſſions to act in Conjunction with us.

After this, We deſired to know of my Lords Commiſſioners what they demanded in his Lordſhips Name as the Bounds of his grant? To which they anſwer'd, that he claimed all the

1737 Auguſt. Land contain'd within the South Branch of Rappahannock River, and the main branch of Potowmack as high as the head Springs thereof. This extenſive demand we apprehended would include many of the Kings Loyal Subjects, who at a great Expence have ſeated themſelves within thoſe Bounds under Grants from His Majeſty and his Royal Predeceſſors.

However, that the matter might be fully and fairly Stated, and his Lordſhip no longer delayed, It was agreed upon our Propoſal, that the whole Territory claimed by his Lordſhip ſhould be Survey'd, that ſo, the extent of his claim might the more fully appear. And that in performing this Service, and in executing the other parts of our Commiſſion, his Lordſhip ſhou'd bear one moiety of the Expence.

Then in Conjunction with my Lords Commiſſioners We directed the main Branch of Potowmack River called Cohaungorooton to be Survey'd to the head Spring thereof, and appointed M^r^ Mayo and M^r^ Brookes whom we thought Equal to difficult Service on the part of His Majeſty; To theſe were join'd M^r^ Winſlow and M^r^ Savage for the Lord Fairfax Theſe being all firſt ſworn, were order'd by thier Several Warrants to begin at the Confluence of that River with Sharando, and from thence to run the Courſes, and Meaſure the Diſtances thereof to its firſt Spring; And of all this to return an Exact Plat, ſhewing all the Streams runing into the ſame on either ſide, together with a fair Copy of their Feild-Notes. We alſo directed them to take the Latitude, and obſerve particularly where the ſaid River interſects the 40^th^ Degree

And to enable them to perform this arduous Work, We allotted them a Suffecient Number of Men for their Aſſiſtance and Defence, and a Competent Quantity of Proviſion for their Subſiſtence

When theſe Surveyors were diſpatch't, who had the moſt difficult Service to perform, We appointed M^r^ Græme to ſurvey

and meaſure the South Branch of Rappahannock, now call'd the Rappidan from the fork to the Head Spring And, Mr Wood to ſurvey and Meaſure the North Branch, call'd Rappahannock, in like manner, requiring them ſeverally to return us an exact plat deſcribing all the Streams or Water Courſes falling into each River, together with a fair Copy of their feild-Notes: and alſo to take an Obſervation of the Latitude at the head Springs of each River. My Lord Fairfaxes Commiſſioners appointed Mr Thomas the elder to proceed with Mr Græme and Thomas the Younger with Mr Wood. We at the ſame time made out Powers to the Surveyor of the Several Countys in the Northern Neck, requiring them to ſurvey and meaſure the boundaries of the Several Countys joining on the Rivers Rappannock & Potowmack & the Bay of Cheaſepeak 1737 Auguſt.

After theſe matters were diſpatch't, the Commiſſioners on both Sides proceeded with the four Surveyors up the Fork of Rappahannock River & cauſing each Branch to be meaſured, they found the North Branch to be wideſt by three Poles and Nine Links; but indeed the South Branch may be allow'd to be one Pole broader than our Meaſure made it, by reaſon that a ſmall Stream of that breadth iſſued from it at ſome diſtance above, and form'd an Iſland on the South Shoar

The Depoſitions of John Talliaferro, Francis Thornton, and William Ruſſel were taken in the preſence of the Commiſſioners on both Sides; And then having directed the ſeveral Surveyors to proceed with all Diligence upon the Services appointed them. We parted with the Lord Fairfaxes Commiſſioners, it being agreed on both Sides, that until the Surveyors ſhou'd have made their returns, nothing farther cou'd be done in this Affair

In purſuance of the Orders aforemention'd the Several Surveyors proceeded to ſurvey the ſeveral Rivers, And after encountering many difficultys have returned to us exact Plats of their Work, with Copys of their Field Notes whereby to

1737 Auguſt. prove the truth of their performances, All which we immediately directed Mr Mayo to join in one General Map, and the ſame being now compleated in a Maſterly Manner, We beg Leave to make our Obſervations upon it: And moreover to State all the Evidence we have been able to procure relating to the Bounds in Diſpute

. All this, We think ourſelves oblig'd to do Seperately, and not in Conjunction with his Lordſhips Commiſſioners for the following Reaſons,

1st Becauſe his Lordſhips Commiſſioners are not directed by their Commiſſion to make their Report in Conjunction with thoſe of his Majeſty And therefore as thoſe Gentlemen are at Liberty to make their Report Seperately there is great Reaſon we ſhou'd be ſo likewiſe

2nd Becauſe when we deſired them to join with us in naming a fit perſon to form the general Map, they refuſed, and declared they wou'd have a diſtinct Map drawn by their own Surveyors: If then we cou'd not agree in forming the Map which was to be the foundation of the Report, we cou'd have little hopes to agree in the Report itſelf.

As the Lord Fairfax's claim of all the Lands lying between the Northern and Southern Branches of Rappahannock River has greatly alarmed the Inhabitants of the Fork, and may very much Affect their property, We ſhall in the firſt place State all the Facts and Evidence relating to that Affair

We cannot find by any Evidence that the Fork of Rappahannock River had been at all diſcover'd at the time that the Lord CoLepepper obtained his Grant, But on the contrary from the Evidence of John Talliaferro, Francis Thornton, & William Ruſſell it appears that in the year 1707, there were no Inhabitants on either ſide the River ſo high up as the falls thereof, which is about fourteen miles below the Fork. William Ruſſell, who is an Old Man, and was produc't by the Lord

Fairfax, ſays, he diſcover'd the Fork about thirty five Years ago, as he was hunting, And Mr Thornton about twenty Seven Years ago, But theſe circumſtances are much poſterior to his Lordſhip's Grant. 1737 Auguſt.

From the Surveys return'd to us, We cannot ſay which of theſe Branches is the Largeſt, only by the meaſure we made the North Branch was found to be wideſt at the mouth; But from the Face of the Map, it evidently appears, that the North Branch has more & Larger Streams falling into it which muſt occaſion a greater Run of Water, That it lyes in a more direct Courſe with the main River: And that its head Spring lyes farther from the Fork than any Spring belonging to the South Branch

As the Lord Fairfax has produc'd to us no Evidence to ſupport his pretentions to the Southern Branch; We ſhall humbly offer the proofs in behalf of His Majeſty for reſtraining his Bounds to the North Branch in caſe it ſhall be allowed that his Lordſhip has a right to go beyond the Fork of the River

The North Branch has from the firſt diſcovery of it, been called by the name of Rappahannock in all publick Writings; Whereas the South Branch about 20 years ago, by way of diſtinction, obtained the name of Rapidan; It has been a ſettled Boundary to the Countys in the Northern Neck, and if the ſentiments of the Legiſlature of this Colony ought to have any upweight it is Evident; the General Aſſembly were of Opinion, that the North Branch was the true boundary of the Proprietors Grant, For in the year 1720, An Act of Aſſembly paſſed for erecting the County of Spotſilvania, which County is particularly bounded on the North by the River Rappahannock, That is by the branch which before was made the boundary of the County of King George, and is the North Branch: And for the encouragement of ſettling that Frontier, the General Aſſembly the ſame Year did addreſs his Late Majeſty to exempt the

1737 Auguſt. Perſons coming to ſettle there, from the purchaſing Rights, and payment, of Quit-Rents for all the Lands which ſhou'd be taken in that County: Which Priviledges and advantages His ſaid late Majeſty was graciouſly pleaſ'd to grant under ſome Reſtrictions, And upon this Encouragement it was, that all that Tract of Land between the River Rappidan, and that call'd Rappahannock have been ſeated, cultivated and improved, to the great Benefit and general Security of the Colony, as well as the Encouragement of People to ſeat and Cultivate the Lands lying contiguous on the North ſide Rappahannock River to the encreaſe of his Lordſhip's Quit rents

The Lord CoLepepper who was the Original Patentee, made a Grant to Brent and others dated the tenth day of January 1686 of a large Tract of Land to be laid off in ſuch a Manner as not to come within ſix miles of the Rivers Rappahannock or Potowmack, accordingly that Diſtance was obſerv'd from the North Branch, which ſeems to be a Confeſſion that it was taken by the Patentee himſelf from the beginning to be the main Branch of Rappahannock

The firſt Patent in the Fork of Rappahannock was granted by Governor Nott in the year 1705 and and altho' in the year 1706 Robert Carter Eſq^{r} who was then Agent for the Proprietors of the Northern Neck, began to conteſt the right to the Lands in the Fork of Rappahannock, Yet ſome Years afterwards he himſelf was ſo far convinc'd, that the Proprietors could claim no further than the North Branch, that he took Patents from the Crown for two Tracts of Land in that very Fork which the Lord Fairfax wou'd now claim as his, And in the Several Grants of the Proprietors Lands made by him which bounded on the North Branch, he calls it the main Run of Rappahannock River as will appear by two Grants made to Philip Ludwell Eſq^{r}

Theſe laſt mention'd Grants, we muſt obſerve, were paſſed

in the Proprietors Office, where the Grantor cou'd have call'd that Branch by what name he pleaſed, and no doubt, he took care to call it by the right Name. The laſt inſtance We ſhall give, is, that when the aforeſaid Robert Carter Eſq^{r} had the Honour to be Commander in Cheif of this Colony, upon the Death of Governor Dryſdale in the year 1726 Altho' he was then Agent for the Proprietor, he granted Land in the King's Name in the Little Fork as will appear by the Copy of Willis's Patent 1737 Auguſt.

Thus, Sir, having ſtated the Facts relating to the River Rappahannock, We ſhall go on to thoſe which relate to the River Potowmack, by the Depoſition of M^{r} Thomas Harriſon, it appears, that about fifty Years ago, which is pretty near the time the Lord CoLepper obtained his Grant from King James the Second, there were no ſettlements made upon that River higher than Hunting Creek: And that at that time he knew nothing of the Falls of that River himſelf, But he beleives he might have heard of them from the Hunters about that time

The Lands at and near the Falls, were not granted till about the year 1709, nor can we find by any Evidence, that it was ſo much as known that the River ran thro' the great Ridge of Mountains till ſeveral Years after that

By the Map, you may pleaſe to obſerve, that the River Potowmack divides itſelf into two Branches, juſt beyond the blue Mountains, there the main River loſes its name, and the North Branch, which is much the larger, is call'd by the Indians Cohungorooton, and the other Sharando, as therefore the name of Potowmack ceaſes at this Confluence, and the Branches into which its Waters are divided have quite other Names, The Fork may not improperly be called the head thereof.

In the Year 1730 a Good Number of foreign Proteſtants were encouraged by the Government to ſettle beyond the Mountains, in order to ſtrengthen our Frontiers on that Side; And

1737 Auguſt. they diſcover'd ſome diſtance up each of the aforemention'd branches, But none of theſe diſcoverys very far, till the Surveyor ſent out by us the laſt Fall, trac'd the River Cohungoroo-tun quite up to the Head Spring, which the found according to the Meanders thereof to be above two hundred Miles from its confluence with Sharando

It is evident from the Map, that the whole diſtance of this River ſtretches beyond the great Ridge whereas the head Springs of Rappahannock reaches no higher than thoſe Mountains, We therefore humbly conceive it cou'd never be the Intention of the late King James the Second to bound the Territory granted to the Lord CoLepepper by two Streams, one of which runs more than two hundred Miles higher than the other.

This, Sir, is a full and fair State of the Caſe, and the Obſervations we have made thereupon, we hope will be thought very juſt, and as the Grant to the Lord CoLepepper ſeems to have been made much in the dark, it required to have all the Facts Stated as diſtinctly as poſſible; that thoſe whoſe Province it may be to decide the diſpute, may pronounce ſuch Sentence thereupon as will be moſt agreeable to Juſtice and Reaſon

All we ſhall preſume to ſay farther is, that if it ſhall be thought juſt to bound the Lord Fairfax's claim by a Line drawn from the Fork of Rappahannock to the Fork of Potowmack, his Territory will then contain at leaſt one Million four hundred and ſeventy ſix thouſand Acres of Land

If the Line be drawn from the head of Hedgman River to the Fork of Potowmack his Lordſhip will then poſſeſs two Millions and thirty three thouſand Acres.

And in caſe his Boundary ſhall be allow'd to run from the Head of Hedgeman River to the head Spring of Cohungorootun, then his Grant will contain three Millions eight hundred ſeventy two thouſand Acres

But if his Lordſhip be allow'd to extend his Boundary from

the head of Conway River to the Head Spring of Cohungo-rootun, including the great and little Fork of Rappahannock, he will then have at leaſt five Millions two hundred eighty two thouſand Acres within his Grant, which is about as much Land as at preſent pays Quit rents to his Majeſty in all the reſt of Virginia 1737 Auguſt.

But if his Lordſhip ſhou'd after all be ſo fortunate as to have theſe extenſive bounds adjudg'd to him, We humbly beg that your Honour will be pleaſed to recommend to His Majeſty the Caſe of all thoſe perſons who by Patents from His Majeſty and his Royal Predeceſſors, are Poſſeſſed of Lands within thoſe Bounds

Thus, Sir, We have proceeded with all Diligence and Fidelity, as far as we have been able, by reaſon the Lord Fairfax wou'd not empower his Commiſſioners to join with us in deciding and ſettling his Bounds But we ſhall be always ready to obey ſuch further command as your Honour ſhall hereafter receive from his Majeſty relating to this Affair

All which is moſt humbly ſubmitted by

Sir Your Honours moſt humble Servants

W. Byrd
John Robinson
John Grymes

Williamſburgh
Auguſt 10th 1737

The King's Commiſſioners having order'd Duplicates of their Report as well as of the Map, to be made, preſented them to the Governour in order to their being tranſmitted to His Majeſty by the firſt Opportunity. In the mean time the Governour ſent a Copy of this Report to my Lord Fairfax, not doubting but his Lordſhip wou'd in return favour Him with a Copy of the Report returned by his Commiſſioners, But that, it ſeems, was too great a Secret to be truſted with any one, that coud

1739 July. judge of the unfair Turns that were given to ſeveral Matters therein.

The Lord Fairfax ſoon after embark't for England, carrying over with Him the Report of his own Commiſſioners, and the Copy that had been ſent Him of thoſe on the part of the King, Thus arm'd, & being on the Spot Himſelf, his Lordſhip had a great Advantage, He was able to puſh his Intereſt both with the Members of his Majeſty's Privy Council, and thoſe of the Council of Trade, However his Lordſhip having formerly withſtood the Miniſtry in the Elections for the County of Kent, his Affair moved very heavily, or rather mov'd not at all, till the 12th of January 1738 when he obtained a referance to the Lords of Trade, for them to examine the whole matter, and report a full State of the Caſe, together with their Opinion thereupon to the Lords of the Committee of Council. Accordingly their Lordſhips maturely conſidered both Reports, to gether with all the Papers tranſmitted from Virginia, and having heard Council both for His Majeſty; and the Lord Fairfax as to matters of Law, they were pleaſed on the 27th of July to return the following Report

To the Right Honble the Lords of the Committee of his Majeſty's moſt Honourable Privy Council

My Lords

Purſuant to your Lordſhips Order of the 12th of January, We have had under our Conſideration the two Reports of the Commiſſioners appointed in Behalf of the Crown and the Lord Fairfax, in relation to his Lordſhips claim of a large Tract of Land Situate in Virginia to gether with the Several Papers annexed to the ſaid Reports whereupon we take Leave to acquaint your Lordſhips

That there were three ſeveral Grants from the Crown of this Tract of Land to the Earl of St Albans, the Lord Culpepper and others

1739 July.

The firſt Grant was made at S^t^ Germaine en Laye in the firſt year of the Reign of King Charles the Second, This never came to our Hands, but is recited in that of a ſubſequent Date

The Second was made in the 21^st^ Year of the ſaid King's Reign & deſcribes the Land in the following Words

"All that intire Tract Territory or Parcell of Land lying "and being in Virginia in America and bounded by and within "the head of the Rivers Tappahannock alias Rappahannock "and Quiriough or Potowmack Rivers the courſes of the ſaid "Rivers as they are commonly called & known by the Inhabit- "ants and the Deſcriptions of thoſe parts and Cheſapayock Bay "to gether with the Rivers themſelves & all the Iſlands within "the Banks of theſe Rivers & all the Woods &^c^" And far Covenants upon application to be made to enlarge and confirm theſe Letters Patents by granting New Ones with ſuch Conceſſions and Grants as may ſupply any Defects herein contained

The 3^d^ was made in the 4^th^ year of King James the Second to the Lord Culpepper who had become ſole proprietor of the ſaid Tract of Land (by a purchaſe made thereof) which it deſcribes thus "All that entire Tract Territory or Parcell of Land "Situate lying & being in Virginia in America and bounded by "& within the firſt heads or Springs of the Rivers Tapahannock "alias Rappahannock & Quiriough alias Patowmack Rivers, the "Courſes of the ſaid Rivers from their ſaid firſt heads or Springs "as they are commonly call'd or known by the Inhabitants & "Deſcriptions of thoſe parts & the Bay of Cheſapayock together "with the ſaid Rivers themſelves & all the Iſlands within the "uttermoſt Banks thereof and the Soil of all and Singular the "Premiſes and all Lands Woods Underwoods Timber & Trees. "Ways Mountains &^c^" It repeals a Proviſo mention'd in the 2^nd^ Grant in relation to the ſaid Lands being to be ſettled within

1739 July. a certain Term of Years & diſcharges the Lord Culpepper from any Arrear of the Rent to the Date thereof

It appears that Thomas Lord Culpepper in the Year 1686 made a Grant of part of the Premiſes to Mr Brent & others of Thirty Thouſand Acres in or near the County of Stafford between the Courſes of Rappahannock and Patowmack

In 1705, a Diſpute aroſe between the Crown and the late Lord Fairfax who claimed under Lord Culpepper concerning the Boundarys intended by the abovemention'd Patents in Particular Whether the North or South Branch of the River Rappahannock ſhou'd be underſtood to be the Boundary on that ſide, Whereupon in May 1706, the Governour & Council of Virginia iſſued an Order "directing certain perſons on behalf "of the Crown to meet others on that of the Proprietors to "view and ſurvey the Branches of the ſaid River and to make "their Report to the next General Court and that in the mean "time no Patent ſhoud iſſue for any Land lying in the Fork of "the ſaid River either from the Governor or the Proprietors." This Report was return'd the 28th of September 1706, by the Commiſſions on both ſides jointly who ſay "That by what "appears to them they cannot diſcover which is the largeſt "Stream but that they ſeem to them to be of equal Magnitude.

In 1733, this Diſpute was revived and the preſent Lord Fairfax having been informed that Several Grants had been made of Lands which he apprehended to be within his Boundary he Apply'd to his Majeſty in Council and obtained an Order to the Lieutenant Governor of Virginia "To nominate three or "more Commiſſioners (not exceeding five) who in Conjunction "with alike Number to be named and deputed by the Lord "Fairfax are to ſurvey and ſettle the Marks & Boundaries of "the ſaid Diſtrict of Land agreeable to the Terms of the pa-"tents under which the Lord Fairfax claims within the Space

" of two Years after the Arrival of this Order and that the 1739
" Lieutenant Governor do not preſume to make any Grants of July.
" Lands within the abovementioned Tract

It does not appear that this Order tho' obtained in 1733 was notify'd to Majr Gooch the Lieutenant Governor till the Year 1735 during which time Grants were made by the Lieutenant Governor of about 300,000 Acres of Land in that Diſtrict

In 1735 Lord Fairfax went to Virginia with the ſaid Order and having preſented it to the Lieutenant Governor a Commiſſion was Iſſued by Him to William Byrd John Robinſon & John Grymes Dated *the 7th September 1736*, "To Examine Settle & determine all Matters & things touching & concerning the Several Boundaries according to the true Intent & meaning & genuine Senſe & Conſtruction of the Several Letters Patent granted for the Said Tract & Territory

The Lord Fairfax gave alſo a Commiſſion to the ſame perſons dated the 9th of the ſame Month "To make or Cauſe to be made any Survey or Surveys they ſhall think proper for the diſcovery of the firſt Heads or Springs of the Rivers Rappahannock and Potowmack & other the Boundaries of the aforeſaid Grants and to make a full and exact Report of all the matters of fact and other their proceedings Specially to the Governour and Commander in Cheif of Virginia in Order to be laid before his Majeſty for his Determination

This Commiſſion being Different from that granted by the Lieut. Governour the perſons therein named declined to Act under it, Whereupon the Lord Fairfax four Days after granted a New One to Charles Carter William Beverly and William Fairfax Eſqrs with power to ſurvey & Report only till ſuch time as his Majeſty ſhall have given his Determination upon the ſaid Boundarys

After ſome diſpute between the Commiſſioners for the Crown & thoſe for Lord Fairfax in relation to the different wording of

1739 July. their Powers they proceeded on their Survey but not being able to Agree upon a Joint Report made Seperate Returns each of them accompany'd with a Map deſcribing the Courſes of the Two Rivers and the Outmoſt Lines of the intermediate Land which Maps are hereunto annext

We ſhall now take Notice of the principal Matters contain'd in their different Reports to gether with the proofs and Grounds upon which they proceeded

The Commiſſioners appointed by the Lieutenant Governor of Virginia in behalf of the Crown in their Report ſay

"That they took their Survey of the main Branch of Potow-
"mack (called Cohungorooton) from its confluence with Shar-
"ando, and ſo upwards beyond the blue Mountains to its firſt
"Spring head, and of the River Rappahannock from its fork
"purſuing both North & South Branch to the Spring head like-
"wiſe & found the North Branch to be wider at the Mouth
"than the South by 3 Poles 9 Links, That they can find no
"Evidence that the Fork of Rappahannock was known at the
"time of Lord Culpepper's Grant That the Lord Fairfax has
"provided no Evidence to Support his Pretentions to the South
"Branch" But they the ſaid Commiſſioners Offer ſome in ſupport of his Majeſty's which are chiefly Arguments Inferences and Deductions drawn partly from the Senſe of the Legiſlature in Virginia and partly from Grants of the Crown They then purſue their Account of the River Potowmack and refer to the Depoſition of Thomas Harriſon taken upon Oath before them "That the falls of Potowmack were not known 50 Years ago" They farther ſay "That the Lands at or near the Falls were "not granted till 1709, and that it was not known that the "River runs thro' the Mountains till Several Years after, "That the River loſes its Name at the Confluence and is called "by the Indians as it goes up higher Cohungorooton & Shar-
"ando" And conclude "That the Fork may not improperly

" be call'd the head" which Opinion they endeavor to corrobo- 1739
rate by ſaying "That as the head of Potowmack ſtretches July.
" beyond the blue Mountains, and that of Rappahannock
" reaches no higher than thoſe Mountains they coud not be
" intended as Boundarys by the Grant of King James ſince the
" one reaches above 200 miles above the other"

They conclude their Report by Stating four Several Boundarys for the Lord Fairfaxes Grant, and mention what Quantity of Land each of thoſe Boundarys contains

"The firſt from the Fork of Rappahannock to the Fork of
" Potowmack containing 1476,000, Acres of Land

"The Second from the head of Hedgman River to the Fork
" of Potowmack containing 2033.000 Acres of Land

"The third from the head of Hedgman River to the head
" Spring of Cohungorooton containing 3872.000 Acres of Land

"And the fourth from the head of Conway River to the head Spring of Cohungorouton including the Great & little Fork of Rappahannock containing 5,282.000 Acres of Land

The Papers referr'd to in their Report are

1 The Governors Commiſſion to them which was to examine Settle & Determine.
2 Lord Fairfax to them which was only to Survey and Report.
3 Lord Fairfax's Commiſſion to Meſſ^rs^ Carter Beverly & Fairfax which was to Survey & Report only.
4 Depoſitions taken upon Oath of John Talliaferro, Francis Thornton, & W^m^ Ruſſel who ſeverally declare there were no Inhabitants on either ſide of the River ſo high as the Falls even ſo late as the Year 1707.
5 A General Map of the Delineations of the Courſes of the Rivers from the parts where they began their Survey up to their reſpective Spring heads
6 A Copy a Grant from Lord Culpepper to M^r^ Brent and others in 1686 of Land to be laid out Six Miles diſtant at leaſt from

1739 July. the Main Rivers of Rappahannock & Patowmack which being laid down in their Map as taking its diſtance from the North Stream they Quote it to ſhew that the Original Patentee always underſtood the North Branch to be the Main Branch

7 Governor Notts Grant to Henry Beverly Eſq[r] of 1920 Acres in Eſſex County ten Miles above the Falls of Rappahannock in November 1705.

8 Two Grants from the Governour to Robert Carter Eſq[r] for Land in the Fork of Rappahannock 12 Miles and more above the Falls in January 1717.

9 Two Grants to Philip Ludwell Eſq[r] from Lady Culpepper of 5860 Acres above the Falls in June 1709.

10 Henry Willis's Patent for 3000 Acres of Land in the Little Fork of Rappahannock from Governour Carter in February 1726

11 The Depoſition of Thomas Harriſon who declares upon Oath that the Falls of Potowmack were not known fifty Years ago Dated in June 1737

12 Letters Patents from King Charles the Second to the Earl of S[t] Albans and others

13 Letters Patents from King James the Second to Lord Culpepper

The Commiſſioners for the Lord Fairfax in their Report give an Account

That) the Diſpute between the Crown and Lord Fairfax being which is the Main River of Rappahannock the North or South Branch as appears by the Order of the Governor & Council of Virginia in 1706, to which they refer as alſo which is the firſt head or Spring of Powtowmack) they have Survey'd and meaſured up the River Potowmack from the Mouth of Sharando and that of Rappahannock from the Falls to their Reſpective Heads or Springs, And are of Opinion that a Line

run from the firſt head of Spring of the South or Main Branch of Rappahannock to the firſt head or Spring of the River Powtowmack is and ought to be the Boundary Line determining the ſaid Tract or Territory of Land commonly call'd the Northern Neck They refer themſelves to the Evidences produced by the King's Commiſſioners (quoted in the other Report) that the two Branches of Rappahannock were always called the North and South Rivers or the North and South Fork and that the name of Rapidan was given to this latter by Colonel Spotſwood when Governor as alſo to a Declaration of One Mr John Talliaferro that the Heads or Springs of the ſaid two Branches were known in 1682, And to their own Surveyors Report in proof that the South Branch was the wideſt They ſay their own Surveyor made a miſtake in going up Conway inſtead of Thornton River which they have cauſed to be dotted in token of the Lord Fairfax's claiming it 1739 July.

The Papers referred to in the above Report are

1 The Order of the Governour and Council of Virginia in 1706, directing a Survey to be made of the Two Branches of Rappahannock to ſee which was the Main Branch, This Order is referred to by the Lord Fairfax's Commiſſioners to Obviate the Objections made of the Forks never having been claimed by the Proprietors or their Agents

2 The Evidences produced by the King's Commiſſioners of which we have already given your Lordſhips an Account

3 A. Declaration of John Talliaferro This Declaration is annexed to the abovementioned Order in 1706 and is only a Copy and not upon Oath It contains that about 24 Years ago he in Company with Colo Cadwallader Jones had been at the Heads or Springs of the ſaid Two Branches and that in his Judgment and that of the Company with him the South Branch was the Biggeſt & headed into the Mountains.

1739 July. 4 The Surveyors Report which aſcertains that the South Stream was 21 Miles longer than the other

We having likewise on this Occaſion been attended by Council & having heard Mr Attorney and Mr Sollicitor General on behalf of the Crown & Mr Brown and Mr Murray for the Lord Fairfax We ſhall give your Lordſhips a Brief Account of the Principal Points inſiſted upon by both Sides

The Council for the Lord Fairfax opened with an Account of the three Grants and inſiſted ſtrongly that the laſt being an enlarging Grant made with a View of Supplying any defects contain'd in the former and haveing theſe remarkable Expreſſions the firſt heads or Springs of the ſaid Rivers could leave no Room to doubt of his Lordſhips Right as there cou'd be but one firſt Head or Spring of a River, That the two Branches of Rappahannock having till 20 Years ago been allways called and known by the Names of the North and South Stream of Rappahannock form but one and the ſame River. That Rivers not running Parallel may nevertheleſs be Boundarys. That the Extenſiveneſs of his Lordſhip's Grant can be no Reaſon againſt it if the Title is properly made out as they conceived it was by the Deſcription of the Words of the Patent. That neither the Falls of Powtowmack, nor its confluence with Sharando can be called the firſt Head or Spring being both Currents or running Streams That the Land on the other ſide Vizt Maryland is bounded by the ſame River which is in all Writings called Powtowmack. That there is no Evidence to Support the Aſſertion that this River loſes its Name and is called Cohongorouton. That the Lord Culpepper ſo long ago as 1686, made a Grant himſelf to Brent and others (as is beforementioned) and that Lord Fairfax conteſted the firſt Grant made by the Crown in 1705, within this Diſtrict

On behalf of the Crown It was inſiſted that it cou'd not be ſuppoſed that the Letters Patents intended an indefinite Grant

of Land by the Words firſt Heads or Springs eſpecially ſince they were followed by theſe Words, As they are commonly called and known by the Inhabitants & Deſcriptions of thoſe parts which made it neceſſary to prove that what is now called the firſt Head or Spring was ſo called and known at the time of the Grant by the Inhabitants & Deſcriptions of thoſe parts of which they on the other ſide have brought but one kind of Evidence with reſpect to Rappahannock & that not a regular one being but a Copy & not taken upon Oath & as to the River Potowmack none at all ſo as to extend it by Name beyond its confluence with Cohongorouton and Sharando That the place where a River loſes its Name if there be no Spring there may be properly called the Head of it. That in Caſes of old Grants on which there is any doubts Poſſeſſion has always been look't upon as the beſt Title & that Several Lands were held under the Crown in this Diſtrict 1739 July.

To which it was reply'd

That the firſt Grant of Lands in the Tract contended for was made by Lord Fairfax's Anceſtors in 1686 to Brent That upon the firſt Grant made by Governor Nott in 1705 the Diſpute aroſe & the Survey of the Two Branches of the Rappahannock was made That the Words commonly called & known by the Inhabitants & Deſcriptions of thoſe parts related to the Rivers only & not to their Heads or firſt Springs. That John Talliaferro Francis Thornton, & William Ruſſell ſwear the Forks were both called Rappahannock till the Southern Branch was new named by Col° Spotſwood about 20 Years ago

Having thus laid before your Lordſhips an Abſtract of the principal Matters of fact contain'd in the Papers Tranſmitted to us as well as the Cheif Points inſiſted upon by the Council on both ſides We ſhall now make ſome obſervations upon the whole

1739 July. That there was a difference in the two Commiſſions granted by the Lieutenant Governor and the Lord Fairfax to the perſons employed in this Diſquiſition The Governor's Commiſſion ſeeming to exceed, and the Lord Fairfax's to fall ſomething ſhort of the Words in the Order of Council tho' in all probability no Deciſion of this Matter in Virginia Cou'd have been final till it ſhou'd have received his Majeſty's Determination

That notwithſtanding this Difference in their Commiſſions both parties proceeded upon their Survey & the Maps returned by them reſpectively to this Board do Agree almoſt in every particular as to the Courſe of the ſaid Rivers as well in thoſe parts which are diſputed as in thoſe where there is no Conteſt except only that Lord Fairfax's Commiſſioners have added a ſmall River on theirs towards the head Spring of the South Branch of the Rappahannock which my Lord's Council have agreed to give up and to found no claim upon the Courſe of the little River ſo added

The firſt Grant made within the Tract contended for which has been laid before us was by the Lord Culpepper to Brent and others in the Year 1686, which was two years preceeding the laſt Patent and that the firſt Grant made by the Government of Virginia to M^{r} Henry Beverly referred to above was not till the Year 1705 which gave riſe to a Diſpute between the Patentee and the Government of Virginia and occaſioned the Survey of the two Branches of the Rappahanock River in order to know whether the North or South Branch was the larger and conſequently which of thoſe two Branches ſhould be the Boundary of the Proprietors Grant

We find no Inſtance after this of any Grant made by the Government of Virginia till the Year 1717, to M^{r} Carter but we find two Grants from Lady Culpepper in 1709 to Philip Ludwell Eſq^{r}

There have alſo been ſome Grants made by the Government

of Virginia in the Year 1717, 1718 & 1726 & alſo great Numbers of Grants & Surveys for Grants ſince the Date of his Majeſty's Order in Council 1739 July.

Upon the whole it appears to Us that the Diſpute between the Crown & Lord Fairfax turns chiefly upon the Conſtruction of the Words of the Patent upon which We have already Reported what was ſaid by the Council on both Sides and ſhall ſubmit that entirely to your Lordſhips Determination But whatever Boundary his Majeſty ſhall fix to the Lord Fairfax's Grant We would recommend to your Lordſhip's humbly to adviſe his Majeſty that he would be graciouſly pleaſed to Direct the Perſons already ſeated in that Diſtrict by Grants from the Government of Virginia may not be diſturbed or moleſted— We are

My Lords
Your Lordſhip's
moſt obedient & moſt
humble Servants
MONSON
M BLADEN
T. PELHAM
R. PLUMER

Whitehall
July 27, 1739

AN ESSAY

ON

BULK TOBACCO.

LONDON, APRIL 15TH, 1692.

1692 April. HAVING once more made an attempt about Bulke, to get it recommended to Virginia and Maryland; and on this foot that it may be more gratefull to have the Remedy in your own hands, than in any other. We ſhould hardly give ourſelves the Trouble, did we not ſee the abſolute neceſſity of ſome meaſures about it to be taken: or elſe all fair Trade muſt ceaſe; The Evils that attend the preſent practiſe are intollerable to trade, and greatly prejudicial to the Government and Navigation. What general Reaſons are offered, you will receive hereafter, We ſhall only at this time give you the trouble to debate the Juſtice of ſuch Prohibition on account of Trade, And in order to it would obſerve what is commonly objected againſt it, And ſo leave it to any impartial Man's Judgement, that hath had any experience in Trade to determine the Caſe

As to the Detriment to Trade, we ſhall not look back many

years, leaſt it may be ſuppoſed that we can't exactly remember what happen'd at ſuch a diſtance of time, tho' this Evil dwells too much in all our memories 1692 April.

Bulke Tobacco hath the two laſt Years in this Port of London, been not leſs than one penny ℔ pound loſs to the Trade in general to all that have in Hogſheads paid freight and Cuſtom, in that it hath been ſold $1\frac{1}{2}^{d}$ ℔ lb cheaper than ſuch paying honeſtly their juſt dues could afford it: By which means all middling Tobacco hath been contemptible, for in the Room of ſuch Bulke was acceptable, if not more on ſome Accounts in reſpect that it was dryer, as well as cheaper. So that by this means all ſuch who give Life to Trade by their Adventures, whether Merchant or Planter, muſt be content to ſit ſtill while ſuch Bulke is ſold and conſumed at mean rates, before they can ſell, and then they have a Market fixed upon them by ſuch as pay no freight, or at leaſt next to none: and by many ways gain out of the Publick, which no Merchant or Planter can be capable of doing: To give only one Inſtance that is juſt now before us; Some have ſold Bulke Tobacco at $1\frac{1}{2}^{d}$ & 2^{d} at the maſt, which hath been ſold at $6\frac{1}{2}^{d}$ ℔ lb by the buyer here, which is really to ſell for leſs than nothing by any that fairly pays freight & Cuſtom; and by this means at this day Tobacco is at one penny ℔ lb lower than in all reaſon it would have been, had not the Importation of Bulke brought it down, and this is aggravated to the fair Trader, becauſe all men are not able to bear an equal weight in Trade: ſo ſome will be forced to Submit to ſell off at the low price which the dealers in Bulk have ſet, to the intire ruin of the Market, To prove this is not difficult, becauſe very conſiderable Quantities of Sweet Tobacco hath been ſold at $7\frac{3}{4}^{d}$ & $7\frac{1}{2}$ in intire parcels, and for no other reaſon but becauſe bulk Tobacco foreſtalled the Market at a Shameful price, And Trade being thus broken, its not poſſible to ſupport it. So that whatſoever may be ſuppoſed to

1692 April. be gain'd, by the buying Bulk Tobacco of the Planter, is ten times more loſs in the Miſchevious conſequences of it to the general Market, For tho' its true ſome Tobacco that is peculiarly choice & good (which is not the tenth part of what is imported) yeilds more than the reſt, yet in the Calculation good is concerned more eminently, as being the Bulk of Trade for if we conſider the Merchant or Planter Adventurer, they are both one, if they be eat up by any injuſtice of Trade, it doth certainly at laſt fall on the poor planter; for ſuppoſe any one buys 100 Hhds (a thing ſo often happens) and makes nothing of them, can it be imagin'd but the next Occaſion will be to run down the Planter; it will be ſo inevitably. But on the other hand can it be poſſible trade can give any encouragement and the Planter be ignorant of it; or did he ever in that kind fail in Sharing in the Advantage of it, it is methinks without Preſident, Now it hence follows by plain reaſon, and repeated experience, that the greateſt diſhonour Trade of late hath had as to the Merchantable Part is this encroaching fraud of Bulk, which of late Years is become exorbitant. We have this laſt Year paſt had ſome eſſay as to Bulk (not to approve it) but to keep it out of worſe hands by which we find the little Value it amounts to, to an honeſt Trader, Our Experience runs thus; Firſt it waſtes 27 to 30 & 32 ℔ cent, which is near $\frac{1}{3}$ part, Secondly it is hereby called Bulk, & is $\frac{3}{4}$ ℔ ℔ leſs in Value, and ſome 1^{d} or thereabouts as it is in kind, or well done Now it is eaſy to gueſs the advantage, when $\frac{1}{3}$ is loſt, and the price ſo abated; what may be got muſt be ſaved by not paying freight, & the tricking the King's Duty, which can never fall in the poor Planters way or Merchants, they muſt pay the extremity to ſupport thoſe horrible unreaſonable and unjuſt methods in others

2 But then its objected by ſome that this Prohibition would cut out ſome ſmall ſhips that come there, granting that true, where is either the Error or the Evil? there is no port trading

to Virginia or Maryland, but have very greatly augmented and enlarged their Ships without any obligation thereto within theſe 6 or 7 Years. And wou'd effectually do it without prejudice if the Trade required it. For its undeniably true that if all Ships of Burden, do ſail in proportion cheaper than ſmall, there being a Maſter & Officers & more Men to ſail a ſmall than a large Ship in proportion, ſo the larger the better to be navigated to Advantage. Nor is it viſibly any advantage to Virginia or Maryland, that any Ships that can countenance fraud, or can Act that which fair and juſt trade can not do, ſhould be allow'd, for it is undeniably true, that every penny got by foul Trade, prejudices fair Traders treble as much And whatever the fair Trader loſes muſt be ſoon felt by the Country, Now its evident that Bulk Tobacco only is that, that gives countenance and cover to all great Abuſes that are acted in Trade, Firſt it countenances the plunder and loſs thereby to Planter & Merchant, Secondly it is the only part of Trade can be uſed to defraud the King's duty, which practice is the deſtruction to all fair Traders, Thirdly it is the part of Trade which lays Temptations of mens being perjured, by runing Bulk, and then Shipping it out as if they had paid Cuſtom, and ſo defrauding the nation of the entire 3^{d} ℔ ℔, and many alſo after Shipping out Hogſheads, and ſworn to the Exportation, have broken them up for conveniency and foiſted it into the Kingdom, and by that means have cheated the Government of 4$\frac{1}{2}^{d}$ ℔ ℔, and ſurprized Trade, by being underſold in the Market, Fourthly it is that which occaſions great part of Damage by abuſing Caſks to make way for this abuſive & intollerable Trade of Bulk, So that to all fair men it is evidently a ruin & inſupportable, and without Remedy will ruin all men concerned whether Merchant or Planter if not prevented, Yea further all ſecond buyers are abuſed in it, for by the fraud already offered, all advantages in buying parcells is loſt, becauſe Bulk is grown to ſuch exceſs, 1692 April.

1792 April. that it is ſecretly carried through the whole Kingdom, and poached from village to village. So that all generous trade is loſt to the ruin of Merchants & planter Adventurers, Now one notable inſtance there is in this particular at preſent, There are ſome Ports in England can and do at this hour carry Bulk Tobacco by Land to York & Newcaſtle upon Horſes, and there not only ſell but offer to deliver Tobacco clear of all charges to their doors at $\frac{1}{2}^{d}$ & $\frac{3}{4}$ ℔ ℔ cheaper than they can buy it at London, beſides the hazard of tranſporting it & carriage, And alſo they carry the ſame as far as the Town of Berwick, By which it is evident they can & do trade at $1\frac{1}{2}^{d}$ ℔ ℔ below us, their carriage & value conſidered, all which were impoſſible were the Bulk to pay its juſt dues, and its certain if it be continued it will ruin all juſt trade, of which the prohibition will give us all a juſt and equal foot of Juſtice, ſome men have objected, as if Bulk Tobacco were prohibited, many poor planters would loſe by it, becauſe Seamen buy their odd parcells which are not fit to put in Caſks, This may be true, but inſtead of loſs to throw it away would be profit, becauſe ſuch Traſh is made uſefull when here tho' at a contemptible Rate, which doth really bring down the Value of better, and its an eaſy thing to beleive that if good Tobacco in Caſk will yield 20 or 30^{s} ℔ Hhd more, its a full recompence to the Planter for the Loſs of a parcell of Traſh, which would not yield them above one farthing a pound if it were ſold in Virginia, It is further urged that by this means freight would be dearer, and ſmall Ships would be diſcouraged to come there; to which we may with great Aſſurance Anſwer, that it is a miſtaken Notion, for freight would be never the dearer, For as ſmall Ships are now deſigned for the ruin of Trade, then larger & more would be employ'd for the accommodation of Trade, And its evident that if Towns were ſettled as places of Importation and Exportation in a Short time freight would be eaſy and reaſonable

to a deſirable degree, far beyond what can be poſſibly imagin'd by any other method, Beſides ſuppoſe it were granted that freight would be dearer (as it is not reaſonable to ſuppoſe) If Virginia & Maryland do but conſider how the Traders have furniſhed the Trade with new Ships, to the wonder of all men to a degree exceeding all the Trade in Europe, yet what would 5^{s} a Hhd freight be, to the advance of 20 or 30^{s} a Hhd value in the Market, it would be recompenſe enough to retrieve Trade from inevitable Ruin to a profit. So that Argument we humbly conceive is but weak. Some further urge that the Commiſſioners of the Cuſtom Houſe are ſo curious, that they know how to prevent the running of Bulk & ſo will prevent the prejudice that way. To this we Anſwer that thoſe who Argue that way, either do it by way of deſign to deceive thoſe, whoſe intimations and knowledge reach not the certainty of the contrary, or ariſe from their real ignorance of the thing, for this we affirm, that as its now manag'd, its not poſſible for the Officers of the Cuſtom to prevent it, becauſe 'tis carried in ſuch places where none are, and into by ports, where ſeldom any Importation is made, and what by the neglect, and treating & corrupting thoſe little mean perſons its effectually done, Beſides ſuch veſſels have Boats that come out to them and take it away before they have been under the cognizance of any Officers, And notwithſtanding all Endeavours made in the port of London by the Merchants to get it prevented) which in ſome degree we have done) yet we find it dayly impoſſible to be done effectually, Beſides in the out ports they take a Latitude to be 3. 6 & 8 months unlading, in which time they obtain means to execute their frauds, in deſpite of all care, by procuring opportunities, by corrupting a Company of poor indigent & vile fellows, employed as tides men & watchmen, to attend all this while, Beſides we are aſſured the North of Ireland and the Weſt of Scotland are fully ſatisfied this way, by which means trade is

1692 April.

1692 April. loſt thither, and the King defrauded of his Cuſtoms in England, and in thoſe Kingdoms, and would trade ſet up for informers, it cou'd detect many of theſe things every Year, which are now ſupported to the utter ruin and contempt of Trade, But we find many pretend, that no Law would prevent it, becauſe after tis Shipt in Virginia & Maryland Maſters and Sailors wou'd Bulk it up at at Sea, and New York, Penſylvania and New England men, would come and fetch it and Bulk it To this we humbly offer that if any ſuch ſhall fetch it & pay the penny ℔ lb faithfully as they may be eaſily oblig'd to do, their fraud would not amount to much, becauſe if it be prohibited all Bulk wou'd be accounted a fraud and accordingly dealt with. Beſides the charge and Loſs would be too great to expect Advantage by it, And to Ships bound to Europe it would not eaſily (if poſſible) be done as by the Specimen herewith is eaſily evinced, nor can any man probably be capable of doing a miſcheif twice this way: the price of it at once wou'd cure the future attempt So that its not ſo difficult as is ſuppoſed, to be prevented Beſides ſuch a law would meet with all encouragement from all fair Traders for the detection of ſuch Evils and would not be accounted injurious, which now 'tis becauſe all perſons preſume on it as either a priviledge or a Right

Finally it is objected it wou'd diſcourage Seamen To this we cannot but Anſwer, that ſuch diſcouragement (if there were any) would be to the Ships and not to trade, But however the advance of Wages would do and doth at all times command them at pleaſure, even to the moſt obnoxious Voyages in the World, Beſides we affirm, that a Sailor ſhall get more by one Hhd entire than by two in Bulk, provided Bulk were prohibited, and all ſtood on a juſt and equal foot, for by ſuch means, there would be an adjudged market to walk by which now is ſo vitiated, that he that ſells to day, cannot tell what meaſures he may take, or what Market may be determined to morrow.

Beſides the Trade of Bulk which hath encroach't to an exceſs of late Years, hath deſtroy'd all the generoſity of Trade, which generoſity was the Support of it. 1692 April.

Now this we preſume to demonſtrate, by down right experience & undeniable Demonſtration. Within this 15 Years in this City of London was about 20 Worthy Gentlemen of valuable Eſtates, which were termed firſt buyers, and did afterwards diſpoſe and retail it out after bought, to ſuch who were the conſumptors in City and Country, Theſe Gentlemen always kept great Stocks by them, and one or two buying engaged others, by which means trade had its Lifts and Advantages, But ſince Bulk hath grown ſo opulent & that every Sailor and Woman, and little inconſiderable perſon can buy Bulk on Board the Ships, and Squeeſe out by little deſigns part of the duties, if not wholly run it, and then carry it from Shop to Shop, and ſell it at eaſy & low Rates, all ſuch firſt buyers are deſtroyed, eat out, & have given over their former Trade, And none will preſume to attempt it again under the preſent Meaſures, ſo that of 20 men that purſued trade in this nature, we know not ſuch in this great City, that pretend any thing to it. But now every Importer is become a common Retailer for 1 or 2 or 3 Hhds, and is no better than a common Warehouſe to every little conſumptor, which buy from hand to mouth, juſt as they can ſell it. by which means trade is poached; And ſome being weary, or impatient of this little tedious trade force it on to the great contempt of trade, and running the Market down, to oblige a little cuſtomer; whereas ſuch as were the former buyers of Tobacco, would often to ſecure their own profit give trade an advance, which is now the quite contrary. For as no man but the Importer hath (or will have) any Stock in his hands, ſo the little buyers not only buy ſparingly, but engage all others to the ſame, to make their Stocks correſpond with their trade, ſo that nothing but a fate or a regulation can give trade Life.

1692 April. Some object, it wou'd be beſt if all Tobacco were in Bulk, & give this reaſon for it, becauſe thereby it would be cheaper, and ſo cope with all the Inland Tobacco made in Holland and Germany

To this we anſwer, that it is of abſolute neceſſity for preſerving the honour of trade it be either all Bulk or all in Caſk.

1 As to being in Bulk, they that know the Trade do eminently know that Tobacco in Caſk is eſteemed by all men better than Bulk, eſpecially all ſuch Tobacco that hath either Honour or profit.

2 It is evedent in Holland itſelf they are ſo little in love with Bulk, that the Government there have laid a duty on every hundred pounds of Bulk Tobacco equal to a Hhd of Tobacco

3 If all were bulked, then all Tobacco would be uncertain, ſo all the choiceneſs of the Trade would be loſt in the common evil, whereas now by the care in Hhds by ſorting, and other parts of Induſtry, there is in Holland 2 or 3 Stivers difference between Tobacco & Tobacco which is very great, & the ſame in ſweet ſcented, but lay all in Bulk & all crops of Honour will thereby be totally loſt

4 If all were bulked from Virginia & Maryland, it wou'd be difficult ſo to order it, as to diſtinguiſh the ſeveral properties in a Ship, for from the Method of Antegoa & the Weſt Indies, the practice of Bulk Tobacco came up, and in thoſe parts all Ships are freighted by ſingle proprietors, or two at moſt in a Ships whole lading; which could not be ſo well in Virginia and Maryland

5 If all were Bulkt, it would be ſubject to thrice the damage by water, by plunder, by being moweburnt (as its termed) which often happens to a whole Ships lading from Antegoa and ſometimes to conſiderable bodies of Tobacco from Virginia, & Maryland, and ſome Ships have been burnt, as late experience hath ſhewn

6 The demand of Trade as to Oranoco Tobacco, is that it be either bright (& then bulking prejudices it) or that trade calls good Leaf, that is ſuch Leaf that is waxey & tough, and pliant in its own nature, which is uſed and ſold not only in the province of Holland, but Hamborough, Sweeden, Norway, Dantzich, Breeme, Scotland, &c to make up in Roll. now by bulking its certain it would be prejudiced in its quality, which is that only thing that commends, and makes it valuable beyond their inland Germany Tobacco 1692 April.

7 Beſides all theſe reaſons, this alone were enough, that Tobacco is tranſported from port to port after arrived in England, and therefore Bulk is not ſo convenient to tranſport as when in Caſk, not only for its loſs & drying which is conſiderable, but its damage, being to all the places above carried in mixture of Goods, and beſides its not ſo convenient for the Merchant in point of ſecuring his property: And (which as before is an Argument beyond all) All Men will give more for it in all Marketts abroad, and at home, and ſo it merits a markett, by its being preſerved in its natural condition without abuſe to its Colour and Quality, and preſerves its Scent, which is a great requiſite

To demonſtrate this its evident that at this day, that the Arguments above are true in reſpect to Caſk, becauſe tho' Tobacco doth come in Bulk to that exceſs it now doth, yet here this Bulk is forced to be pickt and cull'd and is daily repackt into Hhds & ſent abroad, to make it acceptable in the Eye of the Market, and if Bulk were as acceptable; this were Labour loſt to no purpoſe, And we averr, that no Bulk Tobacco can be repack't at leſs charge than ¼ & ⅜ ℔ ℔, which in time of peace differs little from the freight, to ſuch as pay freight for both, Beſides when 'tis ſo repack't, 'tis abated more in its value than the difference of freight can amount to, ſo that its evident Caſk is the true way of Trade

1692 April. 8 It is evident by continual experience that Tobacco often lies in Holland, Sweeden, &c, a Year and ſometimes 2 years for a Market, & if Bulk were to ly ſo long, the prejudice by it would exceed all the pretended advantage, beyond any difference of freight, and the reaſon is obvious to all, And further 'tis evident to all men trading in Tobacco, that the neat packing of Tobacco in Caſk, is at leaſt ¼ ℔ ℔ advance in the ſelling now if we conſider the advantage of Caſk, and the contrary of Bulk the fancy of that will vaniſh, The Advantages are

1 As to its Colour,
2 As to its Leaf,
3 As to its Scent,
4 As to its beauty and acceptableneſs in package,
5 As to its preſerving fron damage and Violence,
6 As to its more ſecure tranſportation,
7 As to its better aſcertaining its charge to all Governments, which however ſlighted is in Bulk trade, very conſiderable, Now whereas it is urged to make it as cheap an the Inland Tobacco,

We humbly offer in Anſwer, that is impoſſible in point of freight duty, and incident charges, ſo that the Method muſt looſe that efficacy. It is undeniably true that the cheaper it can be carried to other Markets, the better and the more acceptable, & the greater will be the conſumption. But ſuch caſe of charge muſt be always ſo conſidered, that it abate not the Eſteem of the Commodity you have to eaſe, If Tobacco be eaſed ¼ ℔ ℔ which is the moſt it can be, to a foreign Market, by the honeſt Merchant, who muſt pay all duties, (a much greater charge being on Bulk than hhds in all ports) and the Tobacco being debaſed 1¾ ℔ ℔ which a great Quantity would be, where then lies the Advantage of Bulk is certainly inviſible to all men that intend & deſign a publick Good,

9 Now it is evident that all Virginia & maryland Tobacco is

ſold in all foreign Markets, becauſe of its uſefulneſs, & qualities; which Inland & Germany Tobacco hath not; & the preſerving ſuch qualities is preſerving the Honour of it: whereas on the Contrary, if new meaſures be once taken to abate the Qualities of Virginia & Maryland Tobacco, it will bring it into Contempt, & the uſe of it will be loſt: this is a moſt viſible event that appears in the turning all Caſks to Bulk, Viz. That as all Inland & Germany Tobacco is only & properly Bulk, that Sort wou'd be made to imitate it, & ſo foiſted as Virginia & Maryland Tobacco & ſo by degrees would wholly eat out the Trade, & bring it to no value or eſteem; Theſe Reaſons may ſerve a little to convince, that Bulk Tobacco hath no other tendency in it but the ruin of Trade. That theſe Reaſons may be back't with Authority here follow the Reaſons & Acts done by the Government here in order to a recommendation of ſuch a Law 1692 April.

To the Hon^ble^ the Commiſſioners of their Majeſty's Cuſtoms,

Whereas in the Year 1687 We the Merchants, Maſters of Ships and traders to Virginia & Maryland, did Petition the late King James for a prohibition of Bulk Tobacco from being exported from Virginia & Maryland into England or any other parts, which accordingly had the approbation of the King & Council, & of the hon^ble^ Commiſſioners of the Treaſury, & Cuſtoms; and the late King James was pleaſed to recommend that purſuant thereunto, a Law ſhould be made in Virginia & Maryland, for the prohibition of the ſame; and whereas ſuch recommendation was tranſmitted to the Government of Virginia, but thro' a wrong Information the aſſembly there happening to have a miſunderſtanding thereof, the ſame did not take effect, but the ſaid Goverment & the principal Inhabitants of Virginia & Maryland are now convinced of the many ill conſequences attending ſuch exportation of Bulk Tobacco, and the reaſonableneſs Juſtice & Advantage of ſuch prohibition, we

1692 April. therefore the Merchants Maſters of Ships & traders to Virginia & Maryland whoſe names are hereunderſubſcrib'd do humbly offer this our memorial with our reaſons thereunto annexed, that their Majeſtys King William & Queen Mary will be graciouſly pleaſed to recommend to the Government both of Virginia & Maryland, their making ſuch a Law for the prohibiting bulk Tobacco as aforeſaid, as to their Majeſty's Wiſdom ſhall ſeem moſt meet humbly requeſting the Commiſſioners of their Majeſties Cuſtoms to be a means that this our humble deſire may be laid before their Majeſties

	Robert Ruddle	John Green	Edw Haiſwell
Edw Leman	Ben Dowlen	Tho: Raſco	Sam Richards
Edu Laſſells	Wm Cant	Rich Barret.	Zach Taylor
Wm Burnham	John Taylor	Thom Starke	Sam Dean
Rich: Buller	James Wayſtaff	John Hodges	Rich Parke
Anth Cornwell	John Bruniskill	Tho Rogers	Geo Baker
John Glover	Dormer Sheppard	Sam, Groome	Tho Lane
Edmo Littlepage	Geo Richards	Hopefer Bendall	Rob Briſtow Junr
James Cary	Tho. Taylor	Jos Pyle	Nath. Garland
James Boath	John Potet	Micajah Perry	Edw. Perſons
John Abbington	John Cary	Rich Maſh	Tho Haſted
Tho Walſh	Rogers Jones	Tho Wych,	Wm Willis
Ben, Withcott	Dudley Carlton	John Cary	Sam, Gibbs
Wm Howſon	Arth. Bayly	John Cooper	Joſiah Bacon
John Munday	Sr Tho Grantham	John Brown	Thomas Ellis
Edw, Curtis	Sr Rich, Levet	John Kent	Anth Straton
Wm Phiphard	Robt Briſtow Eſqr	Fran, Lee	Arthur North
Michael Jones			

1692
April.

Some Reaſons why Bulk Tobacco from Virginia & Maryland ought to be prohibited from being exported thence or imported into England, and that all Tobacco ought to be Shipt in Caſk to prevent the Evil & Miſchief that attend the bringing it in Bulk

Jſt FIRST in reſpect to his Majeſty's Intereſt.

1 Bulk Tobacco is the only Tobacco that is run by the Seamen, and others to his Majeſty's great Loſs

2 Under the cover of Bulk Tobacco, conſiderable Quantities of Tobacco have been ſuppoſed to have been foiſted into the Kingdom, to the apparent prejudice of his Majeſty's Revenues.

3 Bulk Tobacco doth occaſion his Majeſty to maintain upon all Tobacco Ships above treble the number of Officers, to his very great charge.

4 Bulk Tobacco is ſhipt out of Virginia privately to other parts beyond the Seas, whereby his Majeſty looſes the 1^{d} ℔ ℔, which by law it ought to pay.

5 Bulk Tobacco occaſions ſeveral Small Ships from the Weſt & Northweſt of England & Ireland to engage in the Trade, being capable to run from one port or creek to another to find conveniency to ſmuggle it. which were Bulk Tobacco prohibited, could not be done, nor the King ſo vaſtly prejudiced in his Cuſtoms, nor trade ruined by them,

6 Bulk Tobacco produces 25 ℔ ℔ loſs to his Majeſty by Shrinkage, waſte & other Damages, which in Caſk it would not do, nor would it turn to an Account to the practicers, which are generally the Ship's Company, but by their fraud in the King's Cuſtoms, and the Ships by getting it freight free

7 Bulk Tobacco makes it impoſſible for any Maſter or Commander of any Ship to make a true report of his Lading to his

1692 April. Majeſty, which in Caſk he might eaſily do. And as impoſſible for any Maſter or Commander to prevent his men runing it, while the practice of Bulk is continu'd.

8 Bulk Tobacco abates the 6th part of Navigation to Virginia & Maryland, becauſe were all in Caſk, it would fill one Ship in 6, more than now, and ſo wou'd be an occaſion to bring up Seamen, & employ Ships.

9 Bulk Tobacco occaſions many falſe oaths at the Cuſtom Houſe to the prejudice of his Majeſty & all fair Traders, by covering uncuſtomed Goods, & can no way be prevented but by preventing Bulk,

10 Bulk Tobacco occaſions by many ways vaſt damages in Tobacco, by the neglect of Seamen, and by the damage it often doth in a Ship, to the great loſs of the owners of the Ship, & alſo to his Majeſty and to the Merchants.

11 Bulk Tobacco often ruins both owners and merchants, by ſhips putting into ports with hope to run their Bulk (& by which means many times the Ships are loſt) which otherwiſe would not be done, but they wou'd come directly to their delivering port And Secondly.

(2dly The Government of Virginia becomes prejudiced by Bulk Tobacco.

1 In that Bulk Tobacco defrauds the Government of the 2s ℔ hho which it ought to pay, and which is the cheif Revenue they have to ſupport the Government, & by computation is as before above one Sixth part,

2 It prejudices the Government in the port charges of one Ship in ſix, which is very conſiderable.

3 It hinders the employ of above a Sixth part of the Shipping coming to thoſe Countrys, and thereby of an expence of the Proviſions & growth of the Country.

4 It makes all Maſters or Commanders wholly unable to give a juſt account of what Tobacco is on board his Ship, to the

Government, in regard it is conveyed and ſtow'd privately in the Ship, frequently unknown to him, and ſo he is no way capable of being anſwerable for the ſame, beſides they themſelves are often too guilty not to cover others in their fraud. 1692 April.

5 It occaſions vaſt Quantities to be exported thence unknown to the Government, by its eaſy conveyance into ſhips unobſerved, & to be tranſported into places that are not allowable by Law.

6 It is by Bulk Tobacco that the Government of Virginia gives ſo ſlender an Account of the 1^{d} ℔ ℔ which the Law lays on all Tobacco exported thence to any place but to England, and is the occaſion of ſo much Tobacco exported to the prejudice of the Government & to trade, As to Shipping & Navigation it is alſo prejudicial.

1 It is in that it brings down freight to above a Sixth part by reaſon a Ship ſtowed with Bulk Tobacco brings & can bring a Sixth part more by bulking in the cantlings & hollows of the Ship & other places of breakage in the Ship than if in Caſk.

2 It hinders by that means about a Sixth part of Shipping that wou'd be employ'd in it, we may ſay a full fourth,

3 Thirdly it occaſions great controverſies & troubles between Commanders & Seamen becauſe the bringing of Bulk commonly hinders a Ship a third or fourth part of her time in lading by Seamens & Officers neglect of time in their bulking, which alſo proves a ruin to the owners of the ſaid Ship & can't be prevented; the Commanders and Seamen themſelves by a preſumptive Cuſtom have brought it to be accounted a priviledge, tho an unreaſonable & unjuſt one, and have run the ſame to great exceſs.

4 It occaſions many Suits in the Court of Exchequer by the frauds which are occaſion'd by it, and it is moſt evident no Suit is almoſt commenced, but upon this account, to the prejudice of the innocent owner, and diſcouragment of Navigation.

1692 April. 5 By reaſon of Bulk ſome have burn't & loſt their Ships, to the loſs of Ship & Goods, & much Tobacco is frequently burnt, as his Majeſty's Officers can teſtify, to the great loſs of the King & Merchant.

As to the Merchants & Planters the evil of Bulk is beyond all Account that can be given

1 Bulk Tobacco being that which as before, too much defrauds the King, and being freight free is underſold to the contempt of trade, & ruin of the merchant and Planter Adventurers, It being evident ſome Ships not bringing 500 Hhds have brought 40 ſome 50 ſome 60.000^{lb} of bulk, which hath been ſold at under rates (by reaſon before expreſt) to the ruin of Trade.

2 Bulk Tobacco becomes a cover to many frauds both in Virginia and here, which under this duty now laid makes the fair trader unable to ſupport himſelf under it.

3 Bulk Tobacco ſupplying an early market occaſion the Merchant & Planter's delay (as well as loſs) in the diſpatch of Trade, & diſpoſal of his Goods, to his vaſt charge & loſs.

4 Bulk Tobacco is carryed on by the ungenerous part of Traders, which hawke it about to the undervaluing and contempt of the Market, by the many Slights & frauds uſed in it, that cannot be done in Caſk,

5 Bulk becomes prejudicial to the Merchant & Planter in regard little is ſold, til Bulk is firſt diſpoſ'd of, and that often ſuplying the preſent Occaſions at low rates, often ſets a Market upon the Merchant, by which means it happens that both Merchant & Owners of Ships, hire & employ thoſe who by pretended priviledge ruin their employers.

6 Bulk Tobacco becomes a ruin to the Merchant Adventurer, by the decay of Shipping & loſs of a Market, often to 30 & 40 ℔ Cent ſomtimes to loſs of the Capital.

But now it follows, by what means this Evil of Bulk may

be prevented or regulated, to which ſubmitting to better Judg- 1692
ments, we humbly offer our Opinions, that if a Law were made April.
to this effect, or as ſhould ſeem beſt to the Government, it would be effectual: and if ſuch Law did (as we beleive it wou'd) Check & prevent the abuſes in Bulk, all Traders & Planters would immediately find the advantage by it, to the Honour of Trade & profit of the dealers in it which cannot be til all men ſtand upon an equal foot of Juſtice

The Subſtance or heads of a Law againſt Bulk might have ſome reſpect to theſe meaſures or ſome ſuch like.

1 That no Bulk Tobacco ſhall be exported out of Virginia & Maryland on the penalty of 1000£ or what ſhall be thought fit.

2 That all Maſters & Commanders give 1000£ good ſecurity in Virginia, or Maryland to perform ſuch law.

3 That every Commander be oblig'd to give a true content of each mark, & quantity of each mark of hhds taken into his Ship, and by whom Shipt, or conſign'd to, & on what Account Shipt

Any of theſe is enough in this Nature.

Copy of the Content of the Ship Hope of London, bound thither,

John Williams Commander, &c

. $\mathfrak{X}$ 20 hhds on Account Simon Davis
. *R: T* 40 hhds on Account Thomas Simons.
70 hhds on Account Rich, Adams, & ſo, ad infinitum

4 That S ſuch contents be made out & all ſign'd by the Commander, and then oath to be made by the ſaid Commander, which oath is to be certified by the Collector on the ſaid contents, & that the Collector alſo ſign them, one content to be delivered to the Commander to enter his Ship by in England, a ſecond content to be ſent to the Commiſſioners of the Cuſtoms,

1692 April. the third to be in the nature of a Record with the Collector, with whom the Ship cleared in Virginia & Maryland.

5 That all Commanders be oblig'd within 12 Months to return a certificate to Virginia & Maryland, of ſuch his true diſcharge, from the Commiſſioners of their Majeſty's Cuſtoms in London (the caſualties & dangers of the Seas excepted) or their ſecurities to be ſued for the ſame, & recovery to be without Compoſition, or in caſe the ſaid Commander return, that the ſaid Commander and Ship be liable to make good ſuch Obligation.

6 That ſuch fines be appropriated to the Government & other ſuch Public Uſes, as the prudence of the Government ſhall ſee cauſe, giving a part to the Collector who is to be oblig'd to ſue for the ſame under a penalty.

7 That all ſuch Duplicates & certificates returned from England to reported from time to time to the Governors, and to be adjuſted at every Audite of Accompts in the ſaid Government.

By ſuch like Law no Commander can cheat twice, but at a rate no way profitable, and the terms of it ſuch that no honeſt Man wou'd be prejudiced by it, and for others ſake it is that the Law itſelf is propoſed.

We ſhall not add more, contenting ourſelves that finding the evil of Bulk intolerable, both as to the planter and trader, we have caſt in our mite of endeavours to prevent it, be its fate what it will, we ſhall be eaſy under it, Let this be excuſed from,

&C.

MISCELLANEOUS PAPERS.

On Suſpending the Laws for paying Debts in Country Commodities of Virginia.

To the Hon^ble^ Commiſſioners of their Majeſty's Cuſtoms.
An Anſwer to the reply of W^m^ Sherwood, James Blair, Patrick Smith, for ſome reaſons for ſuſpending the Laws for paying debts in Country Commodities of Virginia, and the clauſes in the Law of ports, to be bound to buy and ſell wholly in the ſame under a penalty, and alſo as to that clauſe about the Impoſt of Skins & furrs.

1 TO the Law termed a Law for advancing of Manufactories.

We humbly offer that their firſt Article is not true, the Law now reviv'd doth affect all Debts contracted by Merchants in England, that ſend Goods, for its evident & will be proved that debts contracted in England, by goods ſent and money advanced to the inhabitants, hath been Subject to this Law whenever it came to ly between an Inhabitant & Merchant, becauſe they ſay its a Virginia Debt, being due from their inhabitants, beſides the Law itſelf hath no proviſoe to defend the Merchant from it, we refer to the Law itſelf.

2 The next inſinuation is manifeſtly falſe, for the Law made in 1663 hath no reſpect to this Law, being worded quite con-

trary, and had no intentions towards it, but is a falſe and unworthy inſinuation, to give a credit to the injury, which this later Law would produce, it having no Eye to the value of the Goods, or the neceſſity of the Debtor, beſides this Law as hath been urged exempts all their valuable Eſtates as Lands, Negroes, Servants & houſes, from being liable to pay any debts, by which the Creditor is defrauded of all things of value.

And whereas they would excuſe this Law upon the Credit of the debtor, who having taken ſuch Oath would be in the Nature of a Bankrupt, Granting that true, where is the relief for the Creditor, for the Law debauches the Debtors Principles, by contriving a way for him to defraud his Creditor, & then would put it on his punctilio of honour to be more juſt than the Law obliges, we humbly ſuppoſe its a weak Argument, to ſuppoſe a Law of this Nature.

3 As to the value of the Commodities in this Country, they urge it as the common prices from man to man; its true it may be to ſome whoſe great neceſſity calls for them, and have not to pay for them; but we are ready to prove it to your Honours its not ſo, nor hath been this ſixteen Years ſave one ſevere Year or two, by the failure of the crop, it would be hard that the prices of a Dearth ſhould be the ſtanding value to pay debts, & we are ready to prove that you may buy wheat for 2/^{d}6 ℔ Buſhel in common, if paid for in goods or money, and that is valued at 4^{s} and Peaſe at 2^{s} which are valued at 4^{s} and ſo in proportion all other the Commodities enumerated in the ſaid Law; by which is evident the fallacy couched in their Anſwer.

And whereas they are pleaſed to value ſeveral Commodities in Tobacco which is known to all to be an uncertain Commodity ſometimes ⊕ ℔ C^{t} and more difference, in the market, and as much difference in quality which makes the Creditor ſtill under hard bonds, if tis ſo that the debtors pleaſure ſhall be his Paymaſter, which we hope will be conſidered.

And whereas the Merchants are taxed with the great and exceſſive Rates, and raking the Country, one inſtance is given, that a Buſhel Salt doth buy a Buſhel of wheat, in time of Peace, Granting that to be true, which yet is not granted.

Yet we do aver that Salt ſent from London in time of peace, doth in Charge of Caſk & waſte & freight & Shipping & other Charges ſtand the Merchants in about 2ˢ ſ ᵈ6 ℔ Buſhel which brings us back to the true Value of the ſaid wheat, and we cannot remark unto your honours, how unkind this reflection is, that people would have Salt as cheap in Virginia as we pay for it in London, whereas, were freight paid to the full for it, it could not be carried hence & ſold for 3ˢ ℔ Buſhel, & is a Commodity carried by the Merchant only for accommodation, no man ever yet propounding profit by it that carried it from London.

As to their Inſtructing the Merchant to keep his accounts we humbly conceive it foreign to this Law, but yet we humbly offer that in the Year 1690. the Merchants did generally give, & we are ready to prove it, 2ᵈ ℔ ℔ & to 20ˢ ℔ Cent for Tobacco, when it yielded not clear 1ᵈ, ſo that keeping Accounts at 10ˢ ℔ Cent would not have availed the Merchant at all, as they propound.

4 And whereas they ſay this Law hath been in force this nine Years we hope your Honours will take notice of this contradiction, to their 2ᵈ Aſſertion where they derive this Law from 1663, and the weakneſs of their Argument lies that no Merchant hath ſuffered; we ſhall not ſay how many have ſuffered, but if no particular inſtance hath been in point of Law, yet there are inſtances of thoſe who have accounted the Loſs of their Debts equal to the recovery of them by this Law.

And the weakneſs of the Law is confeſt in that they own the Government of Virginia, puts no manner ſtreſs upon this

Law, which ſhews it needleſs, but to make ſuch knaves, as otherwiſe might be honeſt Men.

And whereas inſtead of a reaſon to defend a Law, the replyers are pleaſed to ſay we only oppoſe it to ridicule the Government, we humbly aſſure your honours that ſuch a reflection is only an abuſe and calumny caſt upon us, becauſe we are not willing to have trade raviſhed from us, and our Eſtates taken away by force of a ſingle Oath before a ſingle Juſtice of Peace,

And to ſay no more we are oblig'd to ſay, none in Virginia of any quality whatſoever, do (or indeed) are obliged to ſeek the welfare of Virginia beyond ourſelves, and its Evident to your Honours by our Endeavours to ſupport the Trade of that Colony, under all the difficulties that attend it.

As to the Law about Ports

WE ſhall anſwer briefly, that had Virginia a million of people more than they have, it might with ſome Colour be alledged, it were either poſſible or reaſonable to make 20 Towns, & enjoin all buyers & Sellers to buy and ſell in them; but we do aver that as the Country is at preſent conſtituted, & the Inhabitants live remote and diſperſed, it will be both unreaſonable & unkind, to force all trade into ſuch places, becauſe it will be hardly poſſible in ſeven Years to get people together, to make ſuch a Town as may make a Market, Its true were the People enough in the Country, & were ſettled in Towns, & convenient cohabitations, Tradeſmen would live better, many things would be eaſier, but that can only be the effect of time, & we prove it thus,

1 All the People that inhabit theſe now have Houſes & plantations of their own, and are ſettled with their families, & will not be brought to leave a certainty of Bread to cohabit in a

place only called a Town where no Trade is, nor buſſineſs to ſupport them,

2 They urge how well handycrafts could live if there were Towns, its true but there muſt be People to employ them, or they would ſtarve in the Town for want, beyond what they do now, becauſe now they can make Bread, & ſupport their families.

3 They inſtance that the Merchants & Tradeſmen ſhould firſt begin the Towns, we humbly offer unto your honours the hardſhips of the Merchant who depends on people to trade with, who is propounded to ſettle a Town to draw People to it, & dare not ſell from the Melancholly ſpot he is confin'd to, as to tradeſmen the Merchant is not ſettled in Trade, but at certain times of Shipping, & cannot employ the Tradesmen as Shoemakers Taylors & Carpenters & Bricklayers, except in work of Porters to load & unload Ships & the like. It muſt be a gradual drawing of People that muſt ſupport, & effect, & do all that is alledged deſirable in this Law

4 We aver that there is at leaſt 400 or 500 of the Inhabitants that trade to England, and have Goods & Merchandizes hence ; it appears to be very unreaſonable all theſe ſhould have their Hands tied up not to ſell to their Neighbours, tho 20 or 30 miles from a Town, or elſe to leave their habitations & Plantations, to go and become a member of ſome Town, it would be a greater priviledge to be a Chandler in a Townſhip in England, than to be the beſt inhabitant and trader in Virginia,

And whereas its averred how willing the people of Virginia are herein, we a aſſured the common people which muſt make up the body of theſe Towns ; approve not the Terms of it, tho all men are fond to have Towns on a Modeſt Account.

And whereas they are pleaſed to make an Argument for their Towns, by reproaching Trade & Traders, pretending that Merchants undo the Country, & by extortion ruin the People.

We do in anſwer to ſuch Calumny ſay, in Virginia goods are bought & ſold 20 & 30 ℔r cent cheaper than in any of their Majeſty's plantations, either in the Weſt Indies or New England or any other part on the main, ſome particular inſtances excepted) the People of Virginia have their Goods cheaper than any even in England in their Capacity can buy it, ſo that this harangue ſhows the miſtake in the Country, to vilify & diſcourage trade, under pretence to advance it, And farther whereas they do alledge the Planter durſt not aſk the price of his Goods, We cannot but be amazed at ſuch aſſertion we ſhall to prove that to be a miſtake (if deſired by your Honours) produce our Books & Accounts received from thence, which will prove all theſe aſſertions falſe, And that the Merchant is the ſupport of the Country, & not the ruin, is evident from all their Complaints, which any obſtruction of trade creates

As to the Education of Children, &c, its true Towns would be uſefull, but the Inhabitants muſt find a way by Trade to live before they can either maintain themſelves, or Schools, and Markets for Proviſions might be ſuppoſed, & trade not ſuppreſſed, which this Law would immediately do

And whereas the Law injoins the Planter to bring his Tobacco to theſe Towns, to ſell it, we aſſure your Honours, 'twill be hardly poſſible to be done, for a poor man if he cou'd ſend his Tobacco to a Town as is alleg'd, it would be a ſeverity to force him to follow it 20 or 30 miles to ſell it, & when he ſells it, it can hardly bear his charges home; but notwithſtanding all they alledge, we are morally ſure it cannot be done, but that the Law muſt be in this point ſuſpended or elſe trade be crippled,

Now as to Towns we are all deſirous of them, & would Act our part to further them, but that they ſhould be ſuch, as were poſſible to conſiſt with Trade

1 We agree Towns uſefull to the Inhabitants, & Trade; but then that they be Ports, to import, & Land, & to export &

Ship; which only Acts wou'd create Towns without trouble or force

2 That no perſon be oblig'd to bring his Tobacco to ſuch Town or other Goods; but he that exports, or imports it, be he planter or Merchant and then none wou'd be Oppreſſed

3 That Towns ſo conſtituted would engage the Merchants & Traders to Act their own buiſineſs; to the beſt advantage as to time & the diſpatch of Shipping, & to getting to Markets which is the Sinew of Trade all which would be loſt if there were the leaſt dependence upon a Company of (as theſe Gentlemen alledge them) miſerable poor planters to effect it, becauſe ſuch Merchants & Traders would have Boats, Sloops, Sailors & Servants of their own, to facilitate the whole; all which is ſhort & eaſy and a moſt effectual way to raiſe Towns and to Trade with them

As to the Reply about Skins & Furrs,

We humbly offer,

1 THAT what is aſſerted ſeems to prove the Law to be a private Anger to 4 or 5 men; rather than any other Advantage; And whereas its boldly aſſerted that, that trade is at leaſt ℔ ct profit, We challenge ſuch Aſſertors to make it out 30 ℔ Ct communibus Annis; So do not doubt to make it out by 10 Years ſucceſſive Accounts of that Trade, & further we averr not upon hearſay, & prejudice, as here its reply'd to Your Honours, but by too much experience that there has 30 ℔ Ct. upon furrs leſs ſome Years, ſo that this great pretence appears more prejudice than Juſtice; ſo that its apparent that 25 ℔ Ct is an exceſſive duty & only glanced at ſome Men's particular Intereſt

And whereas they alledge its practicable to raiſe the Value on the Indians, we do aver its not poſſible

1 Becauſe ſuch Traders are in Contract at ſuch prices & the Indians ſell ſkins for ſo much powder, Cloth, or other things, & not by mony and its found by all Traders, that Commodities abate yearly in Value & profit with them, as they come to any experience in Commoditys, & cannot be raiſed,

2 Beſides its certain the Indians will not Trade upon ſuch diſadvantage when other Places Court them & would be fond of the Trade which this Law prohibits.

3. If there were no other reaſon for this Trade, but the ſupport of the conſumption of our courſe woolen Manufactory, it were obliging enough to the continuing of it, And where theſe Repliers ſay this duty of 25 ℔ Cent would engage the Merchants, if Supplies come not in, to ſell the worſt of their Skins to the poor people, to all which we humbly offer.

That greater Supplies have not gone to Virginia in any Years; than hath even ſince this War, & we appeal to the King's Books to juſtify this Aſſertion

And for the worſt of the Skins, we will engage for the Traders in Virginia that the Inhabitants ſhall have them Peace & War at 10 ℔ C^{t} Loſs; there often being twice the Loſs by bringing them into Europe, and are worth here not ſo much as a Sheep Skin to make pockets with, ſo that that Inſinuation is moſt frivolous

And we do aſſert & its certain that if the Merchant ceaſes to ſend the Manufactory of this Kingdom, the Trade ceaſes, & if the Trade ceaſes, how will they have the Skins? for as we have proved & will prove, the Merchants ſend 2, 3, or 400 Miles up the Country to purchaſe them, and ſo the duty & all the good ſo greatly propounded by it falls to nothing As to Hides & Skins pretended to be killed by the Inhabitants of the Country, they are few, & not fondly bought by any, & as to the Skins of Beef they are bought by Maſters of Ships to lay over Tobacco & prevent Damage, and never as we knew of bought for mer-

chandize being often ſold here for 2ˢ & 2ˢ/6ᵈ ℔ Hyde & ſometimes for 12ᵈ

So that all that amounts to no more than Clamour, & if theſe trifles be of ſuch uſe to the People, what is the reaſon that the People ſell them; truly the reaſon is obvious to have Linnen & woolen & neceſſaries much more profitable to them, which the Repliers ought to have taken notice of, And whereas we alledged the returns of Skins were returned in Cloathing, back to Virginia; the Repliers are pleaſed to defend the Law upon the hardſhip the Merchants have, in having their goods loſt at Sea its a hard caſe ſuch a Law ſhould envy the Merchant his Loſs

It ſhould (we ſhou'd have thought) have been an Argument to have eaſed Trade, becauſe of its Hazards & Loſſes, and not have added to its loſs by an unſupportable Duty, we doubt not but your Honours ſee' thro' this Sleeveleſs Argument

And as to what they ſay, its a Calumny thrown upon the Country, that they might have had Skins if they cou'd have propounded ſatisfactory pay.

We give for Anſwer their own Reply, that they would have paid Tobacco to the Merchant at any price.

All this Maligning & blackning Trade ſhews an ill will to Trade itſelf, which we humbly offer as their own Words ſo no Calumny, for no man had ſkins but wou'd have ſold them if he could have had that for them which would have compenced their Value; and its the Intereſt of thoſe without any Law ſo to do; beſides this reply ſeems to beſpeak an Occaſion of conteſt with Trade, as trade, & men as traders, for all the traders that had Skins had as we averr'd before, Cotton, Serge, Kerſey, Flannell & Linnen more proper than Skins which they might have deſired; but this trade was to be prohibited to 4 or 5 men which theſe repliers mention before, & ſo nothing cou'd raiſe a Clamour; but to this method of proceeding, which is ſo noto-

rioufly obvious to your Honours View in the reply itſelf we ſhall not ſay more

And again they appear with a falſe & notorious miſtake pretending the exceſs of profit which we have anſwered, & will prove, doth not amount to one third part of what is pretended, but is a reproach caſt upon trade, for what ſo done we leave to your Honour's Conſideration; not doubting what ever ill eye this Law may have to trade, his Majeſty will encourage it

And whereas in the laſt place the pretend this Law wou'd have no ill Aſpect to Virginia, and that there is no Advantage but what 3 or 4 Men get Eſtates by. To this we Anſwer,

1. That the Number of Traders on the Exchange of London do abundantly exceed the number mentioned, beſides theſe 4 or 5 ſo much envy'd & maligned in Virginia, & are the only buts the Law points at; & is ſo often mention'd by the repliers, & certain it is that a breaking off the Trade from the Indians, would break off their Freindſhip which is valuable, tho' undervalued to drive on this Law,

2. And whereas 'tis replied that the diſadvantages to Virginia are many, As for Inſtance, That every Year ſome are killed & looſe their Lives to which we Anſwer, that we are aſſured there hath been but 2 killd this 6 or 7 Years, & both them by one Single Indian, who was diſguſted againſt them, for denying him proviſions, we challenge the repliers to prove more, & we will anſwer their manner of being killed

Next we muſt take Notice how the pretend the Skin Merchants keep the poor Traders under, as the Tobacco Merchants keep under the Planters, ſo that the whole tendency of this Reply is to beat Trade out of Countenance, & to calumnize the Merchants & Traders, which injury is recommended to your Honour's Obſervation

The next Calumny they lay on their Government, who they

ſay avenge not the Murther of the Engliſh, we leave the Government to anſwer for themſelves,

And whereas they alledge the ſelling powder & Shot & Guns is an injury we aſſert its the only conveniency & advantage, becauſe hereby in Caſe of War or any trouble it lieth in the power of the Engliſh to withhold both from them, by which they will at leaſt for a conſiderable time be made uncapable of procuring it, & ſo made more dependent, whereas were their dependence on Arrows (as formerly) they would be offenſive without remedy

And its own'd by all other plantation for true policy to beat the Indians from Arrows &c, only becauſe of the proviſions & accurate uſe, that the Indians have of them) but becauſe that continent is as yet in Nature, Woods, & with Arrows (not to mention the cuſtom of poiſoning them) they kill and are unſeen, & ſo not to be diſcovered, whereas they give warning by there Guns to others to defend themſelves if perchance they kill any one whereas it is well known, there was ten times the miſcheif done when Arrows, were the Indians weapons, than one now

And whereas the repliers are pleaſed Yet to urge the great & continual fear the traders in the Country are at, of being knock't on the head, which makes them ſervile & baſe, & ſtirs up in the Indians a contempt of the Engliſh Government, This bold aſſertion can never be proved, nor is there ſuch fear, we dare ſay, the repliers cannot give one Inſtance of it further, than in 7 Years ſuch an Accident of ſome private Indians (as before) may happen, but is an inſinuation foreign to all the knowledge of the Repliers, ſave as an Argument to ſupport a Law intended for the abatement of trade only becauſe its fancyed 4 or 5 men get ſomething by it, as is by them alledged,

And it is further worthy your Honours conſideration that this clamour againſt going out to the Indians to trade, is againſt that which other plantations are at a great charge to ſend out,

1, To ſee and diſcover the Country,

2, To learn the Strength of the Indians & their way of living

3, To find out Trade & civilize them by degrees,

But whereas they object againſt the debauch't Lives of them that go out to trade it were to be wiſh't they were better, but theſe repliers only by hearſay, & not by knowledge, lay this reproach upon them; it being known ſome of them are as civil perſons as any in the Government; and it would be hard that a Body of men ſhould be reproach't for any particular act of one Man, beſides we humbly preſume the King's Majeſty & the Government would loath to looſe the Trade of the Nation, for the ſake of ſome debauch't porters, Sailors, or Carmen that are employed in negociating the Laborious part of it, which is in good meaſure the ſame thing, Laſtly they alledge a repetition of a profit, which would bear this duty; we do declare the contrary, & as before are ready to produce Accounts for many Years paſt, to prove it a miſtake, taken up on pure prejudice to trade, for ſome particular Intereſt, as by their own confeſſion in this very paragraph of their Anſwer.

Wherein they give as a reaſon why the Trader was prohibited the carrying out their goods from that Colony, to the making the beſt of their Eſtates, which they had with ſo much charge, & hazard, & Inſurance brought in there becauſe they wou'd go to Carolina & Maryland, where no ſuch duty was, & ſo make ſome advantage of their goods, And ſome of us have been informed this very clauſe was put haſtily in, on purpoſe becauſe a worthy Gentleman a trader in that Country, ſaid that he cared not if they made the Law he wou'd remove his goods which perfectly evinces, the Law was made not for the publick good but for prejudice.

We therefore humbly offer unto your Honours the unreaſonable hardſhip of this Law (which is without any precedent in

any Nation whatſoever) that it ſhould make it to be impoſſible for the Merchant to ſell his Merchandize in that Government, and to make it ruinous on purpoſe to prohibit it to be carried to any other, where he may not do it, and ſince this Clauſe, as we have alledged, is greatly contradictory to the Law of England, & to the Intereſt of England, & the freedom of Trade, & an abatement of the conſumption of the Manufactory of this Kingdom, we hope his Majeſty will take it into Conſideration, before it have the Royal aſſent.

And humbly pray Orders may be taken herein, that the Merchants may have Liberty either to trade or remove their Effects where they may, & not by ſuch a ſurpriſing (if not unreaſonable Law) have their Eſtates deſtroyed.

The Method of Curing Red and Pickle Herrings.

YOU muſt not take any Herrings till they are full rowed & when they begin to be Shotten you muſt leave off Thoſe Herrings you deſign to cure to be red'd, you muſt cull them, that are well baited, then what you take out of a draught, lay on a boarded place laid Shelving for to drain, then ſprinkle them & turn them with great and Small Salt mixt, & after the blood & Slime is drained from them, take them & waſh & Scale them in the firſt Water, then pull out the Gill & with it the Gut, leaving the row in, & belly whole, then rince them in the 2nd Water, & throw them into pickle made pretty ſtrong with large Salt then you muſt have your long wooden rods ready, which muſt be full of little Short peggs, at ſuch diſtance as the Herrings muſt not touch each other, which when you have filled with Herrings you muſt hang up in your herring hang, which muſt have peices of Timber come down from the Rafters of the Houſe full of Peggs to lay your Rods of Herrings on, then light ſome green Sappy Billets at the ends and lay about 3

together on the Flower in ſeveral Places about 6 Foot diſtance each Fire which muſt be very carefully tended night & day, for if the fires are out never ſo little time the Herrings are all Spoiled & if you let the fire be more than a conſtant Smooking glowing heat (which you muſt order by opening & Shutting the Windows & Doors) the Herring will be roaſted & drop from the bone, but your fires muſt be ſuch as the herrings muſt juſt be kept moiſt from top to bottom, & drop very ſoberly, they muſt have 3 droppings, which will take up about 4 Weeks, then take them down off the Sticks & lay them 4 or 5 days on Peaham Straw, then pack them up in dry ſeaſon'd Caſk end ways, You muſt during their hanging to cure have a Ladder to take down thoſe which ſhall be firſt cured, which you will find by their not dropping any more.

Pickle Herrings.

YOU muſt manage your pickle Herring after the ſame manner you do the red Herring, and then pack then pack them very cloſe in your Barrels with a good Quantity of large Salt, about 2 or 3 Weeks afterwards you muſt make new pickle & new pack & preſs them very cloſe in the Caſk with weights, then head them up & ſet them in your Warehouſe bound up with a peice of Slate, tile or Stone on the Bung, & keep filling them with pickle till you Ship them on boad for a Voyage.

The Method of Planting Vineyards and Making Wine.

1 A SPECIAL regard muſt be of the Climate, Seaſons & Soil, which you deſign to plant, & to know what Sort of Vines will thrive beſt in each.

2 For all ſweet & rich Wines, either a Strong or Chalky Soil, whether on plains or declivities, which are moſt proper for dry

& full body'd Wines; a looſe mould & Sandy Soil for green wines; or a black mould, & moiſt Lowground if not ſurrounded with Neighbouring Hills.

3 The Month of November new Stile, is the proper ſeaſon for Planting, eſpecially in dry & warm Grounds, & on declivities to the South & Southweſt.

4 Your Plants muſt be cut from Old Stocks that be ſound & fruitfull, which ſet about 2 feet deep in the Earth, leaving about half a foot out, & take care to have knots both above & under Ground, for from them ſprout both the Roots & branches, ſet the Plants in rows about 4 feet diſtant from each other, which rows muſt be made at ſuch a convenient diſtante, as the Labourers may have room enough to prune, dig, weed &c, betwixt them.

5 If you ſtick a ſmall Stake by each plant, & ty it thereto with Spart ruſhes, or the like binding it will ſecure them from being ſhaken by violent winds, or from being carried away by floods, but as the Plants grow up uſe longer and thicker Stakes eſpecially if you deſign (as they do in ſome parts) to frame the Rows into the manner of a hedge, with is made by long Canes & Strait Sticks carry'd from one Stake to the other & faſten'd to each, Breaſt high; as the Branches of the Vine ſprout out lay them down on each Side upon theſe Stakes, binding to the ſame ſuch as be preſerved to bear fruit, but prune off all the under Sprouts & keep the Edge ſo free that a man by ſtooping may view from one end of the Vineyard to the other: if the ground admit of the ſame; yet in moſt parts of Spain they make no ſuch hedges, but leave the Vine to embrace the Stake or ſpread upon the Ground.

6 For pruning begin in the wain of the moon in January, & don't exceed the wain in March following, & the ſooner this work be ended before the utmoſt Seaſon, the better, if you make no edge, then lopop all the branches to the head, which

will thicken into a large knobb; but if you keep to the hedge work, you may leave 2 or 3 of the main branches extended on the Canes, cutting off the Ends with diſcretion.

7, After pruning, open the Ground round the Roots to receive the rains; but when the weather begins to be warm, & the Sun to ſcorch, then fill up the Ground again

8. The clearer you keep the Vineyard from Weeds, you will gather more fruit, & make better Wines,

9. As your Plants grow full of Leaves, & the Grapes incline to ripen, you muſt direct your men to walk thro' each row, & gather off ſuch Leaves as Shade the fruit from the Wind and Sun

10. The wain of September Moon new Stile, is the uſual Seaſon for gathering the Grapes, & if you forbear to gather the bunches (which ſhould be cutt off with a ſmall Bill or hooked knife) till after the Sun hath riſen, & hath warmed the Grape, & hath dry'd up all the moiſture contracted by the night dews, and again leave off before the evening dews can affect the Grape, you will certainly make the better Wine, tho' the leſs; the cloſer the bunches are cut off to the Grape, by which you will have the leſs Stalks, it will add to the goodneſs of the wine, otherwiſe the Stocks leave naturally an unpleaſant, bitteriſh taſte on the palate,

11. The ripeſt fruit muſt be firſt gathered, leaving the more latterly for the ſecond & third gathering, expoſing them as much as you can to the Sun to ripen; if the rains fall before the vintage, you will make the more wine, but it will be neither ſo good nor ſo rich,

12. In the making of Sherry Wine, after gathering the bunches, they ſpread the Grape upon Matts, expoſed to the Sun's beams, as well to dry up all the outward moiſture, as for the eaſier picking out all the rotten or green Grapes, when this is done they are carried to the treading preſs, at which time they

ſpread over them a Quantity of the Yeſſo Powder, which they tread & preſs together with the Grape; but in the other Proceſs the management is the ſame as of other Wines,

13, When the grapes are gathered, they muſt be carried in baſkets to the Wine preſs to be trodden, and when the preſs is full they put other grapes in to a large Veſſell, plac't on purpoſe near the Preſs, to ſupply it as it grows empty by Treading; the Preſs muſt have a hole with a cloſe grating, for the pure wine to paſs thro' into a veſſell that ſtands under it, the grapes ſhou'd be trodden as ſoon as poſſible, for ſhou'd they lie but a very few days they would heat & ferment, by which means it wou'd be uneaſy to the men, for it wou'd flea off the Skin from their Legs, beſides the inconvenience of having ſome of the grapes periſh, which wou'd do no good to the wine as I beleive is experienced in the making of Syder

14, As the receivers grow full with the muſt from the Preſs, they carry it away and fill their Caſks & large Jarrs, within a foot of the bungs or Mouths, covering them only with boards or the like, to keep out Vermin from falling into them

15, After the muſt has been 2 or 3 days in the Veſſells the Spaniards uſe generally a ſort of Chalk or Lime ſtones called Yeſſo, which they pound to powder of which they take 1, 2, or more Porringers full, according to the gage of their Veſſell, & put them into the muſt, & with a long ſtick or Cane they ſtir it well together, this is repeated Morning & evening for 2 or 3 days, & then it ſhou'd ſtand to boil, purge & purify the muſt, & it will refine & force to the bottom all the groſſer Sediments,

16. The Spaniards for the better preſerving & ſecuring the Wines, not bought up by ſtrangers, eſpecially thoſe which they deſign to Ship of for the Weſt Indies; they have a Furnace, large Panns, or Kettles, which they fill up with muſt, and boil up to the conſiſtence of Treacle, then they pour it out into coolers (which they call Arope) & when 'tis cold they caſk it

up, & keep it for their uſe, they take 2 or 3 Gallons of this & put it into their new or Old Wine (but it works & mixes beſt with New) immediately after the fermentation, which gives them a ſtronger body, & enables them to endure the hot Seaſons, & the tumbling of ſo long a Voyage but this Unctious Liquor tingeth the wine with a deep brown Colour.

17, They make a Beveridge for the Country Labourers after this manner, when the Grape is preſt & all the muſt run out, they take away the huſks which by treading are hard caked, theſe they break into ſmall Pieces, and throw them into the Preſs, and pour in ſuch a Quantity of water as diſcretion directs, this they let ſtand infuſing 24 Hours, after which they tread it well over again, & draw it off as they did the Wine and caſk it up, but this Beveridge will not keep a Year, unleſs it be ſtrength'n'd with ſome of the boil'd wine,

18, And laſtly in the Month of March immediately following the vintage, you are to draw or rack off all your new Wines into other Caſks and Veſſells which you are to fix in the Vaults & Cellers where you deſign they ſhall lye, for in this Month the Vines begin to bud forth, which ſimpathize ſo far with the Wines as to ſet them in a fermentation, which ſoon is over, & makes them fine for the racking

Note, that the trenches of your Vineyard muſt be dug quite thro' the ſame depth that the Vines are planted, whether 2 or 3 feet,

The lower part of each plant muſt ly along the bottom of the trench, the Length of a foot or more, on which put your foot, & with your hand rear up the remaining part, which is to remain above the ſurface of the earth as was before directed; the plants ought to ſtand at an exact diſtance from each other, & always in rows

Mr Colliſon concerning the Management of Vines.

Colo Byrd,

IN my Letter laſt Year I gave you my thoughts on the management of Vines & a Vineyard but as that miſcarried I ſhall now give you ſome general hints—

—A good ſituation is a very eſſential point to be conſidered in the choice of a Vineyard a gentle Declivity to the South is eſteemed the beſt which more ſpeedily carries off the water, which on a Flat is apt to ſtay long, & is very prejudicial, a Sandy gravelly dry ſoil is beſt, Juices produced from this, is ſtronger & better flavoured, than from a Low moiſt Situation

A good Shelter is very neceſſary & ſhould be raiſed on all Sides but the South by raiſing plantations of Trees' of the quickeſt growth as Hickory Locuſt, &c but on that ſide which is moſt expoſed to the ſtrongeſt Winds the Plantations muſt be made more formidable but let none be planted ſo near the Vines as to drip upon them

In Planting there is various Methods according to Country & Clymate ſome ſet the Vines 3 or 4 foot from each other & the Rows 6 Foot aſunder others plant 6 foot aſunder on every Side, We give more Room becauſe we want the Sun's heat, & expoſe our Fruit by degrees, but with you where the Sun is vaſtly hotter, it will require more Shade & Shelter from its fervour, For if the Fruit be expoſed to its Heat, it is ſoon welted & Withered,

In pruning theſe general Rules are principally obſerved, to keep a ſucceſſion of wood on the Vine,

The Branches of the firſt Year's Shoot growing from the Old Stock are to a Strong Stake placed in the Center of the Plant & in the Spring following in January or February the Branches are to be cut down to 2 or 3 Buds

And theſe Buds when they Shoot the 2d Year produce each 2 or 3. Branches, which are again to be carefully tied up to the Stake in the Center, & when they have attain'd to the Heighth of 4 or 5 Foot top them & if they ſhoot again top them above the Joint of the laſt Shoot, & keep them topping till they've done Shooting, but always be carefull to leave Spare Budds on the top of the Branch to divert the Sap, for if the Branch is ſtrip't cloſe & bare, & no top branch or buds left, the conſequence will be that the bearing Budds will Shoot in the Autumn inſtead of the next Spring, & the Crop be loſt

The Branches that are of the 2d Years Shoot which is bearing Wood rarely fails of bearing fruit when they are prun'd in the 3d Spring are to be left 3 or 4 or 5 Foot according to the Strength Vine & conveniency of ſpreading & when they have done bearing are to be cut off near to the Stem to make Room for a Succeſſion of bearing Wood, for unleſs there was this management there would be no keeping the Vine within compaſs & the Vineyard with Regularity,

I come next to conſider in what manner to adviſe you in ripening the Fruit and to prevent the miſcarriage you mention, which I apprehend proceeds from the bunches being too much expoſed to the Sun, & being too near the Ground cou'd not bear ſo ſtrong a reflection.

To remedy this & adapt a method ſuitable to your climate, I propoſe that you practice the Method uſed in Spain & Italy, that is by raiſing the Stem of the Vine to 2 or 3 Foot high & keeping them prun'd to that heighth & ſpread the bearing branches of the 2d Years produce from the Center of the plant, which will give room for the Buds in the Center to Shoot for next Year's Wood, & are to be carefully tied up which will prevent their Shading or annoying the Branches that have the Fruit that Year, which may run either Eaſt & Weſt or North & South, which you find ſucceed beſt on ſtrong forked Sticks

2 or 3 to each Branch & the diſtance between the Rows of Sticks juſt enough for the Leaves to ſpread, if the Branches are tied faſt between the Forks it will bear the Fruit the better & better reſiſt the Winds,

Raiſe the Sticks or Stage to the heighth of 3 or 4 foot or higher that there may be room to keep the Ground clear of Weeds underneath, this method will create a Shade on the Ground & prevent too Strong a Reflection & Leaves will naturally riſe on the top & Shade the Fruit which be carefull to preſerve but Suffer no Branches or Leaves to grow underneath to Incumber the fruit & prevent the free circulation of Air & ſtifle the Fruit, And I apprehend the more you cover the Ground provided the Fruit hangs clear It will ripen the better,

Prune the bearing Branches that are tied down on the Sticks in this manner, as ſoon as the Buds have ſhot Branches ſo long that the Branches appear top them at the Joynt above the laſt Bunch & if the Bud at the Joynt Shoot top that & ſo keep them top all the Seaſon of Shooting, which will ſtrengthen & enlarge the Fruit & more ſap will flow to the Branches that riſe in the Center which are for fruit the next Year & theſe being tied up to the Stake & lop'd to a regular Heighth & the bearing branches being kept regular check't below the whole Vine will appear regular & uniform. Experience will teach you to improve theſe Hints I had almoſt forgot the principal thing & that is what Sort of Grape generally ſucceed beſt in a Vineyard, and that is all Cluſter Grapes & thoſe that bear thin ſcattering Bunches, for the heat ſoon penetrates them & ſoon drys up the Rain dews & the Wind has not ſo ſtrong an effect on them but try all Sorts & Judge for yourſelf I wou'd further recommend to your obſervation another very common Method abroad

And that is according to the old Poetick Phraſe marrying Elms with Vines which is celebrated by Virgil in his Georgicks, & many other natural writers perhaps it may ſucceed very well with

you eſpecially thoſe Sorts of Vines that bear great bunches & large fruit whoſe weight requires a better Support than Stakes

If you pleaſe to remember you'll find inſtances of this Nature in moſt parts of your Colony, Your wild Vines lay hold on every Side with the wild Trees for their Support, Query, if the beſt Sort of your wild Grapes were well cultivated whether they would not yeild better Fruit, & ripen ſooner & make a pretty Wine, being Natives perhaps they may be better adapted to your Seaſons, than Foreigners, was I in your Country I ſhou'd try the Experiment

I will cloſe this long relation with an Obſervation of a very curious Gentleman Mr Charles Dubois who in his Travels thro' the South parts of France & Spain was very agreeably entertained in their Gardens from variety of Fruits growing together Being regularly planted with Cherries. Apples & Pears and againſt every Tree grew a Vine which run up into the Tree and was ſupported by its Branches, & when he was there, was plentifully hung with Fruit, and ripen'd to great perfection and a moderate Skill in pruning ſerved

The better to illuſtrate the Method of pruning which is the principal piece of management in order to have good fruit and a full Crop, I have encloſed a rough Sketch for your Obſervation, I am perſwaded we are now both tired the beſt reaſon to conclude

With my beſt Wiſhes for Succeſs in all your Endeavours

Yrs P Colinson.

No.1: Suppoſes an Old Vine pruned cloſe, from whoſe Old Wood, Shoots Young Branches

No 2, Repreſents the ſame Vine pruned the firſt Year

No 3, Repreſents the ſame Vine Shot from the firſt Year's pruning which we call ſecond Year's Wood, which always produces fruit,

No 4 Repreſents the ſame Vine with the Wood of the 2d Year's produce ſpread Horiſontally from the Center of the Vine, for bearing and tied to forked Sticks, which both ſupport Branch & fruit, but 'tis to be ſuppoſed tho' not here expreſſ'd that there is on the ſame Vine, Branches of Junior Growth which is to ſucceed the Wood that hath born fruit which is cut cloſe off every Year to make room for new bearing Wood of the Second Year's Growth

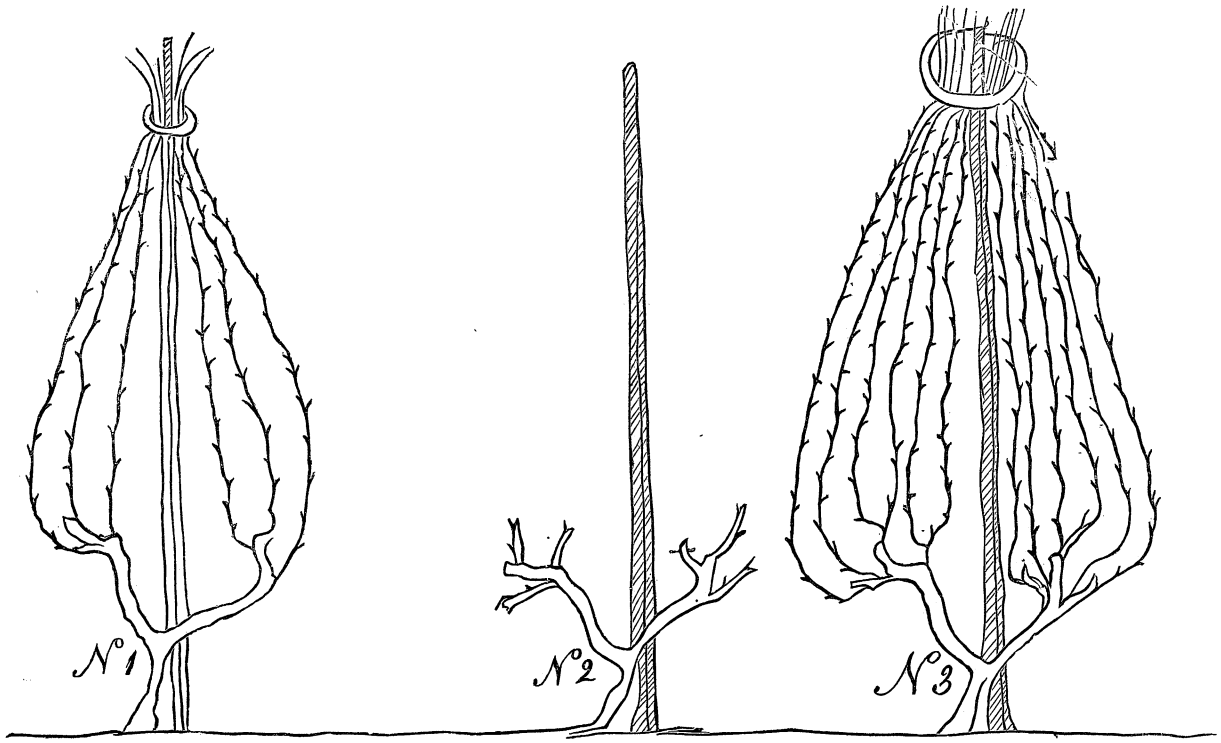


Figure of Pruned Vines.

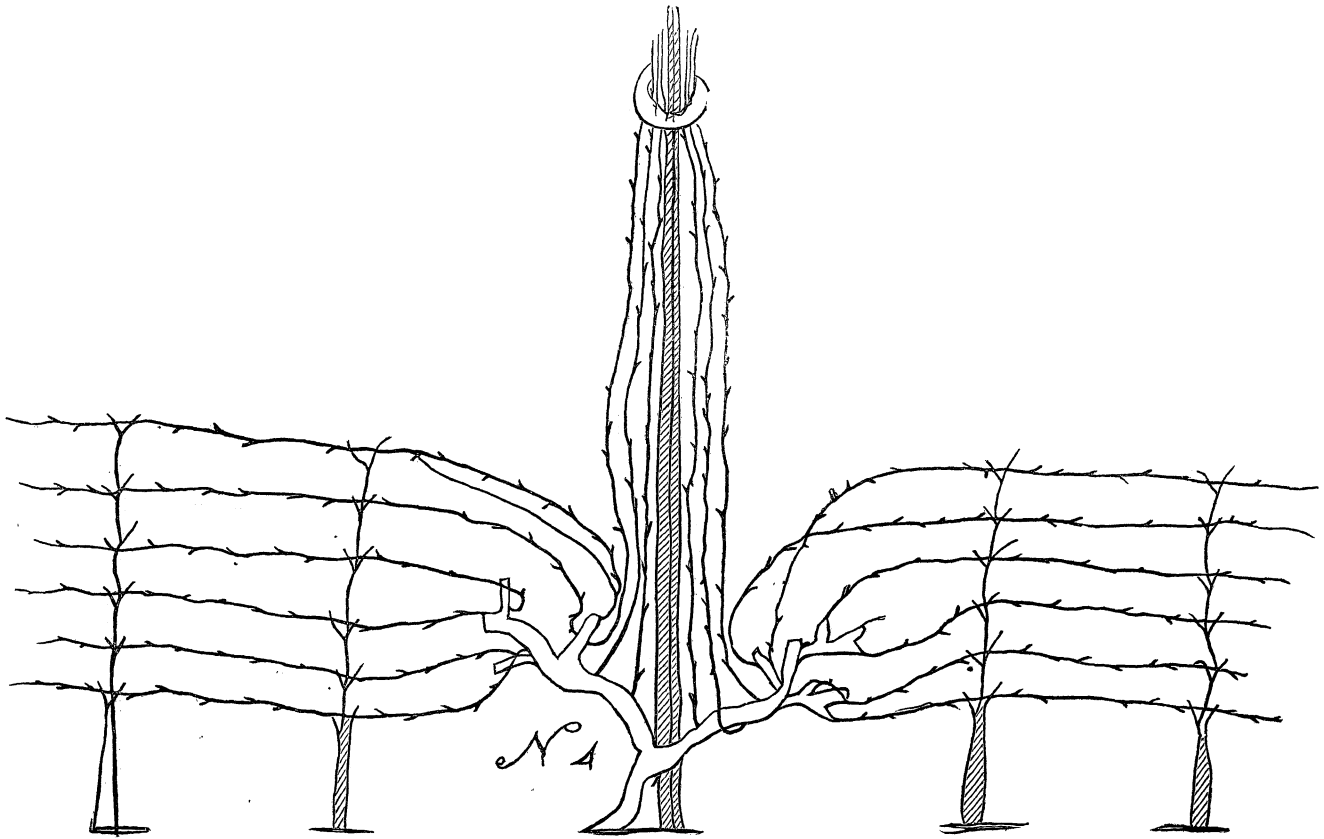


Figure of Pruned Vines.

Mr Collinſon about our own Country Grapes moſt likely to Thrive.

Colo Byrd, Kind Friend

I'D the Pleaſure of yours June 14h ℔ Captain Boſwell, & am glad to find mine contain'd any thing worth you Notice, I wiſh the ſucceſs may anſwer both our expectations, I ſhall be glad to hear of the proſperity of your Vineyard, & which Sort of Grape ſucceeds beſt, why ſhould it not with you as well as at the Cape of Good Hope, but there muſt be a time for all things & different Climates required different Management, at the Cape where the Wind perpetually blows a Tempeſt, the Vines with great Care are run on Stages cloſe the ground, & kept conſtantly tied and indeed the pains they beſtow is very well recompenced by the excellent Wines they produce

But I am yet of the mind that at the time a Year that your natural Country Grapes are ripe if a perſon that was a Judge was to mark thoſe that were moſt Elegant for Size & Flavour & ſoon after take cuttings & plant in a freſh generous Soil & regularly cultivated, I can't help thinking but they'd be much improv'd & being natural to your Climate & Seaſons would produce better than Foreigners & perhaps may yeild a Wine peculiar for Strength & flavour, I had this Year a letter from North Carolina where amongſt many curious remarks on the produce of that Country the Author ſays that he ſaw & eat Grapes growing wild, as large & as good as any he ever eat up the Streights, I hope I may depend on him, if ſo what a noble produce that province would yeild if rightly cultivated, I cou'd be glad you'd make the experiment of a quarter of an Acre with the beſt & choiſeſt of your Country Grapes that wou'd be enough to ſee the produce

Mr Collinſon about Plumbs, Apricots, &c & to prevent their Gumming.

Colo Byrd

I HOPE you have received mine of November 18 relating to a vineyard, as you directed I carried it to Mr Perry's I come now to make good my promiſe therein, and to propoſe ſome methods to prevent the gumming of Plumbs, Nectarines, & Apricots which is a general complaint in moſt of our Colonies, It is a great misfortune that you are deprived taſting thoſe Fruits in their higheſt perfection & is ver ſurprizing it ſhould happen ſo with you for I always imagin'd your climate much happier than ours, in perfecting delicate Fruit, being nearer the latitude of their Original Countrys,

I'm at a loſs how to prevent this Accident & has taken me up a pretty deal of thought about it & perhaps to little purpoſe, But if I may preſume to give you my conjecture on the cauſe of it, I apprehend it to be this, In the Summer Months when theſe fruits are drawing to ripeneſs, the weather with you proves exceſſive hot & cloſe which both enlarges the Veſſells & thins the Juices, which occaſion too quick a diſcharge, In this State the Tree perſpires faſter than ſupplies can be collected from the Root, the Fruit is in a manner left deſtitute grows ſhriveled, Tough & inſipid, the little ſupplies that are afforded are the very vitals of the Tree, The Texture of the Veſſels being broke by the too great Extenſion the Juices ſpend on the Surface of the Fruit which being coagulated by the heat of the Sun, acquire the conſiſtence of Gum

Whether this is a reaſonable conjecture I muſt leave to your penetrating Judgement to determine but the Effects are plain My next conſideration is how to prevent them.

1st I apprehend to graft or Bud Plumbs, Nectarines, & Apri-

cots on peach ſtocks may be a pretty likely means to prevent this diſaſter

For it being a very free ſtock conveys & collects its Juices very plentifully for the ſupport of its Fruit. It is not to be doubted but all the three kinds will take on it, being all Stone Fruit & frequently grafted on one another

2 It may be with good Succeſs to raiſe theſe kinds from their own Kernals perhaps they may thrive better from their own Original Stocks than by being budded or grafted on others

3 I wou'd adviſe to plant all theſe kinds on the Brinks or Sides of conſtant running Brooks that they may never want a Supply of moiſture in dry weather which may be a means always to keep their Veſſels full which will keep the Fruit Plump & ſo in a fair way to come to maturity

4 I wou'd propoſe ſome method to check or abate the force of the Sun's Action on the Body of the Tree during the Fruits ripening which may be done by tying green Moſs very thick round the Stem of the Tree on the South ſide from the Top to the Bottom & by laying a Quantity of it or wet Straw on the Surface to abate the Sun's Action on the Roots, poſſibly by keeping the Veſſels cool may prevent too great a Secretion & keep the Juices from being exhauſted.

5 It may be of good Service to prune cloſe all old Trees which have been ſpent by Length of time & great Bearing. This will give a check to the Sap & invigorate the Tree, & from their new Wood you may expect good Fruit for 3 or 4 Years & when ſpent Lop them again. Very poſſibly from theſe imperfect Hints your Sagacity may collect ſome method to correct the Imperfection In theſe Fruits, If I am ſo happy as to be any ways aſſiſtant in this affair, it will be a Singular pleaſure to your ſincere Friend

P Collinson

I have conſulted further relating to the Vineyard & it is a

general Opinion You muſt ſet the Vines ſo cloſe as to cover the Ground when their leaves are extended in the Summer

Mr^{s} Otway's Receipts for Clary & Cherry Wines.

To make Clary Wine.

TAKE 25 Quarts of Spring Water, 25 Pounds of Raiſſins of the Sun, pick'd & Shred let the water boil half an hour & when it is luke warm, pour it on the raiſins with a peck of Clary when in Flower ſhred, before it is quite cold ſet it a working with ſome ale-yeſt, let it ſtand 8 or 9 days cloſe covered with a Blanket, ſtir it once a day then ſtrain it off, & put it up in a ſmall Veſſel, let it ſtand 9 or ten weeks then you may Bottle it off, you may make what Quantity you will by this Receipt it will be very good & keep long.

To make Cherry Wine.

TAKE the beſt Engliſh Cherrys when they are full ripe, pick them from the Stalks, them maſh them all in an open Tub. take out a Quarter of the Stones, run the Liquor out of them thro' a hair bagg into a Tubb, then break the Stones you have taken out in a great Mortar, & put them to the ſtrain'd Liquor, lay a ſtick acroſs, cover it cloſe, ſo let it ſtand 3 days ſtirring it every day, then preſs it out & put it into a Veſſel, & let it ſtand a week, then draw off from the Lees and put it up again, put to every Gallon a pound & half of the beſt 6^{d} Sugar, & let it ſtand till it is very fine then bottle it off, if there is too much Lee you muſt draw it off a Second time from one Veſſel to another before it is bottled, if you knew how much your Tub holds it is beſt to put your Sugar in for ſo it mixes beſt.

If you add to every twelve Twelve Gallons eight or ten pounds of black Cherrys it makes the Wine better.

Mrs Shuts Receipt for making Birch Wine.

SET your Birch Trees a running the beginning of March, when you have got your Quantity of Liquor, meaſure it & ſet it to boil a little, & Scum it, then put to every Gallon of Liquor Two pounds & a quarter of the beſt Liſborn Sugar, Let it Boil half an hour, Scum it clean, then take it off the fire & put it to cool, When it is ſettled pour it off from the Dregs, put it together with Barm as you do Ale, when you think it cool enough; Let it work three or four days, then put it into the Veſſel, and ſtop it up cloſe keep it cool, & Bottle it the October following.

Mrs Blackiſtons Receipt for making Elder Wine.

TAKE ſix Gallons of Water: ſix pounds of Raiſins of the Sun, ſtoned & cut, ten pound of white Powder Sugar, boil them altogether an hour, then take the flowers of Elder when they are full blown and ready to fall off rubb off Slightly the Quantity of a Quarter of a Peck, & put them in when the Liquor is almoſt cold, a day after take about a Quarter of the Liquor and beat into it ſix ſpoonfulls of the Sirrupp of Lemmons, two days after put it into a Veſſel which will juſt hold it, at Six Months End Bottle it off, if fine.

Ducheſſe of Lorreign's Receipt for making Soupe.

BOUILLON Sec ou portatif tres Commode et Utile ſurmer a L'Armée, et en Voyage. Prenez deux vieux Chapons ou Cogs, Concaſſes en les Os ſans endommager la Chair; huit Livres de Boeufmaigre, de L'Eſchine ou dunautre bonendroit, avec un Os de Moelle, et undemy pied de veau,

mettez le tout enſemble dans un pot de terre bien verniſſe, mettez y de L'Eau ſuffiſamment, faites lecuire aupres du feu, ecumez le bien, aſoutez y une piece de Gingembre, vingt Grains de poivre, Fruit Cloux de Giroffle ; trois grandes peices de fleur de muſcade, deuxfeuilles de Laurier, continuez a le cuire a petit feu, ſans flamme, pendant huit ou dix heures otez en petit a petit toute lagraiſſe, paſſez le bouillon par uneſerviette, et preſſez en le Jus de la Viande le mieux que vous pouriez, faites repoſer ceque vous avez paſſe pendant la Nuit, otez en le lendemain La Graiſſe, quiſerafigee ſur le bouillon, mettez le dit Bouillon dans un petit pot de Terre bien verniſſe, faites le cuire ſur un petit feu, juſquace quil ſ'epaiſſiſſe comme un Syrop, coulez de alors dans des plats de Fayence, mettez ces plats ſur du Sable Chaud, pour le Secher doucement: pendant trois ou quartre Jours, le Sable ne doit pas etre trop chaud, car aulieu de Secher il diſſoudroit la matiere, quand l'humidite enſera evaporee d'une bonne partie, et que la matiere commencera a ſ'epaiſſir comme la colle, vous le coupere's en dix ou douze paſtiles, remettez les Paſtiles dans des Plats de Fayence, & en les tournant d'un jour a l'autre, vous les feux entierement ſecher et conſerver pour L'Uſage En cas que vous vouliez avoir une bonne Soupe ou bouillon, prenez de L'Eau autant quil vous en faut, mettez y du pain, et un peu de Sel, faites le mitoner ſur un rechaud, et faites y diſſoudre une de vos paſtiles, en la remuant avec une Cailliere d'Argent, vous aurez une bonne Soupe ou bouillon pour votre Uſage.

Il y a ſeulement a remarquer, queguand ces Bouillons doivent ſervir pour des Malades, ou des Bleſſez, que la Doze des Epices doit etre diminuée dans la Compoſition, ſuivant L'Avis des Medecins.

The Method uſed in Cornwall in making Earthen Floors for Malt Houſes.

TAKE Lime Aſhes, (or the Courſe Part of Lime) and about $\frac{1}{6}$ part as much great Sand (or Fine Gravel) make them with Water into the Thickneſs of mortar or a little thinner

Break up the Ground & lay on the Mixture evenly, about 3 Inches thick and as it dries if any Cracks appear, beat it with a Beetle as often as you ſee Occaſion, till it is hard. The Lime prevents the Flower from growing damp, in wet weather, and it will laſt for many Years, but more, or leſs according as 'tis made uſe of

To cure Miſletoe of the Oak.

THE beſt time is in the Months of December and January, the harder the weather is, the finer is the Miſletoe & full of white Berries, you muſt gather the Small Twiggs not bigger than the ſmall end of a Tobacco Pipe, which when done you muſt pull off all the White Berrys by reaſon they will not dry ſo well, when you have ſo done, put the Small Twiggs & Leaves all together over a Baker's Oven, or in ſome hot Kitchen, but not near the Fire, & when quite dry, you may put it in a box with ſome whited Brown Paper, & likewiſe the Berries by themſelves when thorow dry, about 15 or 20 Pounds Weight is enough

Mr CATESBY'S RECEIPT TO PICKLE STURGEON & MAKE CAVIER.

To pickle Sturgeon.

LET the fiſh when taken cool on the ground 24, 36 or 48 Hours as the Weather will permit, then cut it in pieces, & throw it into clean Water, ſhifting the Water ſeveral times,

whilſt it is ſoaking waſh and bruſh it with hard Bruſhes til it be very clean, which it will be in two or three Hours, And then you may tie it up with Baſs and Boyl it; Put in Somewhat more Salt than in boiling other Fiſh, Skim it well and boil it very ſoftly, til it be tender, an hour, or an hour and a half or 2 hours according to the Age of the Fiſh And then let it cool very well, And put it into pickle, The Pickle muſt be made of Beer Vinegar $\frac{5}{8}^{th}$ & $\frac{3}{8}$ of the Broth it was boiled in mixed together & ſalt the Pickle very well with unbeat Salt ſomewhat more than will make a freſh Egg ſwim, put the Fiſh in the Kettle when the water is cold and the Fat muſt be taken off very well

To make Caviar.

AS ſoon as the Sturgeon is catch't rip up the Belly & take out the Row, and cut it as near as you can Flake by Flake as under, And Salt it with good Spaniſh Salt extraordinary Sharp putting it into a Baſket, & there let it lye at leaſt Six Weeks, & then take it out and waſh off the Salt well then lay it on Boards in the Sun ſo thin as that it may ſoon dry on both Sides, It muſt be turn'd but care muſt be taken that it be not too hard dryed but that you may pack it cloſe, And as you pack it take out all the thick Skins, in which you muſt be very nice. And when 'tis pack't very cloſe You muſt then take ſome heavy Weights and lay upon it that it may be preſſed very hard, then it will be as cloſe as a Cheeſe to keep for uſe

The Addreſs of the Houſe of Burgeſſes for making War upon the Tuſkarora Indians;

To the Hon^ble^ Alexander Spotſwood, her Majeſty's Liev^t^ Governor of Virginia

WE her Majeſty's moſt loyal & dutifull Subjects the Burgeſſes met in Aſſembly, been deeply ſenſible of the horrid Murders, Barbarities, & Hoſtilities lately committed upon her Majeſty's Subjects in North Carolina, by certain Indians of the Tuſcarora Nation, & duly conſidering the Dangers which daily threaten the Inhabitants this Colony from that Nation humbly entreat your Honour, as well for the defence & Security of this Country, as for doing right to our injured Neighbours, that you will be pleaſed to declare War againſt thoſe Tuſkarora Indians their Adherents & Abetters, & to enter into ſuch treatys & alliances with the Government of North Carolina, or any other Government as for that purpoſe to your Honour ſhall ſeem proper, And being ſenſible that the Succeſs of ſuch undertakings, under the divine favours & Goodneſs, will in great meaſure depend on Proviſion to be made ſuitable thereunto, & beg leave to aſſure your Honour that we will exert ourſelves to the utmoſt in giving ſuch timely ſupplys as ſhall be ſufficient to enable your honour effectually to perform, & make good your Treaties & Alliances, as alſo to proſecute & finiſh the ſaid War to the Honour of her Majeſty, & the ſafety & wellfare of her Subjects, and if your Honour ſhall think fit to denounce War we pray you will be pleaſed to lay before Us an Eſtimate of the Charge of carrying on that Service for 6 months that thereby we may convert proper Meaſures for raiſing a Fund ſufficient to Anſwer the intended deſign,

The Governor's Anſwer to the Addreſs of the Houſe of Burgeſſes for making Warr againſt the Tuſcarora Indians.

Mr Speaker,

And Gentlemen of the Houſe of Burgeſſes

I AM very glad that in this extraordinary conjuncture, I have the Opportunity of conferring with the Repreſentatives of the People, whoſe diſpoſition I wou'd ever conſult in the making of Peace or War, In either Caſe, I ſhall conſtantly endeavour to give you proofs that I have nothing more at heart than to ſerve this Country.

I heartily thank you for the aſſurance you give me of ſufficient & timely ſupplies, if there be no other means left, to right our injur'd Neighbours & ſecurity of ourſelves but by Warr, I ſhall ſoon lay before you the moſt frugal eſtimate of the Charge thereof, that I am capable of making

The Governor's Second Speech to the Houſe of Burgeſſes.

Mr Speaker

And Gent. of the Houſe of Burgeſſes,

SOME late Intelligence of the wicked deſign of the Heathen, makes me the more earneſt to paſs this Law for the Rangers, be deſirous to ſecure the Country as much as in me lies, & not to let it ſuffer for any juſt reſentment I might have, to ſee no meaſures muſt be render'd effectual but ſuch as have their firſt riſe from your Houſe,

It is now near two months ſince this Seſſion began, & hitherto has your Houſe prepared ſcarce three Bills fit for me to paſs, Nor do I yet find that you offer to anſwer one Single Paragraph of thoſe matters I recommended to you in my Speech, beſides I can't but take take notice of your Silence to my written Meſ-

ſages, and even to ſome of more than a Twelvemonth's Date, which undecently appears upon your Journals, yet to be conſidered, tho' I'm ſure no man that has obſerved how you have ſpent your Hours, will ſay that you have wanted time for this purpoſe; but I am more ſurprized at the incongruous proceedings of your Houſe, when after you have by a ſolemn Addreſs, and reſolution, aſſured me of timely and Suffecient ſupplies for carrying on a War, & making Treaties, you will offer no other Bills than one, which cannot be paſſ'd, for its unuſual & extraordinary Nature, untill a Draught thereof be firſt laid before her Majeſty, and ſhoud I venture to paſs it, yet it wou'd not raiſe one penny in time nor one third of what you yourſelves have judged barely requiſite for the Expedition You have hitherto declined All Meaſures, that might make your Militia uſefull, or put your Country in a reaſonable poſture of Defence

Your late proceedings upon the Book of Claims, muſt hinder every Body from aiding the State in its exigency, for after the treatment which ſome Creditors are like to meet with in your Houſe, what man will diſburſe one Shilling for the Publick, to be reimburſ't at your pleaſures, or who will perform any ſervice upon the faith of a Law, if Acts of Aſſembly are to be obſerved according to the Humour of your Houſe, In ſhort I am amazed at your proceedings ſeeing this is the preſent Situation of Affairs

The Heathen are deſtroying her Majeſty's Subjects & rangeing your Neighbourhood, freſh diſcoveries encreaſe my ſuſpicion of their bloody deſigns on this Colony, Sword, Peſtilence, Famine & diſcord rages ſo much in North Carolina, that neither a Council or an Aſſembly can be found to take any meaſures to prevent the intire deſolation of that Province

Your Militia will not be commanded out upon the Publick Service at their own Charges, nor can they fight without Arms & Ammunition.

And if you will not enable me to provide timely and effectually, for the Security of this Government, & for the recovery of the next, the conſequence may be very fatal, but muſt certainly ly at your door

To the Hon^ble^ Alexander Spotſwood her Majeſty's Liev^t^ Governor of Virginia

WE the Burgeſſes having with great ſeriouſneſs conſidered the ſpeech delivered by your Honour to the Houſe the 19^th^ Inſtant, do render you our thanks for the Care & regard you are pleaſed to expreſs, for the ſafety of this Country, Yet cannot without deep concern reflect on the reſentment your Honour hath conceived at the proceedings of this Seſſion, We beg leave to aſſure your Honour no motives have prevailed with this Houſe, to prefer any Bill for your Aſſent, but hath proceeded from a juſt regard of our bounden duty to our moſt gracious Queen, and the welfare & Safety of her Subjects, and where the ſecurity of the Country, and Intereſts of the People, are ſo much concerned, as neceſſarily to require the raiſing of Money, We with all ſubmiſſion take it to be the undoubted right of this Houſe, that Acts of this Nature, ought to have their foundation from us, We acknowledge that we have been aſſembled here Six Weeks, part of which time hath been taken up in preparing ſuch Laws, & repreſentation of the greivances of the People, and as on due conſideration we thought proper & convenient to be enacted and if the latter part of this Seſſion hath been waſted, in attending for Bills ſent up by this Houſe to their Honours of the Council for their concurrence, we hope it may be attributed to the effect of diſagreeing, than of our want of duty to our Sovereign, or the People werepreſent; We have had under our conſideration the providing of Fortifications for the better Security of this Colony recommended to us in your Honour's Speech

at the Opening of this Seſſion, and in regard of the duty given already for that purpoſe, and humbly conceiving ſuch works are not of great uſe to this Country, but more eſpecially conſidering the extraordinary expenſe of the Publick at this time did not think it proper to make any reſolutions therein. We likewiſe have conſidered the propoſals made by your Honour, for fitting a place for careening Ships, and for the reaſons laſt mentioned are of Opinion the ſame can't be well effected, at this time, We have not been unmindfull of the State of the Clergy recommended unto us by your Honour, and are humbly of Opinion that the Laws now in being have made ſufficient proviſion for the maintainance of the Gentlemen of that Profeſſion. In purſuance of the recommendation of your Honour's ſpeech, we have provided a Bill for Erecting a publick Goal, for Debtors to be committed to by the General Court, to which the Council have agreed It was by the repreſentation of the State of Affairs in North Carolina laid before this Houſe by your Honours to gether with the Sence we had of the Dangers approaching this Colony, from the Indian Enemy, that we were induced to addreſs ourſelves to your Hon^{r} to proclaim War & to come to a reſolution of aſſuring you, of timely & ſufficient ſupplies to carry on the ſame & to make treaties, & we humbly conceive by the way propoſed, by the Bill for granting to her Majeſty certain Duties, we have provided ſufficient means for enabling your Hon^{r} to effect the ſame, and if that Bill be of ſuch an extraordinary Nature, that we can't obtain your Hon$^{r's}$ Approbation, we muſt acquieſce under that misfortune, The affairs of the Militia is what the Houſe always eſteem'd of the greateſt Importance, & was ever deſirous of concerting meaſures with your Hon^{r} proper to render them more uſefull, but conſidering the emergent Occaſions for raiſing of money at this time for carrying on the War againſt the Indians, & beleiving, by raiſing an Army for that Service, ſome of the Terms propoſed by regulating the

Militia Forces wou'd be anſwered, we did judge it more proper to wait the event of that War, before we entered upon the regulation in which we think it proper to conſider of a method for providing Arms & Ammunition for the poorer ſort of people, and of the matter relating to the Quakers; The Method this Houſe hath taken for examining the demands of publick Creditors is Grounded upon the Law which entitles Creditors to their Claims, & Agreeable to the Rules our predeceſſors the Burgeſſes have conſtantly gone by, This Houſe is of Opinion, ſuch claims hath not been without the intent & direction of that Law, & ſuch claimants can't with reaſon reflect on the Juſtice of this Houſe. for not allowing a demand not warranted by Law. We have conſidered the propoſitions projected by your Honour for the Aſſiſtance of the College in maintaining the Indian Hoſtages, but did defer taking any reſolution thereupon, till we cou'd ſee the ſucceſs of the Duty Bill with the Council upon which that matter did in ſomeſort depend.

We have declined coming to any reſolution upon the meſſage ſent to this Houſe by your Hon^{r} the 27th of Nov, 1710 relating to the dividing of Counties & Pariſhes, becauſe we would endeavour to avoid all Controverſies with the Royal prerogative, altho' that Power hath been always exerciſ'd by the Legiſlative Authority The ſettlement of the Poſt Office in this Colony, recommended to us in the meſſage from your Hon^{r} at our laſt Seſſion, we think it ſufficiently eſtabliſh't by an Act of Parliament of Great Britain.

May it pleaſe your Hon^{r}

Nothing leſs than the deplorable State of our Fellow Subjects of North Carolina join'd with the juſt apprehenſions of the dangers hanging over our heads, from the common Enemy could ever have prevail'd with this Houſe to have made a reſolution to raiſe 20000£ at a time when our Staple Commodity will hardly afford neceſſaries for the ſupport of the People, &

our preſent Funds have prov'd in a great meaſure deficient, in purſuance of which reſolution this Houſe did apply themſelves with all Aſſiduity to find out ways to raiſe that Sum in ſuch manner as might be moſt agreeable to her Majeſty & leaſt burdenſome to her People, And when we had paſt a Bill for levying that Money & provided a competent Sum might be borrowed upon Intereſt for the more ſpeedy carrying on that Service for which it was intended, & leaſt the Funds on which the money propoſed to be raiſed, ſhou'd prove deficient had engaged the Publick Faith of this Houſe to ſupply what ſhou'd be wanting of that Sum, & had pray'd her Majeſty to accept thereof, & made humble Suit to your Hon^{r} that the Bill might paſs, We did beleive, we had perform'd our Duty to our Queen, & the People we repreſent, & if any misfortune ſhou'd befall this Country (which God avert) for want of that Succour which we deſire to give, we are humbly of Opinion that it cannot juſtly be laid to our Charge.

A Propoſal to the General Aſſembly by Mr Byrd.

WHEREAS the Clergy of this Colony have hitherto been paid their Salary in Tobacco, which falls abundantly Short of yielding the Value of 80£ ℔ Annum which the Law intended them & yet the Levy which raiſes that Tobacco is very Burdenſome to the poor Freeholders of this Dominion, it is therefore humbly propoſ'd that the ſaid Miniſters be hereafter paid in Current Money & that a further Duty of three Shillings be laid upon every Hhd, of Tobacco exported to defray that Charge for the following reaſons Viz.

1 Becauſe the ſaid Duty of 3/ ℔ Hhd, will at leaſt as eaſy to the exporters as it is at preſent; For ſuppoſing, for example, a Planter have 3 Titheables who with himſelf make 4000^{lbs} of good Tobacco one year with another which he puts into 5

Hhds, and thoſe will pay 15/ to this additional Duty: & ſuppoſing that now for himſelf & 3 titheables, at 75 lbs of Tobacco ℔ Poll he pays 300^{lbs} for the Pariſh Levy; I leave any man to judge if it be not as eaſy for him to pay 15/ as 300^{lb} of Tobacco of his own Crop.

2 It will totaly eaſe the poorer ſort of Freeholders, & others who dont export any Tobacco out of this Colony.

3 It will mend the price of our Tobacco in England, by leſſening the Quantity of Traſh which is now pack't up, becauſe tis thought good enough for the Parſon

4. It will create a great currency of Money in the Country, for then the Parſons will have Caſh to pay to the Carpenters, Smiths, or other Artiſans or Labourers that work for them, & they again will lay it out with the Merchants by which means Caſh & conſequently trade will circulate very briſkly.

5 It will be a means of having able miniſters come over for the preſent, & hereafter will encourage the Gentlemen of the Country to breed up their Sons at the Colledge in hopes of having a genteel proviſion for them, whenever they become fit for it.

It will give the Clergy more leiſure to apply themſelves to the duty of their Function, whereas now both their time & their thoughts are too much taken up in Collecting managing & Shipping their Tobacco & beſides it will beget in the common People a great Love for their Miniſters when they beleive them to be no charge or burden to them.

May it pleaſe y^{r} Hon^{r}

AS the conſtant Civilities your Hon^{r} has on all Occaſions expreſ't to the Council raiſes in us a ſuitable degree of Gratitude, ſo the experience we have of your Juſtice & Modera-

tion makes us hope you will not be diſpleaſed with this our Juſt & neceſſary repreſentation.

It was not without ſome uneaſineſs to us that were preſent, to find in the laſt Commiſſion of Oyer & Terminer ſome other Perſons join'd with the Council, but in regard no Criminal was then to be tried, & becauſe we were unwilling to ſhew a publick diſapprobation of what you had then been pleaſed to determine, we thought it moſt reſpectfull to your Hon^r^ not to abſent ourſelves, However we muſt now beg Leave in a decent & we hope more agreeable manner to make our exceptions to ſuch Commiſſion, & we hope you will not think it altogether without reaſon

When your Honour was pleaſed to cauſe her Majeſtys Inſtructions to be read in Council relating to this matter, & after ſome debates had ariſen about it, you was pleaſed to declare (if thoſe that were preſent remember rightly) that you had no intention to appoint any other perſon but the Council in that Commiſſion, And if it ſhould be otherwiſe we beſeech your Hon^r^ to reflect, how much the general Court will be diveſted of its Juriſdiction, which is not only founded upon the late Law but alſo upon the common uſage of this Dominion, no Inſtance being upon record that any other ſtated Court of Judicature, hath the Cogniſance of Life & Member but the general Court only; and with humble Submiſſion there is great reaſon it ſhould be ſo, for it would be hard that Men's Lives ſhou'd be try'd by more inferior Judges than their Fortunes, of which the laſt reſort in this Country is in the gen^l^ Court. Tho' we have the moſt intire confidence in your Honour's Juſtice and do firmly beleive that in all things you will act according to the niceſt Rules of Integrity & Honour, yet in times to come it may be our misfortune in your ſtedd to have a Governor who may make a very bad uſe of this precedent, In ſuch a Caſe we ſubmit it to your Honour's

penetration, how much leſs Security men's Lives and Liberties will be under than their Eſtates whenever it ſhall pleaſe God for the puniſhment of this Country, to put it under the direction of a reſenting & paſſionate Governor. It is poſſible ſome may object that in England, other Gentlemen are frequently added to the Judges in the Commiſſions of Oyer and Terminer, in their Circuits thro' the ſeveral Countys, and alſo that in this Country ſome Commiſſions of this kind have been iſſued for the tryal of the Pirates & Indians in extraordinary Caſes, to both theſe objections we beg leave to anſwer as follows.

We own the Judges in England do carry with them in their Circuits Commiſſions of Oyer & Terminer, wherein ſome Gentlemen of the reſpective County's are nam'd Aſſociates with them, But this is purely for the eaſe of the Country, that Priſoners may be tried without the trouble of ſending them up to the King's Bench, In the Circuits there is but one Judge to ſet on the pleas of the Crown, & therefore it may be thought neceſſary to join ſome other Perſons in Commiſſion with, but there is no inſtance of ſuch an addition to the Judges when they ſet upon Life & Death in the King's Bench which they often do

Thoſe Commiſſions which have iſſued in Virginia were ſent out for tryal of very uncommon & enormous Crimes, but we humbly preſume that ſuch extraordinary Courts can't with much reaſon be compared to a ſettled Court that hath its conſtant return twice a Year, that holds its Seſſions in the Metropolis of the Colony, & in the very ſeat of the general Court, & hath the cognizance of all breaches of the Peace as well as of Pleas that concern Life & member.

Since it has been inſinuated to your Hon^{r} that in Council in adviſing the continuance of this Court had too much regard to the allowance granted for that purpoſe, we humbly beg leave to repeat the ſame explanation of our meaning that ſome of us

made uſe of at the time it was debated, to wit, that if we were oblig'd to leave our affairs at home & come & attend this Court, we had a fair claim to the Salary, but if your Hon^{r} would pleaſe to diſpatch timely notice to us, that no Criminals are to be try'd, that then being put to no Trouble we ſhould not expect any pay.

Upon the whole matter we entreat your Hon^{r} to obſerve, that when we were appointed Members of the Council we found this Juriſdiction confin'd only to the Judges of the general Court, and we ſhould be unwilling that our Suceſſors ſhould reproach us with having willingly departed from it.

However we dont preſume to meaſure the prerogatives of the Crown in ſuch matters but humbly hope that Her Majeſty will be graciouſly pleaſed to ſuffer ſuch affairs to proceed in the uſual method except where unuſual accidents ſhall require an extraordinary exertion of her Royal Power.

However if your Hon^{r} ſhall ſee cauſe to be of a different Opinion, and ſhall ſtill be pleaſed in theſe Courts to join other Perſons with the Council, we humbly beg you will have the goodneſs to diſpenſe with our attendance on ſuch occaſions for the future, And ſhall think ourſelves very unfortunate in having Sentiments in this only buſineſs oppoſite to your Hon$^{r's}$ being with all the reſpect and duty in the World Y^{r} Hon^{rs} moſt Faithfull and moſt humble Servants.

IN Obedience to the Directions of the Right Hon^{ble} Sidney Lord Godolphin Lord High Treaſurer of England in the following Words. After my very hearty Commendation, whereas I have received Information from Francis Nickolſon her Majeſty's late Lieutenant & Governor General of Virginia that William Byrd Eſq^{r} Receiver & Caſhier of her Majeſty's Revenues there is lately deceaſed and that an Accompt of the

Collections & Receipts to the 25th of October laſt had been laid before the Governor & her Majeſty's Council by the Truſtees of the ſaid Wm Byrd whereby a Ballance of £7698, 9s, 10d appeared to be due to her Majeſty, beſides what may be owing by the ſaid Wm Byrd from the time of making up his ſaid Accompt. To the End therefore that a final Accompt of the ſaid William Byrd may be forthwith made up & the Ballance accounted for to her Majeſty. I hereby pray & deſire you upon receipt hereof to call before you William Byrd Eſqr Son & Executor of the ſaid William Byrd lately deceaſed and to cauſe him to produce unto you the Accompt of his ſaid Father from the time of his Firſt taking upon him the Collection & receipt of her Majeſty's Duty's & Revenues to the time of his Death, which Accompts you are carefully to examine together with their reſpective Vouchers & to certify & tranſmit unto me your Obſervations thereupon in ſuch Manner as may be moſt ſatiſfying & conducing to the full & perfect Recovery of all money's which ſhall be found to have been due and owing to her Majeſty from the ſaid William Byrd deceaſed by reaſon of any Duty's & Revenues whatſoever to her Majeſty belonging, and wherewith the ſaid Byrd was chargeable at the time of his Death. and ſo I bid you very heartily Farewell, From the Treaſury Chambers in Whitehall the 4th day of June 1705. Your very loving Friend

GODOLPHIN

To my very loving Friend Edward Nott Eſqr Her Majeſty's Lieut, & Governor Generall and to her Majeſty's Council of the Colony & Dominion of Virginia and to the Cheif Governor and Council thereof for time being

We have called before us us William Byrd Eſqr Son & Executor of the ſaid William Byrd Eſqr late Auditor & Receiver general of Virginia who hath produced to us his Father's Accompts, from the time of his entering upon the ſaid Office

(which was the 20th day of June 1688) to the day of his Death, It appears to us that a Ballance of £46, 4s, 10½d was due from his predeceſſor Nathaniel Bacon Eſqr Auditor and Receiver General of Virginia but not paid unto him the ſaid William Byrd till the Year 1695 when there is Credit given for it in two Articles viz One in the Accompt of 2/ ℔ Hhd &C fol. 7. And the other in the Accompt of the Quitrents. fol. 7. We find that the ſaid William Byrd received all her Majeſty's Revenues Quitrents, Forfeitures, Compoſition for Eſcheats, Revenues of 2/ ℔ Hhd & Port Duty's &C from the ſaid time of his entering upon his Office to the day of his Death which happened on the 4th day of December 1704 of all which his Son & Executor William Byrd Eſqr, hath laid before us the Accompts, in two diſtinct Books, the one entituled an Accompt of Quitrents &C. The other entituled an Accompt of the Revenue of 2/ ℔ Hhd, In the firſt of theſe Accompts the Late William Byrd is charged with the Receipt of all Quitrents & Compoſition for Eſcheats. The charge of the Quitrents hath been made out to us by the Rentrolls of the ſeveral Countys of Virginia under the hands of the reſpective Sheriffs of thoſe Counties from Year to Year, only there are wanting the particular Rentrolls of ſome Countys for ſome years as follows. Viz. Of Rappahannock County in 1690 & 1691. of Iſle of Wight in 1696. of Accomack in 1697 & 1699 of James City in 1698. of Gloceſter in 1700 & 1702. for want of which Rentrolls we could not exactly ſtate the Charge of the Quitrents of thoſe Years in the ſaid particular Countys. but by comparing them with the Rentrolls of the ſaid Countys in Other Years, We ſee no reaſon to induce us to ſuſpect that the Sum of thoſe Quitrents was any other than we find Accounted for by the ſaid William Byrd in the ſaid Accompts of Quitrents, As to the Compoſition of Eſcheats after the moſt diligent enquiry into the returns of Eſcheats into the Secretary's Office, we can find no

more Eſcheats nor any greater Compoſition for them than is here accounted for by the ſaid William Byrd, We have likewiſe examined the diſburſement for which the ſaid William Byrd gives himſelf Credit upon the ſaid Accompts of Quitrents and find that all thoſe diſburſements were duly made by Warrants from under the Hands of the reſpective Governors of this Country for the time being and in purſuance of Orders from the Lord high Treaſurer or the Commiſſioners of the Treaſury of England for the time being, and no otherwiſe, All which Warrants & Orders of Treaſury together with the Receipts & endorſements of the Perſons to whom the ſeveral Payments thereupon were made; We have duly inſpected and find there was due to her Majeſty from the ſaid William Byrd, at the time of his Death upon the ſaid Accompts of Quitrents & Compoſition for Eſcheats &C the Sum of 5745£, 10^{s}, 1½^{d} Sterling, We have likewiſe examined the Accompts entituled an Accompt of her Majeſty's Revenue of 2/ ℔ Hhd, Port Dutys, & head Money, &C All which Dutys were raiſed & appropriated by Act of Aſſembly in the Country for the ſupport of the Government & defraying the contingent charges thereof, & as to the Receipts of this Accompt we have ſeen ſufficient Vouchers from the Accounts of the Naval Officers of this Country who collected the ſame, which Accompts of the Naval Officers have been yearly made up according to direction from time to time by the Government here & nothing appears to induce us to beleive that the ſaid William Byrd received any more Money on that Accompt than he gives Credit to her Majeſty for, We have likewiſe examined into the diſburſements of that Revenue. and find that the uſual Salarys to the Governor, Council, Auditor of Virginia Dutys, Sollicitor of the Virginia Affairs, Attorney gen^{l}, Clerk of the Council, &C have from time to time been duly paid, as appears by Warrants under the hands of the reſpective Governors for the time being, and endorſed by the

ſeveral Perſons in this Country to whom thoſe payments were made & ordered, whatever other payments are charged in this Accompt, we find that the ſaid William Byrd had Warrants under the hands of the Governor for the time being, for them, & the ſaid Warrants together with the Endorſement of the Perſons to whom the ſeveral payments were ordered, have been produced before us, ſo that for any thing that appears to us there is nothing due to her Majeſty from the Eſtate of the ſaid William Byrd more than the ſum of £1938, 16, 9¾ upon this Accompt of the Revenues & the abovemention'd Ballance on the Accompt of the Quitrents for which two Sums due at the Death of his Father & the Accrueing Dutys & Revenues to her Majeſty the preſent Receiver General William Byrd the Son hath given good Security to be accountable.

The above Report was agreed on & prepared by the Late Governor & Council, but His Excellency dying before the ſame cou'd be ſign'd by him is now humbly ſubmitted to the Conſideration of the Lord high Treaſurer of England by

Edward Jennings Preſid[t]		Philip Ludwell
Dudley Diggs,	Rob[t] Carter.	William Bassett
Ben Harrison.	James Blair.	Henry Duke

To the Right Hon[ble] the Lords of the Council for Trade & Plantations

The Humble Repreſentation of the Council of Virginia.

May it pleaſe your Lordſhips.

THE Plantations have reaſon to account themſelves happy that her Majeſty in her great Wiſdom hath made choice of your Lordſhips to preſide over their Affairs & to lay before her from time to time a true ſtate of theſe remote parts of her Empire that the propereſt meaſures may be taken to render them uſefull to Great Britain, & moſt happy to themſelves, We

depend upon it very firmly that your Lordſhips are always very well pleaſed to receive ſuch repreſentations as tend to the Intereſt of our moſt gracious Queen, & the good of her People, & tis upon this Confidence my Lords that we preſume to acquaint you, with the preſent unhappy Circumſtances of this Colony with reſpect to the Tobacco Trade.

The great Diſadvantage which that Trade hath for ſome Years lain under by reaſon of the heavy Duty's, have been ſufficiently made out of late by the Merchants of England, it is more our province humbly to lay before your Lordſhips the wretched effects which the declenſion of that Trade hath had upon this Colony, It is moſt Evident that all the miſchiefs which happen to the Sale of Tobacco fall either immediately or alternately upon the Planter. If he venture home his Tobacco at his own requeſt & it yeilds nothing, or worſe than nothing (which is frequently the Caſe) the loſs lights directly upon the Planter, or if in diſtruſt of the Market he ſells it to the Merchant, & he loſe by it, tis certain the next time he will afford the Planter little or nothing for his Tobacco. Thus either way he will not fail to be the looſer and the Load at laſt muſt fall on thoſe who had the misfortune to make it. We are ſorry to acquaint your Lordſhips that is not only an Idle Speculation, or a conſequence in proſpect, but a melancholly Fact too often experienced by moſt of the Inhabitants of this Country Thoſe who have Negroes for the moſt part have brought themſelves in debt by continuing to plant Tobacco notwithſtanding all the Induſtry & management they cou'd make uſe of. Nay thoſe who have been moſt Induſtrious have taken moſt pains to be undone, Then as for the poorer People, who in ſpite of all diſcouragement have continued to work in this unprofitable Commodity they have every Year convinced themſelves that their hardeſt Labour will not purchaſe Cloaths to cover their nakedneſs; While thoſe, who had by repeated experiment been

diſappointed of neceſſaries by planting Tobacco have fallen upon manufactures to cloath their nak'd Families, and ſucceeded ſo happily that they are the only part of the comon People who are tolerably cloath'd, We need not uſe many Arguments to convince your Lordſhips how ſoon the reſt will follow ſo eaſy an example, when the ſucceſs of their Neighbours on one hand, & their own neceſſities on the other, will both perſuade & drive them to it.

Now my Lords the certain conſequence of this muſt be that except a ſpeedy & effectual remedy be apply'd the unhappy Buſineſs of Planting Tobacco will dwindle every Year till it be altogether left off, People will not follow a Trade to their undoing, & tho' they have purſued it longer than any Body could expect under ſuch cruel diſcouragements, yet when their diſtreſſed Families cry'd aloud upon them for neceſſaries, they muſt take the fitteſt method to releive them, If Tobacco wont yield them ſufficient to cloath them with the manufactures of Great Britain, they muſt apply themſelves to manufactures of their own, to the utter neglect of Tobacco, the Trade of which muſt be intirely loſt. And can it ever be for her Majeſty's Service or for the Intereſt of her Subjects to drop a Trade ſo vaſtly beneficial as that of Tobacco; A Trade that every Year employs ſo many Ships, & is ſo fruitfull a nurſery for Seamen: A Trade that ſets ſo many poor People at work both in Great Britain & America: That occaſions ſo great a demand Yearly of Britiſh Manufactures; and conſequently ſo greatly improves the Value of the Land that produces thoſe manufactures; and above all a Trade which ſo abundantly helps to Ballance the Commerce of Great Britain with foreign Parts, which wou'd otherwiſe every Year drain mighty Sums of Specie from thence. Theſe my Lords are very Subſtantial Advantages & richly worth preſerving & improving to the utmoſt. But your Lordſhips will agree that can't poſſibly be done, without care be taken that the

Planters, who are to make this uſefull Commodity, may have a ſuitable return for their Labour. It can never be imagined that men will be content to work hard all the Year round except they can have ſome hopes it will produce neceſſaries for themſelves & their Children.

This is not a Clymate that will ſuffer People to go naked, on the contrary the weather has very great exceſſes both of heat & Cold, And therefore if Tobacco will not furniſh Cloathing to protect them from the injuries of the Clymate neceſſity muſt force them upon other meaſures, They have before their Eyes many inſtances of ſuch of their Neighbours as have already ſucceeded in the attempt, Beſides they have all poſſible encouragement from the kindly productions of the Country. Sheep thrive in it very tolerably, & ſince the late neceſſity's of the Inhabitants, have been greatly propagated.

Cotton grows in moſt places with little Labour, & great encreaſe, Flax & Hemp thrive no where more plentifully. Here are mighty numbers of Cattle, & other wild Creatures, to yield Leather of every Sort. Several parts of the Country produce rich Iron-Oar, which will admit of vaſt Improvements. In ſhort my Lords here may be found materials of every kind to furniſh conveniences of Cloathing, Tools & Houſhold, neither is there wanting Tradeſmen of all Sorts to improve theſe advantages to the higheſt upon the whole matter conſidering the Bounty of Nature in the aforeſaid particulars, We cannot believe it hath been for the Intereſt of Great Britain that ſo great diſcouragements have been laid upon Tobacco, as to force the Planter in ſpite of his inclination to taſt the ſweet of ſo many other Improvements.

But ſince this hath ſo happened, there is now no way left to call People back to plant Tobacco, but to remove ſuch hardſhips from the Trade as may make it worth the Planters while

to follow it, ſuch encouragements at leaſt ſhould be allowed him therein, as that he may not be driven by neceſſity to follow employments much leſs for the benefit of Great Britain If this be not ſpeedily done, the Trade with all its mighty Advantages muſt be loſt, And beſides when the People here ſhall no longer depend on their mother Country for neceſſaries, they will by degrees cool in that warm affection towards it, for which they always moſt remarkably diſtinguiſh themſelves.

Such my Lords is the unhappy Condition of this her Majeſty's moſt loyal Colony of Virginia, and without Queſtion Maryland labours under the ſame ſever circumſtances. The diſeaſe is indeed ſo dangerous, that calls aloud for a ſpeedy & effectual Cure, However what that Cure muſt be, we dont preſume to preſent; but moſt intirely ſubmit it to your Lordſhips wiſdom, whoſe perpetual Endeavours are employ'd for the ſervice of her Majeſty, & the proſperity of her Subjects

We have the Honour to be with the humbleſt reſpect
Your Lordſhips
moſt obedient & moſt humble Servants.

The Method of making Tar in Muſcovy.

1 CHOICE being firſt made of the fatteſt Fir Trees, which are full of Turpentine,[1] they are bark'd in the Month of October from the bottom Eight foot high (except a Slip of 3 or 4 Fingers broad which is left on one[2] Side quite up) and in this Condition the Trees are to ſtand at leaſt for a Year, if for two or three it is ſtill better, The Turpentine ſettling in the mean time in the part that is bark'd.

2 When ready for uſe, the Tree is cut down generally in the Winter for the conveniency of Sledway, and the part which is

1 Several Perſons agree the Trees muſt be bark'd in October & not in the Spring.

2 The Slips of Bark are to be left on the North Side.

bark'd is cut off, and carried to the place where 'tis deſign'd to burn. Split at full Lengths into Billets about the thickneſs of a man's Arm, and laid in Piles Six foot high, that a computation may be made of the Tar it will yield.

3 For the burning a Clay Ground is choſen, a Trench is made the wood piled up 30 or 40 Fathom more or leſs as there is proviſion, covered with Earth & the Fire kindled, juſt after the ſame Method as is uſed in burning Charcoal, If tis a looſe or ſandy Ground, the bottom of the Trench muſt be well plaſter'd with Clay.

4 The Trench is made deepeſt in the middle, after the Form of a Shallow Trey, For the Tar which Sweats out of the Wood by the heat to ſettle and run off by a little Channel or drain made of Fir Bark under the Ground into a Hogſhead or Tub, which is placed at ſome diſtance lower than the bottom of the Trench.

5 If the Weather is dry & calm that the wood burns ſlowly, it produces more and better Tar than if it is windy and burns faſt, if it be wet or damp weather the Tar will be watry, and in that[1] Caſe, muſt be ſeperated & cleaned afterwards.

6 Store of Caſks muſt be ready to barrel the[2] Tar, as faſt as tis made.

7 A Fathom of Wood at full Length, ſix foot broad & as

1 Tis clean'd only by tapping the Caſk at the end or on the Side, & letting it Stand a night & the Water will gather there & run off.

2 The Ruſſians have a method of preſerving theirs in large Chambers which are dug into the Sides of a mountain on the Lake of Ladoga. The bottom, Sides & top are laid with Beams of Fir well jointed & Calk'd, & the Roof ſupported by props in the middle, on the Roof & Sides, they ramm Clay or Earth, but a large funnel is left at the top for pouring in the Tar & a little door on the Side next the water, from whence by the help of a pipe & Cork 'tis conveyed into the Caſk when on board the Boats, by this means the Tar is preſerved from freezing & Leakage & a great deal of labour ſav'd.

many high is computed to produce a[1] Laſt of Tar, ſometimes more but often Leſs.

To make Plaſter to reſemble Aſhler.

TAKE Lime, drift Sand, & ſtone Duſt, a like Quantity of each, the Lime muſt be freſh, and of the ſtrongeſt Sort, which muſt be Slacked and ſifted fine, the Sand is ſuch as is found in Streams of Water, muſt be ſifted thro' ſeives one degree after an other, till it comes to be as fine as muſtard Seed, after which it muſt be waſhed clean from Duſt or Loam; the Stone Duſt muſt be had from any Quarry or Place, where Stones are uſually wrought or ſaiv'd, and if the duſt be not fine enough, it muſt be pounded with a Sledge as fine as can be; when all is ready, then mix an equal Quantity of each together, and with Beaters let it be wrought in manner of Plaſter Mortar, and well turned and beaten and intermixed every day, for 6 days before it be uſed; it cannot be too often turned, and beaten; which muſt be done on planks, or on a Stone Floor, ſo that no dirt or duſt be raiſed to mix with it, but when the Lime, ſand and Stone Duſt are all ready, it need not be mixed or wrought till about a fortnight before it is to be uſed. The muſt be a very good ſtrong Plaiſter Mortar made as is uſually put on walls for the firſt Coat of Plaiſtering, and made after the common way of Plaiſter Mortar, with good freſh Lime, common Sand, and as muſt Hair as can well be wrought into it, which muſt be extra-ordinary well tempered for a week or nine days, and lye near as long to prevent bliſtering, When both are ready, let all the old Mortar be ſcraped clean off the joints of the wall, and then with a Bruſh dipped in Water, moiſten the wall very well, Then

[1] Twelve barrels make a Laſt.

immediately lay on the Plaiſter Mortar of a moderate thickneſs, to lye as levell and even as can be, and whilſt that retains a moiſture in it (be ſure before it be dry) let another good hand follow and lay on with a Trowell, the finiſhing Mortar near about a quarter of an Inch thick upon the firſt Coat, and as it dries muſt with Boards (called Floats) rub it, and grind it in extraordinary well, to incorporate it with the firſt Coat, and Continue floating it, until thorough dry; It will crack in the working, but the Workmen muſt keep a Bruſh and water by to moiſten the Cracks, & continue with the Floats to grind it in backwards and forward for two days till thoroughly dry, and incorporated with the firſt, But before 'tis too dry, let the Workman with a Rule and Iron for the purpoſe, put it into ſquares and joints of ſuch Size as you pleaſe, not forgetting to break Joynts one under the other, and if you would have the Coins higher and more prominent in imitation of Ruſtick, it muſt be wrought higher and bolder in the firſt Mortar, and the finiſhing Mortar need not be much thicker than before, the Colour may be ſomewhat altered by adding a ſmall Quantity of either Sort.

Suppoſe Freeſtone Duſt may do.

SIR William Keith had been Surveyor Gen^{l}, of the Cuſtoms in the Southern Diſtrict of America, For ſome Years & was afterwards Governor of Penſylvania under M^{r} Penn for a conſiderable time, But he was ſo very expenſive a Man that he ſaved nothing in either of theſe Employments. on the Contrary he plunged deeper in Debt than he was before, inſomuch that when he return'd to England he was oblig'd to go abroad with great Caution, and to have many Faſt Days at home, The following Piece he wrote to recommend Himſelf, at the Ex-

penſe of the American Colonies, in which no man ever met with more Civilitys.

But as it happen'd he neither hurt them by this Performance, nor benefited Himſelf, Indeed the Miniſtry muſt have been very little Acquainted indeed with theſe Parts of the World not to find out many injudicious obſervations therein, which carry'd plain Marks of the Reaſon for which he wrote them. But the Work itſelf will beſt ſhew its Author & therefore I ſhall ſet it down at Full Length as follows.

A ſhort Diſcourſe on the preſent State of the Colonies in America, with Reſpect of Great Britain, By Sir William Keith.

HAPPY are the People whoſe Lot is to be govern'd by a Prince who does not wholly depend upon the Repreſentation of others; but makes it a Cheif Part of his Delight to inſpect into the Condition of his Subjects according to their Several Ranks & Degrees; who from the force of his own Mind diſtinguiſhes the true Merit of His Servants, leaving the Liberties & Properties of his People to be Equally guarded & juſtly defended by a Punctual Execution of the Laws.

The unbounded Extent of Knowledge to be dayly acquired by the Judicious Enquirys & Application of ſuch a Prince, will ſoon aboliſh the uſe of Flattery, & the pernicious Effects of all deſign'd Miſrepreſentations. The Paths of Virtue & Honour, with a Strict Adherence to Truth, will be the only Avenues of Acceſs to the Sovereigns Eſteem, & the Royal Favour in ſuch a Reign, will ever be agreeably diſpenced, in Proportion to the uſefull Conduct & true Merits of the Party.

Introduction

So great an Example from the Throne, will doubtleſs inſpire every honeſt breaſt with a better Share of Publick Spirit, men's Thoughts will not then be ſo intent upon what they can get for

themſelves, as on what they can do for their Country, And for ſuch Parts of the Princes Prerogative & Executive Power, as neceſſarily muſt be entruſted with Miniſters, they will ever be thought an advantage and Security to a Nation, while the Conduct of a Miniſtry Shines principally in the Support of Liberty, which cannot Fail to to gain the Hearts & Affections of a Free People.

On a Provincial Dependant Government.

When either by Conqueſt on Encreaſe of People, Foreign Provinces are poſſeſſed, & Colonies planted abroad, it is convenient & often neceſſary to ſubſtitute little Dependant Governments, whoſe People by being enfranchiſed, & made Partakers of the Priviledges & Libities belonging to the Original Mother State, are juſtly bound by its Laws, & become ſubſervient to its Intereſts as the true End of their Incorporation.

Every Act of Dependant Provincial Governments ought therefore to Terminate in the Advantage of the Mother State, unto whom it ows its being, & Protection in all its valuable Priviledges, Hence it follows that all Advantageous Projects or Commercial Gains in any Colony, which are truly prejudicial to & inconſiſtent with the Intereſts of the Mother State, muſt be underſtood to be illegal, & the Practice of them unwarrantable, becauſe they Contradict the End for which the Colony had a being, & are incompatible with the Terms on which the People Claim both Priviledges & Protection.

On a Britiſh Colony in America.

Were theſe Things rightly underſtood amongſt the Inhabitants of the Britiſh Colonies in America, there wou'd be leſs Occaſion for ſuch Inſtructions & Strict Prohibitions, as are dayly ſent from England to regulate their Conduct in many Points; the very Nature of the King wou'd be ſufficient to direct their Choice in cultivating ſuch Parts of Induſtry & Commerce only as wou'd bring ſome Advantage to the Intereſt & Trade of Great Britain, & they wou'd ſoon find by Experience that this was the ſolid & true Foundation whereon to build a

real Intereſt in their Mother Country, & the certain Means to acquire Riches without Envy.

On the Other Hand where the Government of a Provincial Colony is well regulated, & all its buſineſs & Commerce truly adapted to the proper End, & deſign of its Firſt Settlement; Such a Province like a Choice Branch, ſpringing from the Main Root ought to be carefully nouriſh'd, & its juſt Intereſt well guarded; No little Partial Projector Party Gain, ſhou'd be Suffered to affect it, but rather it ought to be conſidered & weigh'd in the General Ballance of the whole State as a uſefull & profitable Member.

For ſuch is the End of all Colonies, & if this Uſe cannot be made of them, it wou'd be much better for the State to be without them.

On the Advantages ariſing to Britain from the Trade of the Colonies

It has ever been the Maxim of all Polite Nations, to regulate their Government to the beſt Advantage of their Trading Intereſt wherefore it may be helpful to take a Short View of the principal benefits ariſing to Great Britain by the Trade of the Colonies.

1 The Colonies take off & conſume above one Sixth Part of the woolen Manufactures exported from Britain which is the Cheif Staple of England & main Support of all the Landed Intereſt.

2 They take off & conſume more than double that Value in Linnin and Callicoes, which is either the Product of Britain & Ireland, or partly the profitable Returns made for that Product carried to Foreign Countries.

3 The Luxury of the Colonies which encreaſes daily conſumes great Quantities of Engliſh Manufactured Silks. Haberdaſhery, Houſehold Furniture, & Trinkets of all Sorts, alſo a very conſiderable value in Eaſt India Goods.

4 A Great Revenue is raiſed to the Crown of Britain by returns made in the Produce of the Plantations, eſpecially To-

bacco, which at the ſame time helps England to bring nearer to a Ballance their unprofitable Trade with France.

5 Theſe Colonies promote the Intereſt & Trade of Britain by a vaſt encreaſe of Shipping & Seamen, which enables them to carry great Quantitys of Fiſh to Spain, Portugal, Leghorn &C, Furs, Logwood & Ricé to Holland, where they help Great Britain conſiderably in the Ballance of Trade with thoſe Countrys.

6 If reaſonably encouraged the Colonies are now in a Condition to furniſh Britain with as much of the following Commodities as it can demand Vizt, Maſting for the Navy, & all Sorts of Timber, Hemp, Flax, Pitch, Tar, Oyl, Roſin Copper-Oar, with Pig & Bar Iron; by means whereof the Ballance of Trade to Ruſſia & the Baltick, may be very much reduced in Favour of great Britain.

7 The Profits ariſing to all theſe Colonies by Trade, are return'd in Bullion or other Effects uſefull to Great Britain, where the Superfluous Caſh & other Riches acquired in America, muſt Center; which is not one of the leaſt Securities that great Britain has to keep the Colonies always in Subjection.

8 The Colonies upon the Main are the Granary of America, & a neceſſary Support to the Sugar Plantations in the Weſt Indies which cou'd indeed not Subſiſt without them.

By this ſhort View, the Trade in General we may plainly underſtand that thes Colonies can be very beneficially employed both for Great Britain & themſelves, without interfering with any of the Staple Manufactures of England, & conſidering the Bulk & End of whole Traffick, twere pity that any Material Branch of it ſhou'd be depreſſed on Account of the private End & particular Intereſts which in Compariſon with theſe cannot Juſtly be eſteemed a National Concern, For if the Trade of the Colonies be the Advantage of Britain, there is nothing more certain that the diſcouragement of any Subſtantial Branch for

the Sake of any Company or private Intereſt wou'd be a loſs to the Nation. But in Order to ſet this Point yet in a clearer Light, we will proceed to conſider ſome of the moſt Obvious Regulations in the America Trade, for the rendering the Colonies truly ſerviceable to Great Britain

Regulations in the Plantation Trade

1 That all the Product in Colonies, for which the Manufacture & Trade of Britain has a conſtant Demand, be Enumerated amongſt the Goods which by the Law muſt Firſt be tranſported to Britain before they can be carried to any other Market.

2 That every valuable Merchandize to be found in the Engliſh Colonies and rarely any where elſe, & for which there is a Conſtant Demand in Europe, ſhall alſo be Enumerated in Order to aſſiſt Great Britain in the Ballance of Trade with other Countries.

3 That all kind of Woolen Manufactures for which the Colonies have a Demand, ſhall continue to be brought from Britain only, & Linnen from Great Britain & Ireland.

4 All other kind of European Commodities to be carried to the Colonies (Salt excepted) Entry thereof firſt to be made in Britain, before they can be tranſported to any of the Engliſh Colonies.

5 The Colonies to be abſolutely reſtrained in their ſeveral Governments from laying any Manner of Duties on Shipping of Trade from Europe; or upon European Goods tranſported from one Colony to another.

6 That the Acts of Parliament relating to the Trade & Government of the Colonies be reviſed, & collected into one diſtinct Body of Laws, for the uſe of the Plantations & ſuch as Trade with them.

Suppoſing theſe Things to be done, it will Evidently follow, that the more extenſive the Trade of the Colonies is, the greater will be the Advantage accrueing to Great Britain therefrom & conſequently that Enlargement of the Colonies, & the Encreaſe

of their People, would ſtill be an Addition to the National Strength; all ſmaller Improvements therefore pretended unto, & ſet up by the leſſer Societies for private Gain in Great Britain or elſewhere, altho' they might have a juſt Pretence to bring ſome Sort of Publick Benefit along with them, yet if they ſhall appear to be hurtfull to the much greater & more National Concern of the Trading uſefull Colonies, they ought in Juſtice to the Publick to be neglected in favour to them; It being an unalterable Maxim that a leſſer Publick Good muſt give place to a greater, & that it is of more moment to maintain a greater than a leſſer number of Subjects well employed to the advantage of any State.

On the Legiſlative Power.

From what has been ſaid of the Nature of Colonies & the reſtriction that ought to be laid on their Trade, is in plain that none of the Engliſh Plantations in America can with any reaſon or good ſence pretend to claim an Abſolute Legiſlative Power within themſelves; ſo that let their ſeveral Conſtitutions be founded on Ancient Charters, Royal Patent, Cuſtom, Preſcription or what other Legal Authority You pleaſe, yet ſtill they cannot be poſſeſſed of any rightfull Capacity to contradict or evade the force of any Act of Parliament wherewith the Wiſdom of Great Britain may think fit to effect them from time to time, & in diſcourſing of their Legiſlative Power (improperly ſo called in a dependant Government) we are to conſider them only as ſo many Corporations at a diſtance inveſted with Ability to make Temporary By Laws for themſelves agreeable to their Reſpective Situations & Clymates, but no ways interfering with the Legal Prerogative of the Crown or the true Legiſlative Power of the Mother State.

If the Governors & General Aſſemblys of the Several Colonies wou'd be pleaſ'd to conſider themſelves in this Light, one wou'd think it was impoſſible that they wou'd be ſo weak as to fancy, they repreſented the King, Lords & Commons of Great

Britain within their little Diſtricts; And indeed the uſeleſs or rather hurtfull & inconſiſtent Conſtitution of a Negative Council in all the Kings Provincial Governments has it is beleived contributed to lead them into this miſtake, For ſo long as the King as reſerved unto himſelf in his Privy Council the Conſideration of, & Negative upon all their Laws, the Method of appointing a few of the Richeſt & Proudeſt Men in a ſmall Colony as an upper Houſe, with a Negative on the Proceedings of the King's Lieutenant Governor, & the People's Repreſentations ſeem not only to Cramp the natural Liberty of the Subject there, but alſo the Kings Juſt Power & Prerogative.

For it often happens that very reaſonable & good Bills, ſometimes propoſed for the benefit of the Crown by the Wiſdom of a good Governor & at other times offered by the People's Repreſentatives in behalf of their Conſtituents, have been loſt, & the Enacting of ſuch made impracticable by the Obſtinacy in the Majority in the Council, only becauſe ſuch Kings did not Square with their particular Private Intereſt & Gain, or with the Views which they form to themſelves by aſſuming an imaginary Rank & Dignity above all the reſt of the King's Subjects. And as to the Security which is pretended that either the Crown or a Proprietary may have by ſuch a negative Council, it is in Fact quite otherwiſe, for that Caution wou'd be much better ſecured, if this Council was only a Council of State to adviſe with the Governor, and be conſtant witneſs of all Publick Tranſactions, & it cannot be thought that an Officer who is not only under Oaths & Bonds, but anſwerable by Law for his Miſdeeds, & removable at Pleaſure, wou'd in the Face of witneſſes ſo appointed, contradict a Rational Advice, thereby Subjecting himſelf to grievous Penalties, and loſs, neither is it to be ſuppoſed that theſe Men, if they had only the Priviledge of adviſing, would oppoſe ſuch good Bills, or other reaſonable Propoſitions as they well know, they had no Legal Power to reject, but while they

find themſelves poſſeſſed of a peremptory Negative, without being in any Sort accountable, for their Opinions, it is eaſy to be imagined, how ſuch a Power may be uſed on many Occaſions to ſerve their Private Intereſts & Views in Trade, as well as to indulge the too natural Propenſity which Mankind have, eſpecially abroad, to rule over and Oppreſs their poor Neighbours; beſides an Artfull corrupt Governor will find Means by Preferment &C, ſo to influence a Negative Council that knowing themſelves to be under no bonds or any other Valuable Penalty, to anſwer the Party aggrieved by their Opinions, they may without Riſque proceed in ſuch a Manner as to ſkreen the Governor in many things, which otherwiſe he is perſonally & Singly bound to Account for, in a legal & juſt way.

If then a Council of State only to adviſe with the Governor, ſhall appear in all Emergencies & Caſes that can be propoſed to be equally uſefull & not attended with the inconſiſtances, Obſtructions & Advantages of a Negative Council, the one ſeems to be much Preferable to the other, & more agreable to that Liberty & juſt Equality which is eſtabliſht by the Common Law, amongſt Engliſh Men, & conſequently leſs productive of thoſe Grievances & Complaints which have been ſo frequent hitherto from the Plantations. At firſt View it will appear natural enough for an Engliſhman who has taſted the Sweetneſs of that Freedom which is enjoyed under the King, Lords & Commons of Great Britain to imagine that a third Part ſhould be form'd in the little Governments of the Plantations in the imitation of the Houſe of Lords, but if we rightly conſider it, that part of the Conſtitution is already moſt properly & fully ſupply'd by the Lords of his Majeſty's Privy Council; beſides let us ſuppoſe that inſtead of an Houſe of Lords in Britain, a like number of Select Commoners were inveſted with a Power to ſit a Part & to put a Negative upon the Proceedings of the Houſe of Commons, conſiſting of Three times the Number of Perſons of

Equal Rank repreſenting all the Commons of Great Britain in Parliament, the inconſiſtency & unreaſonableneſs of the Thing does preſently obtrude itſelf upon our Minds, And yet ſuch is the very Caſe of that Negative which is now practiſed by the Council in America.

On the Civil Juriſdiction.

Next to the Legiſlative Power we ſhall proceed to conſider the Civil Juriſdiction in the Plantations, which by their own Acts is branched out into ſo many different Forms almoſt in each Colony, that it is ſcarce practicable to reduce them under ſuch Heads in any on diſcourſe as to make it intelligible to thoſe who are altogether unacquainted with American Affairs.

It is generally acknowledged in the Plantations that the Subject is entituled by Birth & Right unto the benefit of the Common Law of England, but then as the common Law has been altered from time to time, & reſtricted by Statutes it is ſtill a Queſtion in many of the American Courts of Judicature wether any of the Engliſh Statutes which do not particularly mention the Plantations can be of Force there until they brought it over by ſome Act of Aſſembly in that Colony where they are pleaded; And this creates ſuch Confuſion, that according to the Art or influence of the Lawyers, before Judges who by their Education are but indifferently Qualified for that Service, they allow the Force of the particular Statutes, and at other times reject the whole eſpecially if the Bench is inclinable to be partial, which too often happens in thoſe new & unſettled Countries; & as Mens Liberties & Properties in any Country chiefly depend on an impartial and Equal Adminiſtration of Juſtice, this is one of the moſt Material Grievances which the Subjects of America have juſt Cauſe to complain of; But while for the want of Schools & other proper Inſtructions, in the Principles of Moral Vertue, their People are not ſo well Qualified even to ſerve upon Juries, & much leſs to Act on a Bench of Judicature, It ſeems impracticable to provide a Remedy until a Sufficient Revenue

be found out amongſt them to ſupport the Charges of ſending Judges from England to take their Circuits by turns, on the ſeveral Colonies on the Main, which if thought worthy of a Conſideration will appear neither to be improper nor unpracticable; & until that can be done all other Attempts to rectify their Courts of Law will be fruitleſs, & may therefore be Suſpended.

Courts of Chancery which are known to be neceſſary in many Caſes to correct the ſeverity of the Common Law, ſeems to ſubſiſt there on a moſt pernicious Foot; for it does not appear that there is a proper & Legal Authority to hold ſuch a Court in any of the Colonies. Nevertheleſs by Cuſtom every where, ſome kind of Chymera is to be found in ſome Form or another, ſo that where a Rich Man deſigns to conteſt any thing in diſpute againſt his poor Neighbour, if he can contrive to bring it into Chancery, he is ſure the Buſineſs will rarely or never be brought to Iſſue, which on many Occaſions proves an intollerable Oppreſſion wherefore 'tis hoped that ſo high a Juriſdiction iſſuing imediately from the Crown, will in due time be put on a more Regular & Certain Eſtabliſhment.

A Militia in an Arbitrary & Tyrannical Government may poſſibly be of ſome Service to the Governing Power, but we learn by Experience that in a free Country, 'tis of little Uſe; the People in the Plantations are ſo few in proportion to the Lands, which they poſſeſs, that Servants being ſcarce, & Slaves ſo exceſſively dear, the Men are generally under a neceſſity there to work hard themſelves in Order to provide the common neceſſary's of Life for their Families, ſo that they cannot Spare a days time without great loſs to their Intereſt. On the Military Strength.

Wherefore a Militia there wou'd become more burthenſome to the Poor People, than it can be in any part of Europe, But beſides it may be queſtion'd how far it would conſiſt with good Policy to accuſtom all the able in the Colonies to be well exer-

ciſed in Arms, It ſeems at preſent to be more adviſeable to keep up a ſmall Regular ſtanding Force in each Province which might be readily for a time if Occaſion did require, & thus in Caſe of War or Rebellion the whole of the Regular Troops might be without Loſs of Time, united or diſtributed at Pleaſure, & if, as has been ſaid before, a ſuitable Revenue abroad can be raiſed for the Defence & Support of the Plantations, it wou'd be no difficult a matter both to form and Execute a Scheme of this Nature.

On Taxes. Land is ſo plenty & to be had ſo very cheap in America that there is no ſuch Thing as a Tenant to be found in that Country for every Man is a Land Lord in fee of what he poſſeſſes, & only pays a ſmall Quit or Ground Rent to the Lord of the Soil, & this makes it impracticable to find an Aſſembly of ſuch Freeholders in any of the Colonies who will conſent to lay any Tax upon Lands; nor indeed is it to be expected that they ſhou'd voluntarily agree to raiſe any Revenue amongſt themſelves, except what is abſolutely neceſſary for Erecting Court Houſes, Bridges, Highways, & other needful Expences of the Civil Government which is commonly levied upon Stock, an Exciſe upon Foreign Liquors retailed, or Small Pox Tax; & the Publick there is generally in Debt, becauſe they are extreamly jealous of Attempts upon their Liberties, and apprehenſive, that if at any time, the Publick Treaſury was rich it might prove to great a Temptation for an Artfull Governor in Conjunction with their own Repreſentatives to divide the Spoil & betray them.

On their Independancy. It muſt be allow'd that a Share of Perſonal Intereſt or ſelf Love influences in ſome degree every Man's Affections & gives a Natural impulſe to all our Actions; and tho' this is moſt perceptible in Trade or Commercial Affairs, yet there is not any other Tranſaction in Life that paſſes without it, & as it is with Men in this Caſe, ſo we find it has ever been with all States or

Bodys Politick; ſo long as they are Independant one upon another; The Wiſdom of the Crown of Britain therefore by keeping its Colonies in that Situation is every much to be applauded while they continue ſo; it is morally impoſſible that any dangerous Union ſhou'd be form'd among them, becauſe their Intereſt in Trade & all manner of Buſineſs, being entirely ſeperated by their Independancy, every Advantage that is loſt or neglected by one Colony is immediately picked up by another, & the Emulation that continually ſubſiſts between them in all manner of Intercourſe & Traffick, is ever productive of Envys, Jealouſies & Cares how to gain upon each others Conduct in Government or Trade, Every one thereby endeavouring to magnifie their Pretentions to the Favour of the Crown by becoming more uſefull than their Neighbours to the Intereſt of Great Britain.

On the Management of Plantation Affairs in England

But to render the Colonies ſtill more conſiderable to Britain, & the Management of their Affairs much more eaſy to the King & his Miniſters at home, it wou'd be convenient to appoint particular Officers in England for the Diſpatch of the Buſineſs belonging to the Plantations, for often Perſons that come from England either to complain or Support their own juſt Rights are at a loſs how, or where to apply, This uncertainty does not only fatigue the Miniſters but frequently terminates in the Deſtruction of the Party, by his being referred from Office to Office, until both his Money & Patience be quite worn out; ſuch things in time may cool Peoples Affections, & give them too mean an Opinion of the Juſtice of their Mother Country, which ought carefully to be prevented; for where there is a Liberty the Inhabitants will certainly expect Right, & ſtil have an Eye towards the obtaining it one way or other.

It may be conſidered therefore how far it would be ſerviceable to put all the Crown's Civil Officers in the Plantations of what kind ſoever, under the Direction of the Board of Trade, from

whom they might receive their ſeveral Deputations or appointments, & unto whom they ought to be accountable both for their Receipts & Management, & if a particular Secretary was appointed for the Plantation Affairs only, or if the firſt Lord Commiſſioner of that Board was permitted to have dayly acceſs to the King in order to receive his Majeſty's Commands in all Buſineſs relating to the Plantations, the Subjects Application wou'd be reduced into ſo narrow a Compaſs, and the Board of Trade wou'd always be ſo perfectly acquainted with the King's Pleaſure, that great Diſpatch might be given even to thoſe diſtant Matters without taking up too much of the Miniſtry's time, & interfering with others (Perhaps) more important Buſineſs the People of the Colonies wou'd be pleaſed to find themſelves thus regarded, without giving one any undue Preference to another, & all the Rents, Revenues, Cuſtoms & other Profits in any Manner ariſing from the Plantations wou'd then Center in one Place, where another proper Member of the ſame Board might be appointed Treaſurer of that Particular Revenue, to anſwer all ſuch order as ſhall be iſſued from time to time, for the Plantations Service. And as the Revenue from America would in all Probability be increaſed dayly, it may be reaſonably expected, that the Expence of Paying the Board of Trade & other Officers wholly employed in Plantation Affairs which is now born by the Civil Liſt, would then more properly ariſe & be diſcharged out of the American Fund & the overplus remaining would in time become a moſt uſefull Stock for purchaſing the Proprietary Lands, erecting Forts, & extending the Preſent Settlements as far as the great Lakes, or might be applied to ſuch other Uſes as his Majeſty ſhou'd think proper for that Service.

Of the Revenue in America

All that has been ſaid with Reſpect to the Improvement of the Plantations, will it is ſuppoſed ſignifie but very little unleſs a Sufficient Revenue can be raiſed to ſupport the needfull Expences, in Order to which it is humbly ſubmitted whether the Duties of

Stamps upon Parchment & Paper in England, may not with good reaſon be extended by Act of Parliament to all the American Plantations.

When we do not caſt an Eye upon the vaſt Tracts of Land & immenſe Riches which the Spaniſh Nation have in little more than one Century very oddly acquired in America, inſomuch that the Simple Priviledge of Trading with them, & on very high Terms too, is become a Prize worth contending For amongſt the greateſt Powers in Europe, Surely we muſt on due Reflection acknowledge that the Preſervation & Enlargement of the Engliſh Settlement in thoſe parts is of the laſt conſequence to the Trade, Intereſt & Strength of Great Britain. And moreover conſidering how that the laſt Reſort of Juſtice in the Plantations is ſolely Lodged in the Kings Sacred Perſon, with the adviſement of his Majeſty's Privy Council, excluſive of Weſtminſter Hall, or any other Judicature, the brightening that Jewel in the Crown may not be thought unworthy of the preſent happy Reign, to which the Improvement & Future Security of ſo large a Part of the Britiſh Dominions, the Advancement of Trade, & Univerſal Support of the glorious Cauſe of Liberty, Seems to be reſerved by the Peculiar Hand of Providence. Concluſion.

To the Kings moſt Excellent Majeſty

May it pleaſe Your Majeſty

Since the Obſervations contain'd in the Following diſcourſe were occaſionally made in your Majeſty's & Your Royal Father's Service abroad, during the Space of Twelve Years; I moſt humbly beg Leave to lay them at your Royal Feet, as a natural Effect of the pureſt loyalty to your ſacred Perſon; & the only means which is left in my Power to ſerve the Publick, as well as to demonſtrate that I am,

May it pleaſe Your Majeſty

Your Majeſty's, Moſt Obedient Servant &

Subject, WILLIAM KEITH

This Performance thus addreſſt to the King was preſented to his Majeſty by the Author, & referred to the Lords of Trade & Plantations. Their Lordſhips ſent Copys thereof to ſeveral Governors on the Continent; And the Following Anſwer was returned by the Hon,[ble] M[r] Gooch Governor of Virginia.

M[r] Gooch's Answer to the Foregoing Observations.

Some Remarks on a Paper tranſmitted into America, Entituled a Short Diſcourſe on the Preſent State of the Colonies in America. with Reſpect of Great Britain

AS the Introduction to our Author's Scheme muſt neceſſarily convey to every Reader the moſt exalted Idea of his Majeſty's Incomparable Vertues; So the Subſequent Sheets will I hope appear with ſuch a Face of Truth, as to create in every loyal Breaſt a juſt reſentment againſt the Malignity of a writer who has taken the Liberty to abuſe ſo much goodneſs by partial & unjuſt Repreſentations of a Faithfull & obedient People; which no other View than by infuſing grounleſs Jealouſies of their Conduct, to procure for himſelf an Employment in the Management of that imaginary Revenue, which he propoſes to raiſe by the Duties of Stamps on Paper and Parchment.

To vindicate his Majeſty's good Subjects in the Plantations from the unjuſt Aſperſions of this Author; to point out the particulars wherein he wou'd impoſe long eſtabliſhed Maxims in the Government of the Plantations, as the effect of his own Twelve Years obſervations; and to ſhew the impracticableneſs of this Scheme, full of Various & contradictory Windings, is the deſign of the following Remarks, which ſhall be proſecuted in the ſame Order & Method he has been pleaſed to range them, that the World may the better obſerve the Labyrinth this Projector is leading us into.

On a Provincial Dependant Government.

The Deſcription he has given of a Provincial Dependant Government, ſo far as it concerns the American Plantations, which were firſt Seated by Engliſh Men, & not ſubdued by Conqueſt, may be fully underſtood, and the Dependancy of the Plantations on the Mother State is a clearly aſſerted in the 5th Section of the Act for Encouraging Trade made in the Fifteenth Year of the Reign of King Charles the Second; that this Author with all the Pains and Trouble he has been at, has really found out nothing in his long & accurate Obſervations in America, but what every one knew whoſe concern & Buſineſs it was, long before he was born. Nor do his Majeſty's Miniſters entruſted with the Care of the Plantations, nor do the Inhabitants of the ſeveral Provinces themſelves need now to be put in mind of the Dependance the Plantations have on Great Britain; ſince every valuable Branch of the American Trade is ſecured by Law from the Danger of being diverted into any other Channel; If therefore this writer inſtead of laying down General Poſitions, which no Man ever denied, concerning the Original deſign of ſettling Colonies abroad, had pointed out the particular Provinces in which any Advantageous Projects are ſet on Foot prejudicial with, & inconſiſtent to the Mother State. he had done much better Service to the Publick, and more Juſtice to the Plantations, than by leaving Mankind at Liberty to charge all of them with Practices innumerable & incompatible with the Terms on which the People Claim both Priviledges & Protection.

On a Britiſh Colony in America.

Here the Author charges the Inhabitants of the Britiſh Colonies in general with not underſtanding the true End & deſign of their Settlement in America, and what they owe to their Mother

Country; and endeavours to prove his Charge by the Inſtructions & Strict Prohibitions, which in many Points are daily ſent from England to regulate their Conduct, In anſwer to this it may be fairly urged, that as the People in the Plantations always have and ever will pay a due Obedience to all Laws made in England for regulating their Conduct, and all other Orders and Inſtructions which the Crown thinks fit to tranſmit for their better Government, ſo it is no ſuch great Wonder, as the Writer wou'd make it, if ſome amongſt them remember that as Engliſh Men, they have a Natural Liberty of purſuing what may promote their own benefit in ſuch Matters as are not prohibited by Former Laws and Inſtructions, We ſee the ſame thing done in England by many Private Perſons, notwithſtanding all the Care of his Majeſty's Officers; but that the collective Body of the People in any of the Britiſh Colonies in America have combined to thwart the Intereſt of the Mother State, as ſeems to be under this Head inſinuated is a groſs miſrepreſentation, an extravagant Conceit framed in his own Brain. It is indeed true that Inſtructions & ſtrict Prohibitions are ſent into America, & are frequently evaded where crafty and deſigning Men have had the Dexterity to lead the well meaning Inhabitants into Schemes as much prejudicial to their own Intereſt as that of Great Britain of which the Author can give a very remarkable Inſtance in the Caſe of the Paper Bills ſtruck in Penſylvania, but this ought not to be charged on the Plantations in General,

If our Author had been ſo ingenuous as not to have thought himſelf ſafeſt by being in the dark, he might have diſtinguiſhed by his Wiſe Obſervations thoſe Provinces whoſe Commerce and Government are truly adapted to the Proper End and Deſign of their Firſt Settlement; and pointed out thoſe other Plantations which great Britain had ſo much better be without; for then on the one Hand, he had deſerved the thanks of thoſe, who ought

not only to have been thus treated by him, but carefully nouriſhed by their Mother Country; And on the other hand he had given the diſobedient and ill diſpoſed Provinces opportunity to ſet themſelves Right in their Sovereign's Opinion.

But while he is intent in turning Topſy Turvy long eſtabliſhed Conſtitutions in Colonies well regulated in point of Government and Trade, nor with, but againſt Reaſon; I ſhall be content to leave it to every impartial Reader to Conſider whether the Inhabitants of the Plantations have not reaſon to fear his ill meaning towards them & that no Government will be allowed to be well regulated but what is the Ofpring of his own Invention, which how conſiſtent it is with the Trading Intereſt will appear hereafter.

On the Advantages ariſing to Great Britain from the Trade of the Colonies.

This contains a pretty juſt enumeration of all the Advantages accruing to Great Britain from the Plantation Trade; And his Arguments for obviating any diſcouragements this Trade may receive for the Sake of any Private Intereſt, are no doubt moſt true, and Concluſive, This is a Priviledge of Writing every honeſt Man may lay claim to, and gives the Reader Encouragement to hope, that for the future he ſhall be on better Terms with the Writer, but alſo in the next Paragraph, after having made uſe of the beſt Means for his Information he again follows the Dictates of his own Conſcience & Underſtanding.

For by Regulations in the Plantation Trade 'tis firſt to be remembered that all the Regulations mentioned by this Author as ſuch as have been Eſtabliſhed long ſince, either by Acts of Parliament or the Kings imediate Authority, except the Fourth and laſt, and theſe require ſome Animadverſions, Under the Fourth Regulation he ſeems to exclude the Plantations from the Liberty they enjoy by the Acts of Trade of Importing Pro-

viſions from Ireland, & Wine from the Maderas and Azores, and will allow only only Salt to be brought directly to the Plantations without Firſt being entered in England. But as theſe are neceſſary for the Plantations, and no way Interfere with the Trade of Great Britain; it is to be hoped that the ſame Liberty will be ſtill continued, and if 'tis thought an Indulgence, that ſome of the Plantations at leaſt deſerve it. The laſt Regulation mention'd by our Author is the Collecting the Acts of Parliament relating to the Plantations into one diſtinct Body; and this may be ſaid to be all his own, for who does not know that the preſent Secretary to the Commiſſioners of the Cuſtoms ſome Years ago made very exact Collection of all the Laws relating to Trade which any concerned in the Plantations may eaſily purchaſe, and many have before this Author diſcovered the uſefulneſs thereof, ſo that 'tis not of ſuch mighty Importance as to give occaſion for an immediate Addreſs to his Majeſty.

On the Legiſlative Power.

Under this head the Author has couched an invidious Inſinuation as if the Aſſembly in the Plantations pretended to an Abſolute Legiſlative Power within themſelves, & thereby preſumed to contradict and Evade the Intent and force of the Acts of Parliament of their Mother Country, than which nothing can be more falſe and unjuſt, And 'tis hoped that the Lords Commiſſioners of Trade (under whoſe Conſideration 'tis ſaid this wonderfull Performance lys) will have the goodneſs to Vindicate his Majeſtys Subjects of the Plantations from ſo foul an Aſperſion which might otherwiſe render the beſt of Subjects (I ſpeak only of ſome Colonies) very juſtly to be ſuſpected of their Sovereign. But had this Authors Obſervations been conceived under a more Auſpicious Planet, it wou'd have been needleſs for me to tell the Reader, that not any of the Plantation Aſſemblies ever pretended to contradict the Acts with which the

Parliament of Great Britain have thought fit to affect them, well knowing that the Authority which they derive from the Crown expreſſly prohibits all ſuch Endeavours, nor are they Ignorant of it that all Laws contrived by them, and tending to that purpoſe wou'd be vain and ineffectual; Since by the Statute of the 7th & 8th of King William all ſuch Laws as are repugnant to the Acts of Parliament therein mention'd or to any other Law thereafter to be made in England relating to the Plantations are declar'd Null and Void. But yet with this Author's Leave, the People of the Plantations conceive they are poſſeſſed of a Legiſlative Power, properly ſo called, by Virtue of their Charters, & the Royal Grants, which enable Governors with the Advice of the Council and Aſſemblies to make Laws and Ordinances, for the good Government of their Reſpective Provinces; under this Reſtriction, that ſuch Laws be conformable to the Statutes of England; and this Power the Plantation Aſſemblies have exerciſed from their firſt Inſtitution to this time; not as ſo many petty Corporations at a Diſtance, but as Communities deriving their Authority from the Crown. Thus they have in the reſpective Provinces eſtabliſhed Laws for regulating Proceedings in their Courts of Juſtice; they have ſettled Titles to Lands, and declared Slaves to be real Eſtate; and have made many other neceſſary Rules for ſecuring the Properties of the Subject agreeable to the particular Circumſtances of the ſeveral Colonies; which are far different from the Nature of Temporary By Laws made by little Corporations. And it is the great comfort of the Inhabitants in the Plantations that theſe very Laws of theirs have been from time to time approved of by thoſe Miniſters of the Crown, ſet apart for that Purpoſe, who have had as much at heart the legal Prerogative of the King, and the true Intereſt of the Mother State, and as much Capacity to Judge of both, as this Writer can pretend to with all his Twelve Years remarks.

But the Author reſolving to go thro' Stitch when ſticking at Foundations, proceeds to reprehend the weakneſs of the Governors and General Aſſemblies in the ſeveral Colonies, who fancy that they Repreſent the King Lords and Commons of Great Britain; but this is a weakneſs to which the Author himſelf was once Subject, and as ſuch might well have Spared charging it on others, who to be ſure had a much better Title to fancy themſelves the King's Repreſentatives. However the Governors of the Plantations undoubtedly are now much obliged to him for ſetting them right in this particular; for indeed it has been hitherto a general received Opinion that a Governor having the Cheif Command of a Province by the Kings immediate Commiſſion; did in that Capacity repreſent the Perſon of his Royal Maſter; And we have heard of a Governor in a certain Province who took it mortally ill to be told, he was not the King's Repreſentative, tho' at the ſame time he acted under the Authority of an old Woman, the Proprietor. But 'tis to be hoped that ſuch weakneſs will not hereafter prevail among ſuch Governors. Then as to the Aſſemblies fancying themſelves to Repreſent Lords and Commons, it would be an unpardonable weakneſs ſhou'd they pretend to it, but this Writer willfully I fear, miſtakes an Endeavour to imitate ſo great an Example in the Manner of Proceedings in a Legiſlative Capacity (a weakneſs very pardonable) for a Vanity of aſſuming this Power, which wou'd be wholly inexcuſible, but it is an undoubted Truth, that the making a Law by the Governor, Council and Repreſentatives of the People in the Original Eſtabliſhment of the Plantations in General founded on their Charters and other Royal Grants, and has never been complained of, either by the People themſelves, or centured by thoſe Lords to whom the Crown has committed the inſpection of the Plantations.

Thoſe who are Strangers to everything may fancy what they pleaſe, by the Strength of which our Author proceeds to a

Negative Council as he calls it, and this Negative Council conſiſts of a few of the richeſt and proudeſt Men in each Colony, here he is happier than perhaps he thinks of, for there may poſſibly be one Man more in the World which thinks as he does. But pray S^r^ are the Richeſt Men in a Country for that Reaſon the leaſt fit to ſhare in the Legiſlature, or are they leſs Capable of Conſulting the general Intereſt of Community in which they live, or leſs concern'd for ſecuring the Liberties and Properties of a Free People? And as to the Juſt Power and Prerogative of the Crown, can they be more ſafely truſted in the Hands of the People's Repreſentatives, than in that of a Council who owe the Rank they hold to the Kings Favour, and are removable at his Pleaſure? But, I had almoſt forgot, it ſeems theſe Rich Councellors are proud too, and therefore unfit to be entruſted with any Power of Legiſlation; Surely this Ingenious Author might without Twelve Years Obſervation have found out that there are many Men not very Rich that have an equal Share of Pride with the moſt wealthy, And ſuppoſing that the Council of the ſeveral Plantations were modelled according to his Scheme, and all the Rich Men excluded, cou'd he imagine that their Succeſſors wou'd be more Capable of Serving the King, and promoting the true Intereſt of the Colonies, than thoſe they ſucceed? or will they be leſs liable to the Vanity of aſſuming to themſelves an imaginary Dignity & Rank above the reſt of the King's Subjects? Theſe are very uncommon Obſervations nor cou'd I have beleived them to have been the Author's own, had he not extravagantly inſiſted upon them beyond all Sence & beyond all Truth. For he gos on and tell us that theſe Councellors are to be only a Council of State to adviſe the Governors, Riſum teneatis, Amice, and be Solemn Witneſſes of all Publick Tranſactions, and a moſt notable ſecurity they muſt needs proves, when the Author owns that an Artfull corrupt Governor will find Means

by preferment, &C, ſo to influence a Council, rich and proud too, that they ſhall ſkreen a Governor in many things, which otherwiſe he muſt be perſonally bound to account for in a juſt and Legal Way.

May not then this new modelled Council of State from which all Rich Men it ſeems are to be excluded be as liable to the like Influence as the Councils now Eſtabliſh't, and may not their neceſſitys rather diſpoſe them to be bribed by Preferments into ſinfull Compliances, than thoſe whoſe Eſtates ſet them above ſuch a Temptation? And may not theſe New Faſhion'd Councellors have as great a natural propenſity to Rule over & Oppreſs their poor Neighbours? Undoubtedly they may! Nay are Subject to the like Temptations and paſſions with other Men, and perhaps more, ſince 'tis probable they may meet ſome Occaſions to indulge ſuch Paſſions, for being no further uſefull in a Government than to look on while the Governor and his lower Houſe of Aſſembly are tranſacting the Publick Affairs of the Colony; beſides, they may ſoon fall under the riducule and contempt of their Fellow-Subjects, and by that be lead to make revengefull, Returns expecially when a corrupt Governor may find it for his Intereſt to join in the Oppreſſion.

But while the Councils in the Kings Provincial Governments are as liable to be removed as the Governors themſelves, and that if any of them ſhould obſtinately oppoſe any Law prepared in the Aſſembly for the Publick Good, or the Intereſt of the Crown, a good and watchful Governor wou'd find means to take from them the power of doing further Miſcheif, there is no Danger to the Crown or Mother State in preſerving the preſent Conſtitution. And as to the Proprietary Governments, ſeeing thoſe Proprietors themſelves from their own perſonal knowledge, or from the Recommendation of their Lieutenant Governors, have the Nomination of the Council in their Reſpective Provinces, and have thought fit to entruſt ſuch Council with a

Share in the Legiſlature as a neceſſary Part of the Conſtitution, it wou'd be hard to deny them this Check on their Deputies, when the People themſelves of the ſeveral Provinces have never complain'd of any Inconvenience from this Eſtabliſhment.

On the Civil Juriſdiction.

However unintelligible the Civil Juriſdiction in the Plantations may be to ſome who are altogether unacquainted with American Affairs; Yet if by Civil Juriſdiction it be underſtood the Adminiſtration of Juſtice in the Courts of Law, I will venture to pronounce that the practice of thoſe Courts is exactly ſuited to the Circumſtances of the Reſpective Governments, and as near as poſſible it can be, conformable to the Laws and Cuſtoms of England. It is hoped the common Law of England will ſtill be acknowledged as the Birth-right of every Subject in the Plantations; and as to the Engliſh Statutes which do not particularly mention the Plantations, tho' made ſince the Settlement thereof, there was never any diſputes in the Courts of Judicature whether they were binding on the Subjects of the Plantations, becauſe the Reſolutions of the Judges in England have determin'd that they are not, If any ſuch partial Judges are to be found in the Plantations, who allow the Force of the Engliſh Statutes in one Caſe, and reject the ſame in another, the Governors are much to blame for continuing ſuch Judges: And admitting there may be ſome ſuch in the Inferior Courts, yet while the Supreme Courts in each Province are filled with Men of Integrity, good Sence (for the Truth will out in ſpite of our Author) and a Competent knowledge in the Laws (tho' they are not all of them profund Lawyers) the Subject will not be much injured, thro' the Ignorance of Inferior Magiſtrates. That the People in the Plantations are ſo deſtitute of proper Inſtructions in Principles of Moral Vertue, as to unqualify them

even to ſerve upon Juries, much leſs to ſet upon a Bench of Judicature, is an Aſperſion no leſs ſevere than untrue. Many of the Natives have had their Education in England, and others born and brought up there are now become Inhabitants, and without any reflection upon this Author it may very eaſily be made appear that there are Numbers in the Plantations that underſtand the Principles and Practice of Moral Vertue as well as himſelf (eſpecially if paying a Man's Juſt Debts be reckoned a Moral Vertue) & ſuch as the People would as readily chuſe to be tried by either as Judge or Jury; But as this noiſe about the Civil Juriſdiction, as he calls it, is only deſign'd to forward his Scheme of a Revenue, for which ſome uſe muſt be found out, & as one is the maintainnance of Judges to be ſent from England to take their Circuits by turns thro' all the Provinces on the Main (which no doubt would prove a very extraordinary means to expedite Juſtice, as Four of 1500 Miles being but a meer Trifle) with a very wanton Pen, he at once diſqualifies all the Inhabitants in America, from ſerving as Judge or Juror. This Argument if there be any thing in it, equally proves that they alſo ought to be ſent from England, for what can his Judges do, if there is not a Jury to be had that underſtands the Principles of Moral Virtue. It is therefore humbly hoped his Majeſty will be graciouſly pleaſed to continue the Courts of Juſtice under the preſent Eſtabliſhment, until the People themſelves find it inconvenient, or are provided with ſome better means to ſupport the charge of other Judges than what this Schemiſt has yet contrived. He next proceeds to conſider the Courts of Chancery, and ſays, there does not appear to him a proper & legal Authority to hold ſuch a Court in any of the Colonies; but herein he is again much miſtaken, and ſhou'd have taken Care to inform himſelf a little better, becauſe 'tis very certain than in many of the Colonies, Courts of Chancery are eſtabliſh't by Acts of their Aſſemblies purſuant to their Authority derived

from the Crown; and in the others, the Governors take themſelves to be ſufficiently Authorized to Act as Chancellors, by having the Cuſtody of the great Seal of their Province committed to them, but whether this Gentleman had a legal Authority to ſet himſelf up for the Chancellor of the Province of Penſylvania, or whether in that Capacity he acted with due regard to the ſpeedy Execution of Juſtice as he ought is a queſtion he can beſt reſolve. For in moſt of the Colonies it is certain the Proceedings in Chancery are remarkably expeditious, and the Author would be very much put to it to give One ſingle Inſtance of any Suit depending in the Plantation Chancerys half ſo long as they commonly do in England.

On the Military Strength.

Here the Writer advanceth a Parodox, which is not Eaſily to be reconciled to Common Sence: A Militia, ſays he, in a Tyrannical & Arbitrary Government may poſſibly be of ſome Service to the Governing Power; But we lean from Experience that in a free Country it is of little uſe, and therefore, he propoſes in the Room of the Militia the Eſtabliſhment of a ſtanding Army in each Province; Now let any one conſider but the Nature of the Militia in the Britiſh Plantations, and then reflect whether that or a ſtanding Force be moſt conſiſtent with the Safety of thoſe Colonies; The Militia of the Colonies conſiſts of all the Free Men able to bear Arms, under the Command of Perſons choſen from among the People of the beſt Familys and Fortunes; or in the words of his Majeſty's Inſtructions "they are liſted under good Officers" commiſſioned by the reſpective Governors; therefore, Reader now Judge, whether theſe Men are fit Tools for an Arbitrary & Tyrannical Government; or whether they are more likely to join with the Governing Powers! And having ſomething to loſe, may there-

fore be more ready to be apply'd to evil Purpoſes, if any ſuch were to be feared under his Majeſty's moſt happy Reign.

The Reaſon this Writer gives for laying aſide the Militia, are theſe Two; firſt an Eaſe to the poor Labourers and Planters; ſecondly, the Danger of exerciſing & training the Inhabitants in the Exerciſe of Arms.

As, to the Firſt, there is no Free Man in the Plantations but what may without Loſs attend the uſual Muſters appointed by the ſeveral Laws of the Colonies; Theſe Exerciſes if well regulated and contrived (as I know a Province where they now are) are rather a diverſion than a Trouble, and will always be better born by the People, than to ſee themſelves deprived of the neceſſary Means for their Defence, whenever there ſhall be occaſion to make uſe thereof; and the Author's Compaſſion for the Induſtrious Labourer will rather be found the greateſt Cruelty, when 'tis conſidered that by the Uſe of Arms, he expoſes their Throats to be cut by their Slaves, or a worſe & more dangerous Enemy the Shoals of Convicts which are readily tranſported to the Plantations, and being diſperſed thro' a large Extent of Land can ſcarce be kept in Obedience, but by the Terror of a Militia ready to Suppreſs them, if they ſhou'd dare to Form any Combinations againſt their Maſters.

As to the Second, it is moſt unjuſt in the Author to inſinuate ſuch a groundleſs Jealouſy of the Plantations, as if any danger cou'd accrue to Great Britain by accuſtoming their Inhabitants to the Exerciſe of Arms, He has himſelf under this very head ſhewed that no danger can ariſe thereby, where his acknowledges that the Labouring People are under a neceſſity to work hard to provide the common Neceſſarys of Life For their Families, and if ſo, how can theſe People find time to plot and Contrive againſt the Government which the King is pleaſed to ſet over them! And as to the rich Men he confeſſes that all the Superfluous Caſh & other Riches acquired in America muſt Center

in Great Britain; and what better Security can they be bound in for their Obedience? Where is the Danger then from their bearing Arms? Or how can it be thought inconſiſtent with good Policy to continue the Militia in the Eſtabliſhment it now is, when all the Plantations intirely depend upon Britain for a ſupply of neceſſaries, and when it is well known their Riches are depoſited. If the Subject in America were to take up Arms; as this writer wou'd inſinuate, what Enemy are they to attack? It can hardly be imagined that they will fall upon one another; becauſe they are like to be ſmall gainers by the Adventure; And as to their Mother Country, it is very certain, that ſuch attempt wou'd entirely deſtroy their Trade upon which their daily & neceſſary Subſiſtence depends. So that the Author's ſly inſinuation about the Plantation Militia, muſt appear to all conſidering Men, to be without any Sort of Foundation, and calculated only to make his Scheme of Stamp Duties appear more neceſſary; for what elſe can be imagined from his propoſal of keeping up a ſmall regular ſtanding Force in each Province, ſince it is evident from the Situation of the Plantations on the Continent, that a ſmall ſtanding force wou'd be of little Service to the Protection of any Province whatever, either in Caſe of War or Rebellion. And if this ſtanding Force ſhou'd be ſo numerous as to be ſerviceable in either of them, the Author will find it a more difficult Matter to form and execute a proper Scheme for raiſing a ſuitable Revenue to ſupport it. The Extent of the Britiſh Dominions along the Sea Coaſt of the Continent is at leaſt 1500 Miles, in which are many Bays, Rivers & Harbours, where an Enemy may land without danger or diſturbance from this ſmall ſtanding Force propoſ'd to be kept up; and then how difficult it will be to join Troops ſo diſperſed, may be eaſily Judged from the Number of Rivers, Creeks, and unpaſſable Moraſſes, which are ſo frequently met with, and will be always found in their Marches. And the

ſame may be ſaid as to the difficulty of defending the Frontiers of the Plantations towards the Land where the French are ſettled along the back of theſe Plantations, beſides many Numerous Nations of Indians ready to join them againſt whoſe Incurſions a ſmall ſtanding Force in each Province will prove but a ſlender Security. This part of the Project being ſo very ridiculous and ſtuffed with ſuch Apparent Contradictions to Reaſon and Common Sence, I ſhall diſmiſs it and go on to the Authors next Head.

On Taxes.

And here the Writer complains that Land is ſo plenty and Cheap in America that there is no Tenant to be found, nor an Aſſembly that will conſent to lay a Land Tax, and indeed it is difficult to ſay which way they ſhou'd, for if Lands be of no Value, how can this Tax be proportioned or levied, or what Revenue, can at all be raiſed from that which is of no worth? But the Author might have added, that tho' the Lands being of no certain Value are not Taxed, yet the People are ſufficiently Taxed in moſt Places in the Produce of their Labours upon thoſe Lands, beſides their being burdened with a Poll-tax, and other Duties; and if by theſe they can defray the neceſſary Expences of the Civil Government. there ſeems no great Occaſion to blame them for not having uſeleſs Sums in their Treaſury, without charging this Parſimony on the Jealouſy of their Liberties, or the Rapine of an Artfull Governor, joined with the fraudulent Combinations of their own Repreſentatives; for no inſtance can be given of ſuch a Confederacy; tho' this Gentleman may perhaps know a Governor who got into his Clutches £2000 of the Superfluous Treaſure of a certain Province, but was too Artfull to let the Peoples Repreſentatives ſhare a Farthing of it with Him; a ſhrew'd Specimen of that ſelf Love with which the Writer introduces the following Article.

On their Independancy.

In which there is nothing new or worthy of Conſideration, except a clear Demonſtration which is no ways inconſiſtent with good Policy to allow the People of the Plantations the uſe of Arms, ſince the Emulation amongſt the independant Governments, if at laſt it ſeems only which of them ſhall beſt recommend themſelves by being moſt uſefull to the Intereſt of Great Britain; an Emulation which ought never to be diſcouraged by any unneceſſary Taxes and other hardſhips and decide the Controverſy in favour of a truly Meritorious People, who ought to be left to that defence with which they are beſt pleaſed.

On the Management of Plantation Affairs in England.

The People of the Plantations have ever acquieſced in whatever Method the Crown has thought fit to direct them in their Applications to the Throne in all Matters relating to their Particular Affairs; And if by this Gentleman's endeavours, or otherwiſe, a more ſpeedy and eaſy Means of Addreſs ſhall be appointed, they will receive the favour with the gratitude that becomes them; But if the Appointment of all the Civil Officers in the Plantations of what kind ſoever, and their ſeveral Commiſſions for thoſe Employments are immediately to be granted by the Lords of Trade or by any other Hands in England, it is very eaſy to foreſee, what a confuſion muſt unavoidably follow ſuch a new Regulation. For it muſt be remembered that many of the Offices are of ſo little Profit, that they are ſcarce worth applying for, eſpecially at ſuch a diſtance and Paying Extraordinary Fees, of the Commiſſions; beſides it may well be thought worthy of Conſideration, how deſpicable the Governor of a Province muſt be when ſtript of the Power of diſpoſing of the few places that fall within his Government, and

how little ſerviceable to the Crown. when deprived of the only means of rewarding Merit and creating and Influence. If by obliging theſe Officers to Account with the Lords of Trade, or their Treaſurer, for their Receipts of all the Revenues of the Plantations, be meant, that the ſeveral Duties and Revenues, which are now raiſed for the Support of the Reſpective Governments ſhou'd be remitted to this Treaſurer; then it will follow that all Sallaries to thoſe Officers muſt alſo be paid there, and what an unneceſſary Trouble this may create both to that Honourable Board, and to the Officers themſelves need not be particularized. But if the Author's meaning be, as indeed it is hard to gueſs what he means, that only the Revenue he now Projects ſhou'd be under the Management of Officers immediately appointed by and accountable to the Lords of Trade and their Treaſurer, tho' the People of the Plantations muſt be greatly affected by ſuch a Tax; it will undoubtedly be a Comfort to the reſpective Governors to be exempted from any Share in the Management thereof, ſince thereby they will be acquitted from any Imputation of concealment or Fraud, when the produce of this Revenue is found to fall far ſhort of the mighty Expectation this Projector builds his Scheme upon. Which leads us to conſider the laſt head of this ingenious Project.

Of a Revenue in America.

And here the Author confeſſes that all that has been ſaid hitherto will ſignifie very little unleſs ſuch a Revenue can be raiſed to ſupport the needfull Expence. This then is the Baſis of the whole Scheme. And for which all that has been offered by him was written for if no ſuch Revenue can be raiſed, there will be then no Employment for him, and what Pity will it be that ſuch an Artfull Projector ſhou'd at laſt be left in the Lurch, who has with Twelve Years painfull Obſervations made ſuch

mighty diſcoveries in the Plantation Trade as, bating ſome few particulars, were found out and well known long before he ſet his Foot in America. However, a Revenue it ſeems muſt be raiſed, or elſe all theſe fine Improvements muſt come to Nothing, And therefore he humbly ſubmits it, whether the Duties of Stamps upon Paper & Parchment may not with good reaſon be extended by Act of Parliament to all the American Plantations. Now to underſtand the reaſon for extending this Duty to America, it may not be improper to conſider, what may probably be the produce of this Duty to anſwer the uſe for which it is intended. As to the Duties on Parchment there is ſo little of that uſed at leaſt on the Continent of America, that the Projector will hardly find a Man that will farm it at 100£ a Year; for ſeeing all Deeds and Conveyances are in the Plantations put on Record, People are in little concern whether the Originals are preſerved or not, and therefore few Perſons are at the Expence of engroſſing ſuch Conveyances on Parchment. Then as to the Stamps on Paper on which it is ſuppoſed all the Proceedings in the Court of Judicature are written, and all bonds and other Writings Obligatory; beſides the great inequality between the Numbers of People and the Riches of England, and that of the Plantations, and conſequently a great diſproportion in the Number of Law Suits, with the ſummary way of Proceeding of all ſmall Cauſes in the latter; and if to this it be conſidered, that in the Management of this Duty many Officers muſt neceſſarily be employed in ſo large a Circuit as the American Plantations, it is much to be doubted whether this Duty will amount to much more than the Charge of Management; And it is humbly ſubmitted whether it be at all reaſonable to burden the uſeful People of the Plantations with ſuch a Duty, for the ſake of maintaining a Number of uſeleſs Officers. But as neither the Projector of this Duty, nor any

other Perſon can form any certain computation of what it may produce. It ſeems very prepoſterous for him to build on ſuch a Slight Foundation, thoſe mighty Superſtructures of maintaining Judges in all the Provinces a ſtanding Force in each, erecting Forts, paying the Board of Trade, and all other Officers employed in the Plantation Affairs. For as all Commiſſions and other Inſtruments which paſs under the great Seal and pay the higheſt Duties are to be excluded out of the Computation of this Revenue, ſo there are many Writs, Proceſſes, and other Inſtruments at Law which are charged with this Duty in England, that are unknown in moſt of the Plantations; as are alſo Preſentations, Inſtitutions and Inductions to Eccleſiaſtical Benefices, and many other Publick Inſtruments, which bring in large Sums there. But there is one inſuperable difficulty in the collection of this Duty which muſt not be omitted, and that is the want of Coin (which this Writer might well have remember'd) wherewith to diſcharge it. In New England, New York, the Jerſeys, Penſilvania, and both the Carolinas there is a Paper Currency in which all Publick Taxes and Fees are paid, and in which the Bulk of their Commerce is carried on, and as this Paper Money bears a different Value in each ſeveral Province, and in all of them a great diſproportion from Sterling Money, ſo in the Tobacco Plantations of Virginia and Maryland for want of Coin the Publick dues and Officers Fees are paid in Tobacco. It will therefore be almoſt impracticable to raiſe this Duty with that Equality which the Wiſdom of the Parliament ever obſerves in Taxing the Subjects. But ſuppoſing this difficulty cou'd be ſurmounted, by allowing the Plantations to pay this Tax as they do other Duties, how can this Revenue be remitted to the Treaſury of the Board of Trade? Will he accept of the Paper Bills of Credit, or of the Tobacco of Virginia or Maryland? For tho' there are many People in America

ready enough to part with their own Paper Money, and to allow a conſiderable for Bills of Exchange payable in London; Yet I believe the Author of this Extraordinary Scheme would be hard put to it to find one man of Credit in the Plantations, to give Sterling Money in England for thoſe Paper Bills; eſpecially for any ſuch Sum as the Author ſuppoſes this Duty to raiſe; and it is very apparent that the worthy Author did not think ſo far at his Entrance on to this Scheme, or in the finiſhing of it Artfully concealed it, being unwilling to ſtart a difficulty which muſt overthrow his whole Deſign, for, to borrow an elegant expreſſion from him, which upon another Occaſion he makes uſe of, "The Inconſiſtency of the Thing dos preſently obtrude itſelf upon our Minds." But it may poſſibly be alledged this Fund is at preſent ſuppoſed to raiſe no more than will maintain the Itenerant Judges and pay the Soldiers. It is true the Itenerant Judges ſuch as the Writer propoſes need be under no concern for the Payment of their Salaries in Paper-Money or in Tobacco, ſeeing they are in Turns to travel through all theſe Provinces in the Diſcharge of their Duty, if their allowances are not very large they will find Opportunities enough in their Circuits to ſpend all they receive without puzzling their Brains about remitting it for England. But the Caſe of the Soldiers of the ſtanding Army is really to be pitied, if ever they ſhou'd be commanded to march out of their reſpective Provinces to a general Rendezvous in another, for the Pay they receive in One Province, will not purchaſe them (were there Publick Houſes as there are none) one Pot of Ale in another, nor is it poſſible to encamp them, or Canton them, in ſuch a Manner upon a March, as may in ſome Degree relieve them either from Hunger or Thirſt. In this Sence only the Independancy of the ſeveral Provinces, if they upon any Account deſerved to be ſuſpected, is highly to be applauded, but the Reader will prevent me enlarging on this Head,

and therefore I ſhall finiſh my Anſwer to this Article with only adding, that many Bills very rarely paſs beyond the Limits of the Country where they are Coin'd, and that I fear our Authors ſtanding Army will be fitter to diſband than fight, whenever there ſhall be occaſion to draw them together to oppoſe an Enemy. From what has been offered in Anſwer to this Diſcourſe, it is hoped that the Right Honourable the Lords Commiſſioners for Trade and Plantations, to whom the conſideration thereof is Submitted, will have little regard to the Viſionary Scheme of our Author ſeeing what he has now advanced tends to no kind of benefit to the Crown, or real Advantage to Great Britain, but of moſt pernicious Conſequence to the Plantations in General. and that their Lordſhips will interpoſe to preſerve to the loyal Subjects of his Majeſty's Plantations, the ſame Share of Royal Favours which they now happily enjoy; that their Lordſhips will have the Goodneſs to diſcourage all Projects tending to Subvert that Eſtabliſhment under which the Plantations have ſo long been happily Governed, in fine that they will be pleaſed, to oppoſe this Vain Scheme of extending the Stamp Duties to the American Plantations, which can only prove an intollerable burden to the poor Inhabitants, without any real advantage to our moſt Gracious Sovereign, or the Britiſh Nation.

Propoſitions made to the Five Nations of the Indians, to wit, Maquaſe, Oneydes, Cayouges, Ounundaques, and Sinnekes, by his Excellency Alexander Spotſwood, Eſq^r Lieutenant Governor of His Majeſty's Dominion of Virginia, in Albany the 29^th day of Auguſt 1722. 1722 Aug. 29

Preſent.

His Excellency Alexander Spotſwood, Governor of Virginia, Col° Nath^l Harriſon, of His Majeſty's Council of Virginia; Col° William Robinſon, a Member of the Houſe of Burgeſſes of Virginia.

Sachims and Warriors of the Five Nations;

1 YOU often ſay that your Covenant Chain with Virginia is grown ruſty, and have urg'd of late Years that ſome Commiſſioners from that Colony ſhou'd be ſent to this Place to brighten the ſame.

This is an old Story, which the People of Virginia remember to have been continually rung in their Ears, & are Senſible that none of the many Treaty's which they have made for near fifty years paſſt, have ever been long obſerved on the part of the Five Nations; Wherefore I am now come hither as Governor of Virginia, accompanyed by ſome Members of that Government, in order to try if Our Covenant Chain cannot be ſo poliſhed, as never more to grow ruſty, and to endeavour at Eſtabliſhing an everlaſting Peace between your people and our's; Comprehending not only the Chriſtian Inhabitants of Virginia but alſo the Several Nations of Indians belonging and Subject to that Government; And according to the Cuſtome of this Place, I ſignify to you this Propoſition by giving Two Belts of Wampum, the one for the Government of Virginia, and the other for all its Tributary Indians.

1722 Aug. 29 Nothing but your aſſuredly promiſſing (as you did here laſt year to your Governor) that you would agree to the Preliminary Articles Offer'd by Virginia, could have perſwaded that Government to ſend hither to treat with you; And therefore I enter upon any other Matter, I expect you ratify and confirm that Principal Article, which you have declared that you will faithfully obſerve, if I will take Care that Indians perform the ſame on their part, Viz. That the Great River of Potowmack & the High Ridge of Mountains which extend all along the Frontiers of Virginia to the Weſtward of the preſent Settlement of that Colony, ſhall be forever the Eſtabliſhed Boundaries between the Indians Subject to the Dominion of Virginia, & the Indians belonging to and depending on the Five Nations ſo that neither our Indians ſhall on any pretence whatſoever paſs to the Northward or Weſtward of the ſaid Boundaries without haveing to produce a Paſſport under the hand and Seal of the Governor or Commander in Cheif of Virginia; nor your Indians paſs to the Southward or Eaſtward of the ſaid Boundaries, without a paſſport in like manner from the Governor or Commander in Cheif of New York.

Now not only our Indians have given us Solemn Aſſureances of their keeping within the preſcribed Limits; But we have alſo by this Act of Aſſembly taken ſuch Meaſures for their due performance of the ſame, as that the Government of Virginia undertakes and engages for their Indians in this particular, ſo that nothing remains but that the five Nations ratifie and confirm the ſaid Article, which I expect ſhould now be done in a Solemn Manner, not only their Sachims but alſo by all their Warriors here preſent; And for that purpoſe I offer you this fine Coronett as a Singular Token, to be held up in the preſence of all who are upon this occaſion Aſſembled, by that Perſon whome you ſhall appoint to declare the General Aſſent of the Five Nations to this Propoſition, and let all your People preſent at the ſame

time give a Shout, to be taken as a Signal Teſtimony of their Concurrence, beſides I will have it ſigned by your Sachims and myſelf before I will either propoſe or preſent you with any thing further on the part of Virginia. 1722 Sept. 6

Interpreted by Lawrence Claeſe after it was tranſlated into Dutch by Rob^{t} Livingſton.

Anſwer of the Five Nations of Indians, Viz, the Maquaſe, Oneydes, Onnondages Cayouges and Sinnekes, to His Excellency Alexander Spotſwood Governor of His Majeſty's Dominion of Virginia, in Albany the 6th day of September 1722.

Preſent.

His Excellency Alexander Spotſwood Governor of Virginia, Col^{o} Nathaniel Harriſon a Member of his Majeſty's Council of Virginia, Col^{o} William Robinſon a Member of the Houſe of Bergeſſes of Virginia.

Brother Aſſarigoe (the name of the Governors of Virginia, which ſignify's a Simmiter or Cutlaſs which was given to the Lord Howard Anno 1784, from the Dutch word Hower a Cutlaſs)

WE the Sachims of the Five Nations, the Mquaſe, Oneydes Onnondages Cayouges and Sinnekees together with the Tuſcarurors are come here upon the Governor of New York's Meſſage.

We have heard the Preproſitions of the Governor of Virginia with great attention, and conſidered it very Maturely; but before we Anſwer, We muſt impart what our Anceſtors have done with reſpect to this Government.

When the Chriſtians firſt came here, they came in a great Ship, and we were glad of their comeing and faſten'd the Ship

1722 Sept. 6 behind a great Tree, and our buſineſs then was Trading and Merchantdize, And conſidering the Benefit thereof, and that the Tree to which the Ship was faſten'd might rott, and ſo let the Ship go. We carried the Anchor behind a great Mountaine that ſo we might keep it for ever, and it was that deſired the Chriſtians to come and Settle among Us, and not they.

The third thing that was done by the Chriſtians, and our Anceſtors after they underſtood one another, was to enter into a Covenant of Friendſhip, which they called the Covenant Chain, and to the beſt of our knowledge, that Covenant has been kept by both parties from that time to this; And both our Anceſtors were ſo prudent that they Stipulated and agreed, that if any bad accident or Miſchief ſhould happen on either ſide it ſhou'd be forgot and forgiven, not make a Breach in the Covenant Chain.

Brother Aſſarigoe

When the Neighbouring Governments of Virginia Penſylvania and New England, found how well we agreed they were gland to link their Hands in the ſaid Covenant Chain, and there were Two Places, Viz^{t} Albany and Onnondage to meet at, and to ſettle a right underſtanding in Caſe any Miſchief ſhou'd happen on either ſide.

Brother Aſſarigoe

We will not make any further mention of theſe old Stories of what our Anceſtors did, but will now come to the point and Anſwer your Propoſitions, and we hope if our Anſwer ſhould not be given with that reſpect and regard which is your due, you will excuſe Us.

Brother Aſſarigoe

You told us ſome days ago, that the five Nations ſay the Covenant Chain which was made betwixt us and Virginia fifty

Years ago, is grown Ruſty, and that we did not long keep or obſerve the Conditions of it, and you have forbid us to paſs to the ſouth ſide of the great Kahongarouton, which you call Patowmack, or to the Eaſt ſide of the great Ridge of Mountains which extends all along the Frontiers of Virginia. 1722 Sept. 6

In the firſt place, we agree to this Article, and faithfully promiſe not to paſs over the great River Kahongarouton (by the Engliſh call'd Patowmack) nor the great Ridge of Mountains which extends along your Frontiers; We are glad you are come here to renew the Peace as well in behalf of the Chriſtians, as the Indians of Virginia. We wiſh you had brought ſome of the Sachims of your Indians that they might have ſpoke to us face to face, and have put their hands into the Covenant Chain; But ſince you are come here, we gree to accept what you offer in their behalfs in the ſame Manner as if they were preſent.

And tho' there is a Nation among you the Toderechrones Chriſtanna Indians againſt whome we have had ſo inveterate an Enmity that we thought it unpoſſible it cou'd be extinguiſhed but by a total Exterpartion of them, yet ſince you deſire it we are willing to receive them into this Peace, and to forgive all that's paſt.

It had pleaſ'd God to make you Chriſtians and us Heathens; but we hope we ſhall both Act according to our Capaceties, and be faithfull to our reſpective promiſe and Engagements; ſome are placed in high Stations and ſome in Low, but there is one above who rules and governs all and will Judge us according to our Actions.

We hope, you will obſerve, that your Indians which you have engaged ſhall perform what you have promiſed for them, That they ſhall not paſs to the Northward of the River Kahongarouton nor to the Weſtward of the great Ridge of Mountains;

1722 Sept. 6 And as you give us 2 Belts one from the Chriſtians and the other from the Indians of Virginia, ſo we give you 2 Belts one for our Chriſtians and the other for our Indians.

It is ſome time ago ſince you made this Propoſition to us, and you muſt not take it amiſs, that we have not anſwered you before; It was a thing of Great Importance and fit to be well Conſider'd, and it is now agreed not only by all our Sachims, but alſo by all our Warriors as well thoſe which were abſent, as thoſe which were preſent

You have told us that we paſs the great River Kahunrouton and the great Ridge of Mountains, provided we have a paſſport from the Governor of New York; And we promiſe you again not to paſs to the Southward or Eaſtward of the ſaid Boundaries without ſuch a Paſport.

You told us, after this you had ſomething further to propoſe relating to the General Peace, which we hope will now ſpeak ſincerely without diſſimulation.

You told us, you had a Coronet which you would have held up by our ſpeaker, and that at the ſame time We ſhould make a Shout as a Token of our conſent to this Article, which we are now ready to do.

And we are now ready ſince you have told us you were not Satisfy'd with our words in this matter of Conſequence, to ſign your Propoſitions in the moſt Publick manner.

All which was perform'd accordingly, and the ſpeaker of the Five Nations holding up the Coronet they give Six Shouts, five for the five Nations, and one for a Caſtle of Tuſearuros lately ſeated between Oneyde and Onnondage.

And a Memorandum was made under the Propoſition of the Governor of Virginia, importing that on the 6th Day of September 1722 the Sachims and Warriors of the

Five Nations, together with divers Chiefs of the Tuſca- 1722
ruros made their Anſwer by Ondagſighte a Sachim of Aug. 29
Oneyde their Speaker choſen for that purpoſe, and did Solemnly declare the Aſſent of the whole five Nations including the Tuſcaruros and fully agreed to the ſaid Propoſitions relating to the Peace & Boundaries And that in Teſtimony thereof they held up the Coronet and ſigned thoſe Propoſitions.

Interpreted by Lawrence Cleſe into the Dutch Language and rendered into the Engliſh by Rob^{t} Livingſton.

Propoſitions made to the five Nations of Indians, Viz, Sennekes, Cayougues, Oneydes, and Mochock by the Governor of Virginia at Albany the 29th day of Auguſt 1722

Sachims and Warriors of the five Nations

THE Propoſitions were, Verbatim the ſame as the foregoing only theſe were Signed.

ALEXANDER SPOTSWOOD

And on the 6th day of September following, the Sachims and Warriors of the five Nations together with divers Chiefs of the Tuſcaruros made their Anſwer Odaliſekla a Sachim of Oneyde their Speaker Choſen for this purpoſe, and did Solemnly declare the Aſſent of the whole five Nations including the Tuſcaruros and fully agreed to the above Propoſitions relating to the Peace and Boundaries. And in Teſtimony thereof the ſaid Speaker held up the Coronet, and the Indians gave a Shout,

1722 Aug. 29 and divers of their Sachims made their Signs to this Inſtrument.

TAGNAYANONT
Sachim of the Mohocks

Done in the preſence of

NATHANIEL HARRISON A Membr of the Council of Virginia
WILLIAM ROBINSON a Membr of the Houſe of Burgs Virg:a
JOHN RANDOLPH Secretary to the Treaty

IGHUEDA als; Arya
Sachim of the
Mohocks

TEHONNENHOKARAWE
als HENRIC Sachim
of the Mohocks
ACNCHIAWCERAT, Sachim
DEKANISON, Sachim
OLSOGHKORE, Sachim

Of Onoyde Onnondages

ODATSICHTA Sachim & Speaker
OTSIGHWATHIGHSE Sachim
DEHAARAGHKORES Sachim
KAHESKEROWAND Sachim
AYEGHWAGHTA Sachim
ODIAGHUA Sachim

DAGARAGHOUT Sachim
KANIENGODE Sachim
SAGAYENGWARACHTON alas BLACKBICK Sachim

Sennekaes

DECAUISORE Great Sachim
of Onnondague.

SAWUITKA
ADORIES
SKETOWAS.

Tuſcaruros Chiefs

Preſent.

1722 Sept. 10

His Excellency Alex[r] Spotſwood, Governor of Virg[a]
Col[o] Nath[l] Harriſon, a Member of his Majeſties Council of Virg[a]
Col[o] William Robinſon, a Memb[r] of the Houſe of Burg[s] of Virg[a].

Col[o] Peter Shuyler, Peter Vanbrugh, Hend: Hennſe, John Collins, Phillip Levingſton } Eſq[r] Com[ds] for the Ind[ns] Affairs

The further Propoſitions of the Gov[r] of Virginia to the five Nations of Indians on the 10[th] of September 1722 immediately after the Indians had ended their Anſwer to Sir William Keith Bar[t] Governor of Penſylvania.

Interpreted by Lawrence Claeſe into the Dutch Language, and render'd into the Engliſh by Rob[t] Levingſton.

Sachims and Warriors

3[d] SINCE the Bounds between your Indians and Our's are firmly agreed upon 'tis neceſſary now to declare the Names of the Several Nations of Indians which the Government of Virginia engages for, And thoſe are the Nottoways, Meherins, Nanſemonds, Pamunkeys, Chicahominys, and the Chriſtanna Indians whome you call the Todirickroones, but we comprehend under that name the Saponies Ochineeches Stenkeknocks Meipoutſkys and Toteroſe; All the aforenamed Indians haveing their preſent Settlements on the Eaſt ſide of the high Ridge of Mountains and between the two great Rivers of Potowmack and Roanoke which you call Kahungarouton and Kenentchenechke, And on the other hand it is fit at this time that you declare the names of all thoſe Nations whome you

1722 Sept. 10 comprehend in the preſent Treaty, and for whoſe performance the Five Nations will Anſwer.

And to mind you of this Propoſition I lay down for our ten Nations of Indians ten Guns.

4 I have already told you, that we have made a Law in Virginia to oblige a due performance of that Article of the Boundaries which you have here lately ratifyed, and its' highly expedient that I now particularly inform you thereof.

If any Indians of the aforenamed Nations belonging to Virginia, or thoſe whome you declare to be dependent on your five Nations ſhall hereafter tranſgreſs the ſaid Boundaries without haveing the proper Paſports already mention'd every ſuch Indian is by the Law lyable to be put to Death or tranſported and Sold for a Slave. And as the Government of Virginia will not Demand Satisfaction for whatever you ſhall do to any of their Indians whome you ſhall take on the North ſide of the high Ridge of Mountains, ſo your People muſt not Look upon it as any breach of the Peace and Friendſhip which Virginia deſires to preſerve with the Five Nations, if that Government ſhall hang or tranſport any of your Indians, who ſhall hereafter be taken without a proper paſſport on the South ſide of the ſaid River, and on the Eaſt ſide of the ſaid Ridge, And I cannot but think that the wiſer ſort of your people muſt approve of a Law that will oblige your fooliſh and ungovernable young men to harken (better than they have always done) to the ſage Councils of their Elders, and to obſerve more punctually a Treaty which their Sachims have thought fitt to make for them, and in Token of your five Nations, as well as our ten Nations of Indians being bound by this Law, I give fiften Guns; And that you and your Children may at all times to come truly underſtand what is contained in it, I have brought it hither under the Seal of the Colony of Virginia, and now Lodge it in the Hands of this Government.

Further Propoſitions of the Governor of Virginia made to the five Nations on the 11th of September 1722. 1722 Sept. 11

Sachims and Warriors,

5 IT appears to be a Method agreed upon by your five Nations to receive no Propoſals, nor have any manner of Treaty with any of the Engliſh Provinces than through the Governor of New York to which you belong; Wherefore Virginia expects you ſhould obſerve the ſame Rule with reſpect to that Government, And that you ſhould not at any time offer to treat with the Indians belonging to that Colony but thro' the Government there; And if you ſhould come to Virginia with an Intent to treat with our Indians in any other Manner though you ſhould have a Paſſport from the Governor of New York you muſt expect it will be held void, and you will be treated as if you came without it & with this Propoſition I give you a Belt.

You ſent me laſt Year a Belt of Wampum as a Teſtimony of your promiſe that you would Seize and carry to Virginia ſome Runaway Negroes belonging to that Colony, whenever you did diſcover and meet them in the Woods. Now I make a General Propoſition to you on Account of Runaway Negros and Slaves, belonging to Virginia, Vizt That if any ſuch Negro or Slave ſhall hereafter fall into your hands, you ſhall ſtraight way conduct 'em to Colo George Maſons Houſe on Potowmack River, and I do in behalf of that Colony engage that you ſhall there receive immediately upon Delivery of every ſuch Runaway, one good Gun, and two Blankets, or the Value thereof, And in token of this Propoſition and Engagement I lay down 5 Guns & 500 Flints.

7th You ſent this Year to demand of Virginia four Indian Boys to be delivered up to you, for four of your Meſſengers

1722 Sept. 11 which, you alledged, our Indians had poiſon'd, whereupon I muſt tell you that, that Government has abſolutely rejected your Demand, and is too ſtrong & powerfull to be Scared by the Threats of the Five Nations into any unjuſt Complyance; And I am here ready to juſtify, not only our Indians againſt this Charge; but alſo to anſwer for the Colony of Virginia and give all due Satisfaction if you can make it appear that our People have ever broken the Covenant Chain with any of the Five Nations. And to put you in Mind of what I ſay on this head, I lay down five Bundles of Beads.

8 On the other hand, I came hither to accuſe the People of the five Nations, of divers Hoſtilities Robberies, and repeated Broches of their Treaties, but ſince you have declared your deſire that all paſt offences ſhou'd be forgiven & forgot, and have now on your part readily paſt over an Injury received from a Chriſtian in Penſylvania; And more eſpecially ſeeing you have ſo fully concured in my Propoſition of the Boundaries which if you if duely obſerved muſt effectually prevent all future Diſorders and Injuries to Virginia; I ſhall at this Juncture, forbear all particular Charges againſt you, except only that I muſt ſay, you have ſo greatly wronged this Perſon (Cap^{t} Rob^{t} Hicks) when you kill'd his Negro with about Seventy of his Horſes and plunder'd him of a Conſiderable Cargo of Goods; That to ſhew the five Nations have any ſenſe of Juſtice, they cannot but make him ſome Amends and Reparation of his Loſſes.

And in Token of Virginia now burying all Revenge and enmity for your paſt miſdeeds, I lay down a Belt.

9th Above 600 Miles have we from Virginia come hither to treat with you nine days after the appointed time of our Meeting did we wait before I could have the Opportunity of ſpeaking to you, and nine days longer before you anſwer'd my firſt propoſitions; So that ſeeing a Treaty at albany occaſions ſo much Trouble and Expence you muſt not expect that the

Government of Virginia will again agree to the renewing of it after this manner in this place; Wherefore let not your young Warriors be poſſeſſ'd with the fooliſh Expectations of Provoking a Governor of Virginia by their Incurſions to come hither again to perſwade you to obſerve this Treaty; for, be aſſured, the people there are reſolved henceforth to compel an Obſervance thereof and I hope, your firm Intentions are to behave yourſelves ſo towards Virginia, as that we may forever acknowledge the five Nations to be our friends & Allies, 1722 Sept. 11

And in Teſtimony of our Underſtanding this preſent Treaty to be made upon this Footing of what I have declar'd in my foregoing Propoſitions, I ſhall ſo ſoon as I have received your Anſwer lay down ſuch a conſiderable Token, as that not only your Sachims & Warriors but alſo your Women and Children may bear ſome Remembrance of this Treaty.

1722 Sept. 12 *A further Anſwer of the five Nations to His Excellency Alexander Spotſwood Governor of Virginia in Albany the 12th of Sepr 1722.*

Preſent

His Excellency Alexander Spotſwood Governor of Virginia,
Colo Nathaniel Harriſon, Eſqr one of his Majeſty's Council of Virginia
Colo Willm Robinſon Eſqr a Memr of the Houſe of Burgeſſes of Virginia.

Colo Peter Schuyler
Hend, Hanſe
Peter Hanbrugh
Phill, Livingſton
John Collins
Jos Bleecher
} Eſqrs Commrs of Indians

Brother Aſſarigoe

YOU are come 600 Miles to treat with us and we are very Glad to ſee You. You have made your Propoſitions to Us, wherein you call us, Sachims and Warriors of the five Nations, and acquinted us, ſince we agreed not to paſs the River Kahongarouton, nor the great Ridge of Mountains; that there is a Law in Virginia prohibiting us to paſs that River or thoſe Mountains, under the Penalty of being tranſported and ſold for Slaves, or put to Death; We do aſſure you, we are well Satisfied with that Law, and deſire that thoſe Boundaries may be for ever obſerved. You have alſo told us that you will engage for ten Nations of Indians in Virginia, that they ſhall not paſs to the North ſide of the River Kahongarouton nor to the weſtward of the Mountains, and that if we ſhou'd meet with any of them without thoſe Bounds We might uſe them as we pleaſ'd, without breaking this Peace; Notwithſtanding

which we aſſure you, if any of your Indians ſhall happen in our way, we will not hurt them, but treat them as friends, and give them Victuals ſo deſireous we are of being at Peace with them. 1722 Sept. 12

Brother Aſſarigoe

As you engaged for ten Nations, ſo do we Viz^{t} for the five Nations and for the Tuſcaruros and Conneſtogoes, Chuanoes, Ochtaghquanawrorocnes, Oſtagankees which live upon Saſquahana River. You likewiſe told us, that we had made it a Rule, not to treat with any of the Neighbouring Governments but at Albany, ſo you expected we ſhould not treat with your Indians but through the Government of Virginia, and that tho' we ſhould with a Paſs, we muſt not treat ſeperately with thoſe Indians, for the paſs will be lookt upon as Void if we ſhould. We agree to this Propoſition, and promiſe that we will not at any time make any Treaty with the Virginia Indians without firſt acquainting the Governor therewith, and thereupon we give a Belt.

Brother Aſſarigoe

You told us yeſterday, that you would not ſum up any of our former Miſdeeds, but would forgive all that was paſſt. We acknowledge, our People have been guilty of a great many bad Actions, and heartily thank you that you are ſo good as to forgive them, And as to that honeſt man Cap^{t} Hicks we own our People did rob him of a great conſiderable Booty, and did him a great deal of Miſchief; But by an Accident that befell us afterwards, it happen'd we got very little by it, for the woods being very dry, by the Negligence of ſome of own people, took fire, and thereby we loſt the moſt part of what we had taken; Nevertheleſs when we are able, we do promiſe to make that poor Man ſome Reparation for his loſs, but at this Juncture we are not in a Capacity of doing it. We have now made a Peace

1722 Sept. 12 with you, and we hope it will be by us and our Childrens Children for ever; And thereupon we give a Belt.

Brother Aſſarigoe

As to the Propoſition you made relateing to Negroes We promiſe that if any Runaway Negroes or Slaves ſhall happen to fall into our Hands, We will carry them to Col° Maſons on Potowmack River, for the Reward propoſed; But as to thoſe Negroes, which you ſaid, we promiſed laſt year to ſend home, We hope you'l excuſe us, becauſe they lye very much out of our way, and may be had more eaſily by other Indians. Yet if we can Serve Virginia in any other thing, We ſhall be Glad of an Op^ty of doing it.

Now Brother Aſſarigoe

Since we are reſolved in caſe We ſhould find any of your Virginia Indians, on the Weſt ſide of the Great Mountains or the Northſide of the River Kahongarouton not to do them any hurt, We deſire you would tell them when they make Fires beyond theſe Boundaries to lay a Stone in them, when they leave their Quarters; And we will do the ſame, which will be a ſign to us both, that our Friends have paſſ'd.

And laſtly, we deſire that this Peace may be kept by Us and our Childrens Children, who will rejoice for the Making and conducting thereof. We have a Small Preſent to make you and hope you will accept it tho' it is a ſmall one, and excuſe us that we are not able to give more, And then they gave ſome Furs and Deerſkins.

The Governor told them they had taken no notice of the Propoſition wherein he Mentioned their Demand of four Indian Boys to be deliver'd up to them, for four of their Meſſengers, which they had Charged the Virginia Indians with poiſoning; and deſired to know whether they were Satisfied that Accuſation

was juſt. To which they Anſwered, they well aſſured it was not ſo: That one of the Perſons, who went with thoſe Indians to Virginia, was then preſent, and they were Satisfied they died natural Deaths, and had nothing to accuſe Virginia of. 1722 Sept. 12

The Governor thank'd them for their Preſent and ſaid he did not look upon it, according to its Value but accepted it, as if it had been much more. He ſaid he wiſhed it had been Greater only on Account of Cap^{t} Hicks to whom he gave it as a ſmall Satisfaction of the Damage he had ſuſtained by the five Nations. Then they wiſhed him a good Voyage home, and told him they, ſhould be Glad to hear of his ſafe Arrival.

Then the Governor told them, he muſt take particular Notice of their Speaker and give him a Golden Horſe-Shoe, which he wore at his Breaſt, and bid the Interpreter tell him, there was an Inſcription upon it which Signified, that it would help to paſs over the Mountains; And that when any of Their People ſhould come to Virginia, with a paſs, they ſhould bring that with 'em; And then the Gov^{r} gave 'em his preſents which amouned to about Three hundred & fifty Pounds New York Money.

Interpreted by Lawrence Chaeſe into
the Dutch Language & rendred into
Engliſh by Rob^{t} Livingſton.

FINIS.

INDEX.

ABBINGTON, John, 152.
Abſtinence, 46.
Addreſs upon War with Tuſkaroros, 192, 193; Anſwer to, 193.
Affidavit of Tho. Harriſon, 105; of William Ruſſell, 100; of F. Thornton, 99; of Date of Settlement, 99.
Air Furnace, 62, 70, 74; deſcribed, 74.
Albany, Treaty at, 260, 263.
Allegany, Source of, 117.
Allen, Colonel, 33.
Allen's Creek, 33, 39.
Alum Spring, 72.
American Colonies, Statement of William Keith upon, 214.
Anſwer to Reply on Payment of Debts, 159.
Appamattuck, Point of, 9.
Appomattux River, 9.
Apricots, Letter concerning, 185.
Argalus, 81.
Armſtead, Colonel, 78.
Arrows, Uſe of, by Indians, 169.
Artifice ſuſpected, 108.
Aſſarigoe, 252, 262.
Aſhler, Plaſter reſembling, 212.

BACON, Joſiah, 152.
Bacon, Nathaniel, 204.
Bahama Iſlands, 68.
Baker, George, 152.
Ball, Mr., 116.
Baniſter, Mr., 1, 2, 3, 10, 11, 17, 35, 36, 39.
Baniſter River, 10.
Bankruptcy, 159, 160.
Barber, Captain, 116.
Barradall, Mr., 118.
Baradel, Mr., 89, 115.
Bar Iron, Coſt of, 58.
Barret, Rich., 152.
Baſſett, William, 206.
Bayly, Arth., 152.
Bear killed, 19, 23, 26.
Beech Trees, Inſcription on, 22, 23.
Beggar's Opera, 47.
Belt delivered, 260, 264.
Bendall, Hopefer, 152.
Betty, Mr., 34.
Beverly, Henry, 134, 138.
Beverly, Col. William, 78, 94, 104, 119, 131, 133.
Birch, Mr., 3.
Birch's Creek, 10, 38.
Birch Wine, Recipe for, 188.
Blackiſton, Mr., Recipe for making Wine, 188.
Bladen, M., 139.
Blair, James, 159, 206.
Blaſting Rocks, 42, 56, 81.
Bleecker, Jos., 262.
Blue Stone Caſtle, 3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 10, 31, 38, 39.
Board of Trade, 225.
Boath, James, 152.
Bolling, Colonel, 36, 39.
Bolling, Robert, 2, 10, 31, 33.
Booker, Mr., 41, 42, 80, 82.
Boucher's Creek, 5.

Boundaries, 255, 257, 258, 262, 264; Indian, 250, 253; of Lord Fairfax, Settlement of, 83.
Bradley, Mr., 48.
Brandon, 87.
Braxton, Colonel, 47.
Brent, Mr., 130, 133, 137, 138; Grant to, 124.
Brent Town, 114, 115.
Briſtol, 56.
Briſtow, Rob't, 152.
Briſtow, Robert, Jr., 152.
Britiſh Colony, Remarks on, 229.
Brooke, Robert, 100, 101.
Brooks, Mr., 81, 97, 120.
Brown, John, 152.
Brown, Mr., 136.
Bruniſkill, John, 152.
Brunſwick C. H., 3, 38, 39.
Brunſwick Church, 34.
Buffalo, 24, 25, 28.
Buffalo Creek, 9, 26.
Bulk Tobacco, Eſſay on, 140; Reaſons why it ſhould be prohibited, 153.
Buller, Rich., 152.
Bullington, Benjamin, 23.
Burgeſſes, Addreſs of Houſe of, 195; Anſwer of, to Governor's Speech, 195.
Burnham, Wm., 152.
Butcher, John, 32, 33.
Butcher's Creek, 39.
Byrd, William, appointed Commiſſioner, 86; mentioned, 90, 91, 101, 103, 104, 107, 127, 131, 198, 202, 203, 204, 205.
Byrd, Mrs., 41.

CAMERON, Baron of, 93.
Canes, 11, 14, 22.
Cane Creek, 14, 38.
Cant, Wm., 152.
Cargill, Cornelius, 31.
Cargil's Mine, 9.
Carlton, Dudley, 152.
Caroline Court Houſe, 78.
Carter, Col. Charles, 82, 94, 98, 100, 104, 119, 131, 133.
Carter, Robert, 124, 125, 134, 206.
Carter, Mr., 96, 138.
Carthagena, 68.
Cary, James, 152.
Cary, John, 152.
Cary, Robert, 75.
Caſtings, Iron, 74, 75.
Catawbas, 11, 15, 25.
Cave, 8.
Caviar, to make, 191.
Cayouges, 249, 251, 255.
Chancery Courts, 223, 238.
Chapel burnt, 59.
Chappawamſick Creek, 105, 106.
Charcoal, 70, 71.
Charles City County, 87.
Cohaungorooton River, 120.
Cherry Wine, Recipe for, 187.
Cheſapeak Bay, 84, 87, 93, 121, 129.
Cheſtnuts, 19.
Chickahominy, 53.
Chicahominys, 257.
Chiſwell, Mr., 49, 51, 53, 55, 57, 64.
Chiſwell, Mrs., 53.
Chriſtianna Indians, 257.
Chuanoes, 263.
Civil Juriſdiction of Plantations, 222, 237.
Claeſe, Lawrence, 251, 255, 257, 265.
Claims of Lord Fairfax, 120.
Clary Wines, Receipt for, 187.
Clergy, Salaries of, 198.
Cliff Creek, 22, 38.
Cock, Colonel, 31.
Cocke, Rachel, 76.
Cock's Creek, 3.
Cocquade Creek, 24, 39.
Cohongoruton River, 97, 100, 101, 117, 125, 126, 127, 132, 133, 136.

Coin, Scarcity of, 246.
College, Aid to, 199.
Collins, John, 257, 262.
Collinſon, Letter about Plumbs, Apricots, &c., 185; on Country Grapes, 184; on Management of Vines, 177.
Colonial Dependence, 241.
Colonies, Reſources and Condition of, Remarks by Sir Wm. Keith, 217.
Colpepper, Lord, 83, 122, 124, 125, 126.
Colſon, Joſeph, 5, 6, 10, 22, 36.
Commiſſion of Commiſſioners for ſettling Fairfax's Claims, 86; Lord Fairfax refuſes to ſign, 90; of Lord Fairfax, 93; to Surveyors, 100; to ſurvey Counties, 104.
Commiſſioners to be appointed, 86.
Company, Liſt of, 36.
Conneſtogoes, 263.
Content of Cargoes, 157.
Controverſies concerning Northern Neck, 83.
Conaway River, 108, 109, 110.
Conway River, 127, 133, 135.
Cooper, John, 152.
Copper Mine, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 9, 19, 30, 31.
Cornwall Malt-houſe, Floors in, 190.
Cornwell, Anth., 152.
Corotomen, 115.
Correſpondence between Commiſſioners for ſettling Bounds of Northern Neck, 106, 107.
Cotton, Culture of, 209.
Council, Order in, 84; before, 128; of Va., Memorial of, 206.
Counties to be ſurveyed, 104.
County Lines to be ſurveyed, 97; Maps, delayed, 114.
County Surveys, 121.
Courts, relative to, 200, 201; Juriſdiction of, 222, 233.
Culpepper, Thomas Lord, 91, 128, 129, 130, 133, 136, 138.
Curtis, Edw., 152.
Cuſtoms, relative to Receipts from, 202, 203.
Cyder, 77.

DAN River, 7, 10, 12, 14, 16, 17, 21, 23, 30, 38, 39.
Dean, Sam., 152.
Debtors, 159.
Debts, on ſuſpending Laws for Payment of, 159.
Deer killed, 10, 12, 13, 17, 25, 28; tame, 59.
Defect of Powers of Com'rs, 96.
Delay of Surveyors, 104.
Depoſitions noticed, 121.
Derham, Mr., 54.
Diana's Maids of Honor, 4.
Diggs, Dudley, 206.
Diſtances of Places, 38.
Dividing Line, 19, 26.
Dowlen, Ben., 152.
Dryſdale, Governor, 125.
Dubois, Charles, 180.
Duke, Henry, 206.
Duties, 66, 141, 202, 203, 205, 207, 208, 218, 245.

EDEN, Journey to the Land of, 1, 12, 16.
Education, 164.
Elder Wine, Recipe for, 188.
Ellis, Thomas, 152.
Embry, Major, 2, 34, 38.
England's Iron Mines, 72.
England, Mr., 73.
Eno River, 2.
Eſſay on Bulk Tobacco, 140.
Eſſex County, 134.
Exportation of Bulk Tobacco, Reaſons againſt, 153.
Exports of Colonies, 217.

FAIRFAX, Lord, 31, 65, 83, 84, 86, 89, 93, 97, 100-106, 118, 122, 123, 126, 127, 128, 130, 132, 133, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139.
Fairfax, William, 94, 104, 115, 116, 119, 131, 133.
Falls of Potomac, 105.
Fermentation, 51.
Ferry Chain, 62.
Fire-arms, Sale of, to Indians, 169.
FitzWilliam, Mr., 55.
Five Nations, Propoſitions to, 249-255; Anſwer of, 251, 262.
Flax, 209.
Fleming, Mrs., 44, 45, 47, 48.
Floors of Malt-houſes, 190.
Flota, 68, 69.
Flowry, Mr., 74.
Flue for teſting Ore, 73.
Flux, Remedy for, 81.
Forges not yet built in Virginia, 58.
Fork Creek, 38.
Forked Creek, 13.
Forks of Rappahannock, 98, 99, 106, 121, 124, 127, 132, 133, 134.
Forward, Jonathan, 76.
Foundry, 74.
Frederickſburgh, 50, 59, 71, 72, 95, 96, 98, 119; deſcribed, 72.
Frederickſville, 51, 53, 73.
French in Canada, 242.
Furnaces, Deſcription of working, 157; Coſt of, 63, 64; Expenſe of running, 50, 57, 64.

GALLEONS, 68, 69.
Garland, Nath., 152.
Geets, 75.
Germania, 59, 64, 70, 98.
Germania Road, 58.
Greme, John, Surveyor, 101.
General Aſſembly, Propoſal to, 198.
Gerald, Captain, 80.
Gibraltar, 69.
Gibbs, Samuel, 152.
Ginſeng, 13, 65, 67.
Gloceſter, 204.
Glover, John, 152.
Godfrey, Mr., 70.
Godolphin, Hon. Sidney Lord, 202.
Gold Buttons loſt, 26.
Gooch, Lieut. Governor William, 56, 86, 89, 92, 131, 228; Report to, 118.
Goochland, 44.
Government of Colonies, Remarks of Sir Wm. Keith upon, 214.
Graffenriedt, Madam de, 36.
Grantham, Sir Tho., 152.
Grapes, Letter from Mr. Collinſon concerning, 184.
Gravel Hall, 79.
Gravelly Run, 2.
Greame, Mr., 61, 75, 97, 108, 120, 121.
Great Creek, 3.
Green, Captain, 73.
Green, John, 152.
Groome, Sam., 152.
Grymes, John, 90, 91, 101, 103, 107, 127, 131; appointed Commiſſioner, 86.
Gum upon Fruit Trees, 185.
Guns, Sale of, to Indians, 169; as Preſents, 258.

HAISWELL, Edw., 152.
Halſted, Tho., 152.
Hamilton, Mr., 69.
Harriſon, Ben., 206.
Harriſon, Col. Henry, 80.
Harriſon, Col. Nathaniel, 33, 249, 251, 256, 262.
Harriſon, Thomas, 125, 132, 134; Affidavit of, 105.
Harriſon, Mr., 53.
Hatcher, Henry, 23.
Hatcher, Joſeph, 23.
Hatcher's Creek, 22, 38, 39.
Hatcher's Run, 2, 35.

Havanna, 68, 69.
Heathen, Ravages of, 194.
Hedgeman River, 126, 133.
Hemp, 67, 209.
Herring, Method of curing, 171.
Hennſe, Hend., 257, 262.
Hicks, Capt. Robert, 260, 263, 265.
Hico, 25, 26, 27, 29, 30, 39.
Hixe's Creek, 38.
Hodges, John, 152.
Hogen, Maſter, 6, 7.
Hooper, Thomas, 10, 36.
Hops, 5, 7.
Hopton, John Lord, 91.
Horſeſhoe, golden, 265.
Hoſier, Admiral, 68.
Howſon, Wm., 152.
Hume, Mr., 97.
Hunting Creek, 105.
Huſquenawed, 36.

IMPOST of Skins and Furs, 159.
Independency, Remarks on, 224, 243.
Indians, 28; Traces of, 15, 16; Fear of, 169; Tuſkarora, War upon, 192, 193; War adviſed againſt, 196; Trial of, 201; hoſtile, 242; Boundaries, 250; Trade, 252; Signatures of, 256; ſold as a Slave, 258; charged with Robberies, 260.
Inſtructions to Commiſſioners for ſettling Bounds of Patent, 91.
Inſtruments compared, 98.
Iron, making, Details of, 49, 51, 59, 60, 63, 64; Mining, 56; Ore, 43, 70; Prices of, 53; Statiſtics of, 55.
Irvin Creek, 38.
Irvin River, 20.
Iſle of Wight, 204.

JAMAICA, 69.
James City, 204.
James River, 9, 63.
Jennings, Edward, 206.
Jeſuit's Creek, 25, 31.
Jones, Col. Cadwallader, 79, 135.
Jones, Michael, 152.
Jones, Peter, 2, 19, 24, 35.
Jones, Rogers, 152.
Jones, Tom, 2.
Jones, Mr., 14, 36.
Jones's Creek, 14, 38.
Journey to the Land of Eden, 1.

KAHONGAROUTON River, 253, 254, 257, 262.
Keith, Sir William, 213; Diſcourſe by, 214; Anſwer to Memorial of, 228.
Kenentchenechke, 257.
Kenner, Parſon, 73, 74.
Kent, John, 152.
Kerby, Mr., 75.
Kewawees, 20.
King George County, 72, 123.
King William County Road, 79.

LAND, Abundance of, 224.
Lane, Tho., 152.
Laſſells, Edw., 152.
Latitude to be obſerved, 97, 101, 102, 103, 105.
Lawſon, 36.
Legiſlative Power of Colonies, 219, 232.
Lee, Fran, 152.
Leman, Edw., 152.
Letter to ſlothful Surveyors, 104.
Levingſton, Philip, 257, 262, 265.
Leviſtone, Mrs., 72.
Levit, Sir Rich., 152.
Lightfoot, Major, 73.
Lightfoot, Wm., Death of, 80.
Littlepage, Edmo., 152.
Livingſtone, Robert, 251, 255.
Lomax, Mr., 78.
Lords Commiſſioners, Opinions of, 85.

Lords of Trade, 128, 206, 228; Repreſentation to, 206.
Lorreign, Ducheſſe of, Recipe for Soup, 188.
Lowland Creek, 17.
Ludwell, Philip, 114, 115, 124, 138, 206.

MAIDENHAIR, 26.
Malt Houſes, Floors of, 190.
Manufactures of Colonies, 218.
Maoſtie Creek, 38.
Map, 3, 110, 111; to be made, 92, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 114; made, 115, 116, 117, 122; Duplicate ſent to the King, 127; of Lands in North Carolina, 37.
Maquaſe, 249, 251.
Marij, Monſieur, 46, 48; Madame, 46.
Marlborough, Duke of, 98.
Marriage, 45.
Maſh, Rich., 152.
Martin, Colonel, 78, 79.
Maſon, Col. George, 259.
Mattaponi River, 79.
Maſſaponux, 61, 62, 70, 74.
Mayo, Major, 9, 10, 13, 22, 27, 28, 34, 36, 116, 117.
Mayo, William, 100, 101.
Mayo, Mr., 97, 114, 115; Surveyor, 120, 122.
Meckotick Creek, 104, 105.
Medway, 12, 38.
Meherin River, 3, 33, 38, 39, 257.
Meipoutſkys, 257.
Merchandize, 163.
Merchant's Hope Point, 36.
Military Strength, Remarks on, 239.
Militia, 223, 238.
Mills, 41, 42, 52.
Mine, Stith's, 33.
Mines, Account of, 61, 72; Viſit to, 70.
Mineral Springs, 72.
Mining deſcribed, 70; Mania for, 32.
Mirror broken by a Deer, 59.
Miſletoe of the Oak, 190.
Mitchell, Peter, 10.
Maoſty Creek, 12.
Mohak, 255.
Monſon, 139.
Moon's Mount, 77.
Morris, Harry, 5, 6, 7, 10, 12, 30, 31, 36.
Morris's Creek, 11, 38.
Mott's Land, 100.
Mount-joy, Captain, 100.
Mumford, Colonel, 1, 36, 38, 39.
Mumford, Major, 1, 10, 31, 35, 38.
Mumford, Mr., 31.
Mumford's Quarter, 5, 6, 9.
Munday, John, 152.
Murray, Mr., 136.
Muſcovy, Tar-making in, 210.

NANSEMONDS, 257.
Nectarines, 185.
Needler, Mr., 115.
Nelſon, Mr., 55.
New Brick Church, 79.
New England Politics, 65, 66.
Nicholſon, Joſhua, 33, 39.
Nicholſon, Francis, 202.
Nicolas, Dr., 55.
Norman's Ford, 79.
North, Arthur, 152.
North Branch, Rappahannock, 97, 99, 101, 103, 123.
North Carolina, Affairs in, 196, 197; Commiſſioners, 26; Indians, 192, 193.
Northern Neck, Survey of, 108, 110, 112, 116; Proceedings of Commiſſioners for laying out, 83.
Nott, Edward, Lieut. Governor, 124, 137, 203; Grant of, 134.

Nottoway River, 2, 3, 38.
Nottoways, 257.

OAK, Miſletoe of the, to cure, 190.
Occaneeche Iſland, 5, 8, 9.
Occaneechy Neck, 33.
Ochineeches, 257.
Ochtaghquanawrorocnes, 263.
Odaliſekla, 255.
Ondagſighte, 255.
Oneydes, 249, 251, 254, 255.
Onnondage, 252, 254.
Onnondages, 251.
Onundaques, 249.
Orders in Council, 84.
Oſtagankees, 263.
Otway, Mr., Receipts for Wines, 187.

PAMUNKEYS, 257.
Panthers, 28.
Paper Money, 230, 246.
Parke, Rich., 152.
Paſpatanſie, 105.
Patent of Lord Fairfax recited, 84.
Peach Trees, 5.
Pearſe, Captain, 55.
Pedro, Don, 3.
Pee Dee River, 20.
Pelham, T., 139.
Penn, Mr., 213.
Pennſylvania, Paper Money in, 230.
Pepper, an Antidote for Weevels, 52.
Perry, Micajah, 152.
Perſons, Edw., 152.
Peterſburgh founded, 9.
Peter's Creek, 14, 38.
Petition relative to Tobacco, 151.
Phiphard, Wm., 152.
Pickle Herrings, 172.
Pickle Sturgeon, 190.
Pirates, Trial of, 201.
Piſcattoway, 87.
Plantations, Management of, in England, 225, 243.
Plaſter to reſemble Aſhler, 212.
Plumbs, Letter concerning, 185.
Plumer, R., 139.
Politics, Details concerning, 65, 66.
Pomunky River, 49.
Pomunky, 53.
Po River, 58.
Portobello, 68.
Ports, Law concerning, 162.
Poſtmaſter General's Office, 69.
Poſt Office, 197.
Potet, John, 152.
Potomac (variouſly ſpelled), 84, 86, 92, 93, 97, 120, 124, 129, 130. 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 250, 253, 257, 259; Neck, ſouth of, 82; Date of Settlements on, 106; River, Map of, 117.
Powers of Commiſſioners, 96.
Preliminaries ſettled, 96, 97.
Principia, 73.
Proceedings of Commiſſioners for laying out Northern Neck, 83.
Progreſs to the Mines, 41.
Propoſal to General Aſſembly, 198.
Propoſitions to Five Nations, 249, 255, 257, 259.
Proteſtant Settlements beyond the Mountains, 125.
Provincial dependant Government, 229.
Pruning of Vines, 181.
Pyle, Jos., 152.

QUARRIES, 72.
Quechoky Creek, 34.
Quickſilver, Trade in, 68.
Quoique Creek, 3.
Quircough, 84, 86, 129.
Quit Rents, 124, 127, 204, 224.

RANDOLPH, John, 256.
Randolph, Sir John, 115.
Randolph, Mr., 44, 48.

Rappahannock, 57, 84, 86, 92, 93, 97, 116, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138; Sources of, 126; Neck north of, 83; Falls of, 99; Fork of, 59, 65, 126; North Branch, 97; S. Branch of, 97, 120.
Rappahannock County, 204.
Rapidan River, 62, 99, 102, 121, 123; named, 99.
Raſco, Tho., 152.
Rattle Snakes, 10.
Reply about Skins and Furs, 165.
Report of Survey of Northern Neck, 118; of Lords of Committee of Council, 128.
Repreſentation of Council of Virginia, 206.
Revenue, American, 226, 244.
Richards, Geo., 152.
Richards, Sam., 152.
Richmond founded, 9.
Roanoke, 3, 5, 7, 10, 38, 257.
Roanoak Entertainment, 32.
Robberies charged on Indians, 260.
Robinſon, Major Ben, 77, 78.
Robinſon, John, 90, 91, 101, 103, 107, 127, 131; appointed Commiſſioner, 86.
Robinſon, Col. William, 249, 251, 257, 262.
Rocahominy, 13.
Rock Iſland, 43.
Rogers, Tho., 152.
Ruddle, Robert, 152.
Ruſſell, Wm., 70, 98, 121, 122, 133, 137; Affidavit of, 100.
Ruſſian Method of Tar making, 210.

SABBATH, Diſregard for, 13, 19, 26.
Sable Creek, 16, 38.
St. Albans, Henry, Earl of, 91, 128, 134.
St. Germaine en Laye, 129.
Salaries paid in Tobacco, 198; of Governors, 66.
Samm, Col. Carter's, 81.
Sandy Creek, 5.
Sappony Chapel, 2, 38, 39.
Sapponi Iſland, 5.
Saponies, 257.
Sauro Creek, 21.
Sauro Indians, 20, 23.
Savage, John, Surveyor, 97, 104, 105, 117.
Scale of Maps, 98, 105.
Scandal, 80.
Schuyler, Col. Peter, 257, 262.
Seneca Indians, 20, 255.
Settlements on Potomac, 106.
Silver Mine, 2, 19.
Sinnekes, 249, 251.
Shacco, 2, 9, 41, 44, 80, 81.
Sharando, 97, 100, 117, 125, 126, 132, 134, 136.
Sheppard, Dormer, 152.
Sherry Wine, 174.
Sherwood, Wm., 159.
Short, Tom, 2.
Shut, Mr., Recipe for making Wine, 188.
Skins and Furrs, Reply about, 165.
Slaves, fugitive, 259, 264.
Smith, Patrick, 159.
Snead, William, 79.
Snow Creek, 99.
Soan, Mrs., 80.
Sorrel Tree, 27.
Soupe, Recipe for, 188.
South Branch of Rappahannock, 97, 99, 100, 107.
South Sea Company, Affairs of, 68. 69.
Spaniards, Statement concerning, 68.
Spaniſh Wealth, 227.
Spencer, Col. Nicholas, 115.
Spotſilvania Co., 123.
Spotſwood, Gov. Alexander, 249, 251, 257, 258, 259, 262; Ad-

dreſs to, 192; Anſwer of, 193, 195.
Spotſwood, Colonel, 59, 74, 98, 99, 135, 137.
Stafford County, 104, 130.
Stamp Duties, 227, 228, 245.
Stanton River, 7, 39.
Starke, Thom., 152.
Steel, making of, 54.
Stenkeknocks, 257.
Stith, Col. Drury, 3, 4, 5, 31, 32, 38.
Stith's Creek, 3.
Stith's Mine, 33.
Stony Creek, 2.
Stratton, Anth., 152.
Sturgeon, Recipe for pickling, 190.
Sturgeon Creek, 3, 34.
Sugar Trees, 13, 16.
Sugar Tree Creek, 26, 27, 29, 39.
Surveyors named, 97.
Suſpenſion of Laws for Payment of Debts, 159.
Suſquehanna, 263.
Survey of Land of Eden, 17.
Syms, Mrs., 79.

TALLIAFERRO, John, 73, 77, 98, 99, 121, 122, 133, 135, 137; Affidavit of, 99.
Tappahanock, 84, 86, 108, 110, 129.
Tar, Proceſs of making, 66, 210. 217.
Taxation of Colonies, 66, 224, 242, 246; for the Support of Clergy, 198.
Taylor, Daniel, 33.
Taylor, John, 152.
Taylor, Tho., 152.
Taylor, Zach., 152.
Taylor, Mr., 73.
Tagnayanont, 256.
Tea of Ginſeng Leaves, 67.
Terapin Shell for drinking Cup, 98.
Tewahominy Creek, 30, 39.
Theky, Miſs, 59, 60, 62, 64; Birthday of, 63.
Thomas, Sen., 108.
Thornton, Francis, 121, 122, 133, 137; Affidavit of, 99.
Thornton, Mr., 97, 98, 106, 121, 123.
Thornton River, 135.
Tinſley, Thomas, 80.
Tobacco, 209; raiſing, 76, 77; Eſſay on Bulk, 141; Salaries paid in, 198; Taxes paid in, 246.
Toderechrones Indians, 253.
Todirickroones, 257.
Tomaſin, John, 3, 4.
Tooth extracted, 29.
Toſſing in a Blanket, 19, 22.
Totem Indian, 256.
Totero Iſland, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9.
Toteroſe, 257.
Trade of Colonies, 231.
Tuckahoe, 44.
Turkeys, 11.
Tuſcaruros, 2, 254, 255, 263; Addreſs on War upon, 192; Anſwer, 193.
Tuſcaruda Indians, 6, 10.

VANBRUGH, Peter, 257, 262.
Variation, magnetic, to be noted, 101, 103.
Vera Cruz, 68.
Vernon, James, 86.
Vines, Cultivation of, 172; Mr. Collinſon's Management of, 177.
Vineyards, planting of, 172.

WALLER, Col., 71.
Walſh, Tho., 152.
Wampum, 259.
War counſeled, 196.
Warner, Mr., 116.
Waſhington, Mr., 72; Furnace of, deſcribed, 73.
Wayſtaff, James, 152.

Weevils in Wheat, 52.
Weſtover, 39, 87.
Williamſburgh, 34, 92, 117; Meeting at, 109, 110, 111, 112.
Willis, Col. Harry, 71, 72, 73, 98.
Willis, Wm., 152.
Willis's Patent, 125.
Wilſon, Thomas, 3, 6, 10, 27, 30, 36.
Wilſon's Quarter, 39.
Wine, making of, 172; Receipt for, 187; Elder, Recipe for making, 188.
Winflow, Mr., Surveyor, 97.
Winſor, 76.
Withcott, Ben, 152.
Wolves, 22, 28.
Wood, James, Surveyor, 97, 102, 106, 107, 121.
Woodford, Major, 76.
Woodford, Mrs., 77.
Woodpeckers tap Trees for Sugar, 13, 26.
Woolen Manufactures, 218.
Woolſey, Cardinal, 98.
Wych, Tho., 152.